

Pali Text Society

THE PĀTIMOKKHA

EDITED BY

William Pruitt

TRANSLATED BY

K.R. Norman

Published by
The Pali Text Society
Oxford
2001

First published

2001

© Pali Text Society 2001

○ ISBN 0 86013 392 3 *hardback*
 0 86013 393 1 *paperback*

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or any information storage and retrieval system, without prior permission in writing from the Pali Text Society.

Printed in Great Britain by Antony Rowe Ltd. Chippenham, Wiltshire

CONTENTS

Preface	xxxv
Introduction	xxxviii
Abbreviations	lvi
Works Cited	lvii
I. Bhikkhupātimokkhapāli	2
I. The Text of the Bhikkhu Pātimokkha	3
A. [pubbakiccaṃ]	
A. The preliminary duty	
1. pubbakaraṇaṃ	
1. The preliminary functions	
2. pubbakiccaṃ	
2. The preliminary duties	
3. pattakalla-aṅgā	
3. The appropriate time	
B. nidānuddeso	4
B. The recitation of the introduction	5
C. pārājikuddeso	8
C. The recitation of the [rules entailing] defeat	9
1. methunadhammasikkhāpadaṃ	
1. The rule about sexual intercourse	
2. adinnādānasikkhāpadaṃ	
2. The rule about taking what is not given	
3. manussaviggahasikkhāpadaṃ	
3. The rule about a human being	
4. uttarimanussadhammasikkhāpadaṃ	10
4. The rule about a superhuman state	11
D. saṅghādisesuddeso	12
D. The recitation of the saṅghādisesa [rules]	13
1. sukkavissatthisikkāpadaṃ	
1. The rule about the emission of semen	
2. kāyasamsaggasikkhāpadaṃ	
2. The rule about bodily contact	
3. duṭṭhullavācāsikkhāpadaṃ	
3. The rule about lewd words	

4. attakāmapāricariyasikkhāpadaṃ	
4. The rule about one's own sexual pleasure	
5. sañcarittasikkhāpadaṃ	14
5. The rule about acting as a go-between	15
6. kuṭikārasikkhāpadaṃ	
6. The rule about making a hut	
7. vihārakārasikkhāpadaṃ	
7. The rule about building a dwelling-place	
8. duṭṭhadosasikkhāpadaṃ	
8. The rule about being corrupted and corrupting	
9. aññabhāgiyasikkhāpadaṃ	16
9. The rule about belonging to another class	17
10. saṅghabhedasikkhāpadaṃ	
10. The rule about schism in the saṅgha	
11. bhesānuvattakasikkhāpadaṃ	18
11. The rule about siding with schism	19
12. dubbacasikkhāpadaṃ	
12. The rule about being difficult to speak to	
13. kuladūsakasikkhāpadaṃ	20
13. The rule about a corrupter of families	21
E. aniyatuddeso	24
E. The recitation of the indefinite [rules]	25
1. paṭhama-aniyatasikkhāpadaṃ	
1. The first indefinite rule	
2. dutiya-aniyatasikkhāpadaṃ	
2. The second indefinite rule	
F. nissaggiyapācittiya	28
F. The expiation with forfeiture section	29
a. [kaṭhinavaggo]	
a. [The kaṭhina section]	
1. kaṭhinasikkhāpadaṃ	
1. The rule about the kaṭhina frame	
2. udositasikkhāpadaṃ	
2. The "storehouse" rule	
3. akālācīvarasikkhāpadaṃ	
3. The rule about out-of-season robe material	
4. purāṇācīvarasikkhāpadaṃ	
4. The rule about an old robe	
5. cīvarapaṭiggahaṇasikkhāpadaṃ	30
5. The rule about accepting a robe	31

6. aññātakaviññattisikkhāpadam	
6. The rule about asking someone not related	
7. tatuttarisikkhāpada	
7. The rule about more than that	
8. paṭhama-upakkhaṭasikkhāpadam	
8. The first rule about laid by	
9. dutiya-upakkhaṭasikkhāpadam	32
9. The second rule about laid by	33
10. rājasikkhāpadam	
10. The rule about kings	
	b. kosiyavaggo
	b. The section about silk
11. kosiyasikkhāpadam	36
11. The rule about silk	37
12. suddhakāḷakasikkhāpadam	
12. The rule about pure black [sheep's wool]	
13. dvebhāgasikkhāpadam	
13. The rule about two portions	
14. chabbassasikkhāpadam	
14. The rule about six years	
15. nisīdanasanthatasikkhāpadam	
15. The rule about a sitting rug	
16. eḷakalomasikkhāpadam	38
16. The rule about sheep's wool	39
17. eḷakalomadhovāpanasikkhāpadam	
17. The rule about having sheep's wool washed	
18. rūpiyasikkhāpadam	
18. The rule about money	
19. rūpiyasamvohārasikkhāpadam	
19. The rule about money transactions	
20. kayavikkayasikkhāpadam	
20. The rule about buying and selling	
	c. pattavaggo
	c. The section about bowls
21. pattasikkhāpadam	40
21. The rule about bowls	41
22. ūnapañcabandhanasikkhāpadam	
22. The rule about less than five mends	
23. bhesajjasikkhāpadam	
23. The rule about medicines	

24. vassikasāṭikasikkhāpadaṃ	
24. The rule about rains robes	
25. cīvara-acchindanasikkhāpadaṃ	42
25. The rule about taking a robe away	43
26. suttaviññattisikkhāpadaṃ	
26. The rule about asking for yarn	
27. mahāpesakārasikkhāpadaṃ	
27. The longer rule about weavers	
28. accekacīvarasikkhāpadaṃ	
28. The rule about special robes	
29. sāsaṅkasikkhāpadaṃ	44
29. The rule about dangerous	45
30. parinatasikkhāpadaṃ	
30. The rule about apportioned	
G. suddhapācittiyā	46
G. The section on matters entailing simple expiation	47
a. musāvādavaggo	
a. The section about lying	
1. musāvādasikkhāpadaṃ	
1. The rule about lying	
2. omasavādasikkhāpadaṃ	
2. The rule about abusive speech	
3. pesuññasikkhāpadaṃ	
3. The rule about slander	
4. padasodhammasikkhāpadaṃ	
4. The rule about the Dhamma word by word	
5. paṭhamasahaseyyasikkhāpadaṃ	
5. The first rule about a bed together	
6. dutiyasahaseyyasikkhāpadaṃ	
6. The second rule about a bed together	
7. dhammadesanāsikkhāpadaṃ	
7. The rule about teaching the Dhamma	
8. bhūtārocanasikkhāpadaṃ	48
8. The rule about announcing what is true	49
9. duṭṭhullārocanasikkhāpadaṃ	
9. The rule about announcing a gross offence	
10. pathavīkhaṇanasikkhāpadaṃ	
10. The rule about digging the earth	

b. bhūtagāmaṃavaggo

b. The section about plant beings

11. bhūtagāmasikkhāpadaṃ
 11. The rule about plant beings
12. aññavādaśikkhāpadaṃ
 12. The rule about one replying evasively
13. ujjhāpanasikkhāpadaṃ
 13. The rule about one disparaging
14. paṭhamasenāsanāsikkhāpadaṃ
 14. The first rule about lodgings
15. dutiyasenāsanāsikkhāpadaṃ
 15. The second rule about lodgings
16. anupakhajjasikkhāpadaṃ
 16. The rule about encroaching
17. nikkaddhanasikkhāpadaṃ
 17. The rule about driving out
18. vchāsakutīsikkhāpadaṃ
 18. The rule about a lofty cell
19. mahallakavihārasikkhāpadaṃ
 19. The rule about a large dwelling-place
20. sappāṇasikkhāpadaṃ
 20. The rule about containing living things

50
51

c. ovādavaggo

c. The section on exhortation

21. ovādasikkhāpadaṃ
 21. The rule about exhortation
22. atthaṅgasikkhāpadaṃ
 22. The rule about sunset
23. bhikkhunupassayasikkhāpadaṃ
 23. The rule about bhikkhunīs' quarters
24. āmisasikkhāpadaṃ
 24. The rule about material gain
25. cīvaradānasikkhāpadaṃ
 25. The rule about giving robe material
26. cīvarasibbanasikkhāpadaṃ
 26. The rule about sewing robe material
27. saṃvidhānasikkhāpadaṃ
 27. The rule about arrangements
28. nāvabhiruhasikkhāpadaṃ
 28. The rule about embarking on a boat
29. paripācitasikkhāpadaṃ
 29. The rule about prepared

54
55

30. rahonisajjasikkhāpadam

30. The rule about sitting privately

d. bhojanavaggo

d. The section on food

31. āvasathapiṇḍasikkhāpadam

56

31. The rule about meals in a public rest house

57

32. gaṇabhojanasikkhāpadam

32. The rule about eating in groups

33. paramparabhojanasikkhāpadam

33. The rule about meals in succession

34. kāṇamātusikkhāpadam

34. The "Kāṇā's mother" rule

35. paṭhamapavāraṇāsikkhāpadam

58

35. The first rule about invitations

59

36. dutiyapavāraṇāsikkhāpadam

36. The second rule about invitations

37. vikālabhojanasikkhāpadam

37. The rule about eating at the wrong time

38. sinnidhikāraśikkhāpadam

38. The rule about storing up

39. paṇītabhojanasikkhāpadam

39. The rule about fine foods

40. dantaponasikkhāpadam

60

40. The rule about tooth-sticks

61

e. acelakavaggo

e. The section on naked recluses

41. acelakasikkhāpadam

41. The rule about naked recluses

42. uyyojanasikkhāpadam

42. The rule about dismissing

43. sabhojanasikkhāpadam

43. The rule about having food

44. rahopaticchannasikkhāpadam

44. The rule about privately on a screened [seat]

45. rahonisajjabhikkhāpadam

62

45. The rule about sitting down privately

63

46. cārittasikkhāpadam

46. The rule about visiting

47. Mahānāmasikkhāpadam

47. The "Mahānāma" rule

48. uyyattasenāsikkhāpadam

48. The rule about an army in array

49. senāvāsasikkhāpadam	
49. The rule about staying with an army	
50. uyyodhikasikkhāpadam	64
50. The rule about a battlefield	65
f. surāpanavaggo	
f. The section on drinking liquor	
51. surāpānasikkhāpadam	
51. The rule about drinking liquor	
52. aṅgulipatodakasikkhāpadam	
52. The rule about poking with the finger	
53. hāsadhammasikkhāpadam	
53. The rule about sporting	
54. anādariyasikkhāpadam	
54. The rule about disrespect	
55. bhiṃsāpanasikkhāpadam	
55. The rule about frightening	
56. jotisikkhāpadam	
56. The rule about fires	
57. nahānasikkhāpadam	66
57. The rule about bathing	67
58. dubbaṇṇakaraṇasikkhāpadam	
58. The rule about disfigurement	
59. vikappanasikkhāpadam	
59. The rule about assigning	
60. apanidhānasikkhāpadam	
60. The rule about hiding	
g. sappāṇakavaggo	
g. The section on living beings	
61. sañciccaṣikkhāpadam	68
61. The rule about intentionally	69
62. sappāṇakasikkhāpadam	
62. The rule about containing living things	
63. ukkoṭanasikkhāpadam	
63. The rule about reopening	
64. duṭṭhulasikkhāpadam	
64. The rule about gross offences	
65. ūnavisativassasikkhāpadam	
65. The rule about under twenty years	
66. theyyasatthasikkhāpadam	
66. The rule about a caravan of thieves	
67. saṃvidhānasikkhāpadam	
67. The rule about arrangements	

68. Ariṭṭhasikkhāpadaṃ	70
68. The "Ariṭṭha" rule	71
69. ukkhittasambhogasikkhāpadaṃ	
69. The rule about eating together with one who is suspended	
70. Kaṇṭakasikkhāpadaṃ	
70. The "Kaṇṭaka" rule	
h. sahadhammikavaggo	
h. The section regarding accordance with the law	
71. sahadhammikasikkhāpadaṃ	72
71. The rule regarding accordance with the law	73
72. vilekhanasikkhāpadaṃ	
72. The rule about confusion	
73. mohanasikkhāpadaṃ	74
73. The rule about negligence	75
74. pahārasikkhāpadaṃ	
74. The rule about a blow	
75. talasattikasikkhāpadaṃ	
75. The rule about the palm of the hand	
76. amūlakasikkhāpadaṃ	76
76. The rule about unfounded	77
77. sañciccasikkhāpadaṃ	
77. The rule about intentionally	
78. upassutisikkhāpadaṃ	
78. The rule about eavesdropping	
79. kammappaṭibāhansikkhāpadaṃ	
79. The rule about objecting to formal acts	
80. chandaṃadatvāgamanasikkhāpadaṃ	
80. The rule about going not having given consent [= proxy vote]	
81. dubbalasikkhāpadaṃ	
81. The "worn thin [robe]" rule	
82. pariṇāmanasikkhāpadaṃ	78
82. The rule about apportioning	79
i. ratanavaggo	
i. The section on treasure	
83. antepurasikkhāpadaṃ	
83. The rule about the bed-chamber	
84. ratanasikkhāpadaṃsikkhāpadaṃ	
84. The rule about treasure	
85. vikālagāmapavesanasikkhāpadaṃ	
85. The rule about entering a village at the wrong time	

86. sūcigharasikkhāpaḍaṃ	
86. The rule about needle cases	
87. mañcapīṭhasikkhāpaḍaṃ	80
87. The rule about beds and benches	81
88. tūlonaddhasikkhāpaḍaṃ	
88. The rule about stuffed with cotton	
89. nisīdanasikkhāpaḍaṃ	
89. The rule about sitting cloths	
90. kaṇḍuppaṭicchādisikkhāpaḍaṃ	
90. The rule about an itch-covering cloth	
91. vassikasātikasikkhāpaḍaṃ	
91. The rule about a rains cloth	
92. Nandasikkhāpaḍaṃ	82
92. The "Nanda" rule	83
H. pāṭidesanīyā	84
H. The matters to be confessed	85
1. paṭhamapāṭidesanīyasikkhāpaḍaṃ	
1. The first rule entailing confession	
2. dutiyapāṭidesanīyasikkhāpaḍaṃ	
2. The second rule entailing confession	
3. tatiyapāṭidesanīyasikkhāpaḍaṃ	
3. The third rule entailing confession	
4. catutthapāṭidesanīyasikkhāpaḍaṃ	86
4. The fourth rule entailing confession	87
I. sekhiyā	88
I. The rules of training	89
a. parimaṇḍalavaggo	
a. The section about even all around	
1. parimaṇḍalasikkhāpaḍaṃ	
1. The rule about even all around	
2. dutiyaparimaṇḍalasikkhāpaḍaṃ	
2. The second rule about even all around	
3-4. suppaṭicchannasikkhāpaḍaṃ	
3-4. The rules about well covered	
5-6. saṃvutāsikkhāpaḍaṃ	
5-6. The rules about being well restrained	
7-8. okkhittacakkhusikkhāpaḍaṃ	90
7-8. The rules about downcast eyes	91
9-10. ukkhittakasikkhāpaḍaṃ	
9-10. The rules about [robes] hitched up	

b. ujjagghikavaggo

b. The section about a loud laugh

11–12. ujjagghikasikkhāpadam

11–12. The rules about a loud laugh

13–14. uccasaddasikkhāpadam

13–14. The rules about a loud sound

15–16. kāyappacālakādisikkhāpadam

92

15–16. The rules about swaying the body, etc.

93

17–18. bāhuppacālakasikkhāpadam

17–18. The rules about swinging the arms

19–20. sīsappacālakasikkhāpadam

19–20. The rules about shaking the head

c. khambhakatavaggo

c. The section about with arms akimbo

21–22. khambhakatasikkhāpadam

21–22. The rules about with arms akimbo

23–24. oguññitasikkhāpadam

23–24. The rules about with head covered

25. ukkuṭikasikkhāpadam

94

25. The rule about walking on toes or heels

95

26. pallatthikasikkhāpadam

26. The rule about lolling

27. sakkaccapaṭiggahaṇasikkhāpadam

27. The rule about accepting appreciatively

28. pattasaññīpaṭiggahaṇasikkhāpadam

28. The rule about accepting with attention to the bowl

29. samasūpakapaṭiggahaṇasikkhāpadam

29. The rule about accepting curry in proportion

30. samatittikasikkhāpadam

30. The rules about level with the edge

d. sakkaccavaggo

d. The section about appreciatively

31. sakkaccabhuñjanasikkhāpadam

31. The rule about eating appreciatively

32. pattasaññībhūjanasikkhāpadam

96

32. The rule about eating with attention on the bowl

97

33. sapadānasikkhāpadam

33. The rule about methodically

34. samsūpakasikkhāpadam

34. The rule about curry in proportion

35. nathūpakatasikkhāpadam

35. The rule about not from the top

36. odanappaṭicchādanasikkhāpadam	
36. The rule about hiding food	
37. sūpodanaviññattisikkhāpadam	
37. The rule about asking for curry and rice	
38. ujjhānasaññisikkhāpadam	
38. The rule about finding fault	
39. kabaḷasikkhāpadam	
39. The rule about mouthfuls	
40. ālopasikkhāpadam	98
40. The rule about a piece [of food]	99
c. kavaḷavaggo	
c. The section about mouthfuls	
41. anāhaṭasikkhāpadam	
41. The rule about not brought	
42. bhuñjamānasikkhāpadam	
42. The rule about eating	
43. sakabaḷasikkhāpadam	
43. The rule about full [with food]	
44. piṇḍukkhepakasikkhāpadam	
44. The rule about tossing up a lump	
45. kabaḷāvacchedakasikkhāpadam	
45. The rule about breaking up a mouthful	
46. avagaṇḍakārasikkhāpadam	
46. The rule about stuffing out [the cheeks]	
47. hatthaniddhunakasikkhāpadam	100
47. The rule about shaking the hand about	101
48. sitthāvakārasikkhāpadam	
48. The rule about scattering rice about	
49. jivhānicchārasikkhāpadam	
49. The rule about putting the tongue out	
50. capucapukārasikkhāpadam	
50. The rule about making a champing noise [= smacking my lips] .	
f. surusuruvaggo	
f. The section on making a sucking noise	
51. surusurukārasikkhāpadam	
51. The rule about making a sucking sound	
52. hatthanillehakādisikkhāpadam	
52. The rule about licking the hand	
53. pattanillehakasikkhāpadam	
53. The rule about licking the bowl	

54. oṭṭhanillehakasikkhāpadaṃ	102
54. The rule about licking the lips	103
55. sāmisaikkhāpadaṃ	
55. The rule about soiled by food	
56. sasitthakasikkhāpadaṃ	
56. The rule about with rice grains	
57. chattapāṇisikkhāpadaṃ	
57. The rule about one with an umbrella in hand	
58. daṇḍapāṇisikkhāpadaṃ	
58. The rule about one with a staff in hand	
59. satthapāṇisikkhāpadaṃ	
59. The rule about one with a knife in hand	
60. āvudhapāṇisikkhāpadaṃ	
60. The rule about one with a weapon in hand	
g. pādukāvaggo	
g. The section on shoes	
61. pādukasikkhāpadaṃ	104
62. The rule about shoes	105
62. upāhanasikkhāpadaṃ	
62. The rule about sandals	
63. yānasikkhāpadaṃ	
63. The rule about vehicles	
64. sayanasikkhāpadaṃ	
64. The rule about couches	
65. pallatthikasikkhāpadaṃ	
65. The rule about lolling	
66. vetṭhitasikkhāpadaṃ	
66. The rule about wrapped round	
67. oguṇṭhitasikkhāpadaṃ	
67. The rule about covered up	
68. chamāsikkhāpadaṃ	
68. The rule about on the ground	
69. nicāsanasikkhāpadaṃ	106
69. The rule about low seats	107
70. ṭhitasikkhāpadaṃ	
70. The rule about standing	
71. pacchatogamanasikkhāpadaṃ	
71. The rule about going behind	
72. uppathenagamanasikkhāpadaṃ	
72. The rule about going beside a path	
73. ṭhito-uccārasikkhāpadaṃ	
73. The rule about defæcating while standing	

74. harite-uccārasikkhāpadam	
74. The rule about defæcating on green plants	
75. uduke-uccārasikkhāpadam	
75. The rule about defæcating in water	
J. adhikaraṇasamathā	108
J. The settlement of legal processes	109
II. Bhikkhunīpātimokkha	112
II. The Text of the Bhikkhunī Pātimokkha	113
A. [pubbakiccaṃ]	
A. [The preliminary duty]	
1. pubbakaraṇam	
1. The preliminary function	
2. pubbakiccaṃ	
2. The preliminary duties	
3. pattakalla-aṅgā	
3. The appropriate time	
B. nidānuddeso	114
B. The recitation of the introduction	115
C. pārājikuddeso	116
C. The recitation of the [rules entailing] defeat	117
1. methunadhammasikkhāpadam	
1. The rule about sexual intercourse	
2. adinnādānasikkhāpadam	
2. The rule about taking what is not given	
3. maṇuṣsaviggahasikkhāpadam	
3. The rule about a human being	
4. uttarimanussadhammasikkhāpadam	118
4. The rule about a superhuman state	119
5. ubbhajāṇumaṇḍalikāsikkhāpadam	
5. The rule about one touching above the circle of the knees	
6. vajjappaticchādikāsikkhāpadam	
6. The rule about the concealer of a fault	
7. ukkhittānuvattikāsikkhāpadam	120
7. The rule about the follower of one who is suspended	121

8. aṭṭhavatthukāsikkhāpadaṃ	
8. The rule about the doer of the eight things	
D. saṅghādisesuddeso	124
D. The recitation of the saṅghādisesa [rules]	125
1. ussayavādikāsikkhāpadaṃ	
1. The rule about speaking in envy	
2. corivutṭhāpikāsikkhāpadaṃ	
2. The rule about sponsoring a woman thief	
3. ekagāmantaragamanasikkhāpadaṃ	
3. The rule about going to the [next] village alone	
4. ukkhittakaosāraṇasikkhāpadaṃ	126
4. The rule about the restoration of one suspended	127
5. bhojanapaṭiggahanapaṭhamasikkhāpadaṃ	
5. The first rule about accepting food	
6. bhojanapaṭiggahanadutiyasikkhāpadaṃ	
6. The second rule about accepting food	
7. sañcarittadisikkhāpadaṃ	128
7. The rule about acting as a go-between, etc.	129
8. duṭṭhadosasikkhāpadaṃ	
8. The rule about being corrupted and corrupting	
9. aññabhāgiyasikkhāpadaṃ	
9. The rule about belonging to another class	
10. sikkhampaccācikkhaṇasikkhāpadaṃ	130
10. The rule about repudiating the training	131
11. adhikaraṇakupitasikkhāpadaṃ	132
11. The rule about angry about some legal question	133
12. pāpasamācārapaṭhamasikkhāpadaṃ	
12. The first rule about evil conduct	
13. pāpasamācāradutiyasikkhāpadaṃ	134
13. The second rule about evil conduct	135
14. saṅghabhedakādisikkhāpadaṃ	136
14. The rules about schism in the saṅgha, etc.	137
15. bhedānurvattakasikkhāpadaṃ	
15. The rule about siding with schism	
16. dubbacasikkhāpadaṃ	138
16. The rule about being difficult to speak to	139
17. kuladūsakasikkhāpadaṃ	140
17. The rule about a corrupter of families	141
E. nissaggiyapācittiya	144
E. The expiation with forfeiture section	145

a. pattavaggo

a. The bowl section

1. pattasannicayasikkhāpadaṃ
 1. The rule about a hoard of bowls
2. akālacīvarasikkhāpadaṃ
 2. The rule about out-of-season robe material
3. cīvaraparivattanasikkhāpadaṃ
 3. The rule about exchanging a robe
4. aññaviññāpanasikkhāpadaṃ
 4. The rule about asking for another thing
5. aññacetāpanasikkhāpadaṃ
 5. The rule about getting another thing
in exchange
6. paṭhamasaṅghikacetāpanasikkhāpadaṃ
 6. The first rule about exchanging something
belonging to the saṅgha
7. dutiyasaṅghikacetāpanasikkhāpadaṃ
 7. The second rule about exchanging something
belonging to the saṅgha
8. paṭhamagaṇikacetāpanasikkhāpadaṃ
 8. The first rule about exchanging something
belonging to a group
9. dutiyagaṇikacetāpanasikkhāpadaṃ
 9. The second rule about exchanging something
belonging to a group
10. puggalikacetāpanasikkhāpadaṃ
 10. The rule about exchanging something
belonging to an individual

146

147

148

149

b. cīvaravaggo

b. The robe section

11. garupāvuraṇasikkhāpadaṃ
 11. The rule about heavy cloth
12. lahupāvuraṇasikkhāpadaṃ
 12. The rule about light cloth
13. kathīnasikkhāpadaṃ
 13. The rule about the kathina frame
14. udositasikkhāpadaṃ
 14. The "storehouse" rule
15. akālacīvarasikkhāpadaṃ
 15. The rule about out-of-season robe material
16. aññātakaviññāttisikkhāpadaṃ
 16. The rule about asking a non-relative

150

151

17. tatuttarisikkhāpadam	
17. The rule about more than that	
18. pathama-upakkhaṭasikkhāpadam	152
18. The first rule about laid by	153
19. dutiya-upakkhaṭasikkhāpadam	
19. The second rule about laid by	
20. rājasikkhāpadam	154
20. The rule about kings	155
c. [jātarūpavaggo]	
c. [The section about money]	
21. rūpiyasikkhāpadam	156
21. The rule about money	157
22. rūpiyaṣaṃvohārasikkhāpadam	
22. The rule about money transactions	
23. kayavikkayasikkhāpadam	158
23. The rule about buying and selling	159
24. ūnapañcabandhanasikkhāpadam	
24. The rule about less than five mends	
25. bhesajjasikkhāpadam	
25. The rule about medicines	
26. cīvara-acchindanasikkhāpadam	
26. The rule about taking a robe away	
27. suttaviññattisikkhāpadam	
27. The rule about asking for yarn	
28. mahāpesakārasikkhāpadam	160
28. The longer rule about weavers	161
29. accekacīvarasikkhāpadam	
29. The rule about special robes	
30. pariṇatasikkhāpadam	
30. The rule about apportioned	
F. suddhapācittiya	164
F. The section on matters entailing simple expiation	165
a. lasuṇavaggo	
a. The garlic section	
1. lasuṇasikkhāpadam	
1. The rule about garlic	
2. sambādhalomasikkhāpadam	
2. The rule about hair on the [private parts of the] body	
3. talaghātakasikkhāpadam	
3. The rule about slapping with the palms of the hand	

4. jatumaṭṭhakasikkhāpadaṃ	
4. The rule about a smeared [stick made] with lac	
5. udakasuddhikasikkhāpadaṃ	
5. The rule about an ablution with water	
6. upatiṭṭhanasikkhāpadaṃ	
6. The rule about standing close	
7. āmakadhaññasikkhāpadaṃ	166
7. The rule about raw grain	167
8. paṭhama-uccārahaḍḍanasikkhāpadaṃ	
8. The first rule about throwing out excrement	
9. dutiya-uccārahaḍḍanasikkhāpadaṃ	
9. The second rule about throwing out excrement	
10. naccagītasikkhāpadaṃ	
10. The rule about dancing and singing	
b. rattandhakāvaggo	
b. The dark of the night section	
11. rattandhakārasikkhāpadaṃ	
11. The rule about the dark of the night	
12. paṭicchannokāsasikkhāpadaṃ	
12. The rule about a screened place	
13. ajjhokāsasallapanasikkhāpadaṃ	168
13. The rule about talking together in an open place	169
14. dutiyika-uyyojanasikkhāpadaṃ	
14. The rule about dismissing a companion	
15. anāpucchāpakkamanasikkhāpadaṃ	
15. The rule about departing without asking permission	
16. anāpucchā-abhiniśīdanasikkhāpadaṃ	
16. The rule about sitting down without asking permission	
17. anāpucchāsantharāṇasikkhāpadaṃ	
17. The rule about spreading without asking permission	
18. para-ujjhāpanasikkhāpadaṃ	
18. The rule about looking down on another	
19. para-abhisapanasikkhāpadaṃ	170
19. The rule about cursing another	171
20. rodanasikkhāpadaṃ	
20. The rule about weeping	
c. naggavaggo	
c. The section about naked	
21. naggasikkhāpadaṃ	
21. The rule about naked	
22. udakasāṭikasikkhāpadaṃ	
22. The rule about a bathing robe	

23. cīvarasibbanasikkhāpadam
23. The rule about unsewing a robe
24. saṅghāticārasikkhāpadam 172
24. The rule about wearing an outer robe 173
25. cīvarasaṅkamanīyasikkhāpadam
25. The rule about a robe that is to be handed back
26. gaṇacīvarasikkhāpadam
26. The rule about the robes of a group
27. paṭibāhanasikkhāpadam
27. The rule about holding back
28. cīvaradānasikkhāpadam
28. The rule about giving robes
29. kāla-atikkamanasikkhāpadam
29. The rule about letting the season pass
30. kaṭhinuddhārasikkhāpadam
30. The rule about removal of the kaṭhina [privileges]
- d. tuvattavaggo
d. The lying down section
31. ekamañcatuvattanasikkhāpadam 174
31. The rule about lying down on one couch 175
32. ekattharaṇatuvaṇnasikkhāpadam
32. The rule about lying down with one carpet
33. aphāsukaraṇasikkhāpadam
33. The rule about causing discomfort
34. na-upaṭṭhāpanasikkhāpadam
34. The rule about not having attended
35. nikkadḍhanasikkhāpadam
35. The rule about throwing out
36. saṃsaṭṭhasikkhāpadam
36. The rule about keeping company
37. antoraṭṭhasikkhāpadam 176
37. The rule about within a region 177
38. tiroraṭṭhasikkhāpadam
38. The rule about outside a region
39. antovassasikkhāpadam
39. The rule about during the rains
40. cārikanapakkamanasikkhāpadam
40. The rule about not setting out on an alms tour
- e. cittāgāravaggo
e. The picture-gallery section
41. rājāgārasikkhāpadam
41. The rule about a king's house

42. āsandiparibhuñjanasikkhāpadam	
42. The rule about making use of a sofa	
43. suttakantanasikkhāpadam	178
43. The rule about spinning yarn	179
44. gihiveyyāvaccasikkhāpadam	
44. The rule about householders' work	
45. adhikaraṇasikkhāpadam	
45. The rule about legal questions	
46. bhojanadānasikkhāpadam	
46. The rule about giving food	
47. āvasathacīvarasikkhāpadam	
47. The rule about a household robe	
48. āvasathavihārasikkhāpadam	
48. The rule about dwellings	
49. tiracchānavijjāpariyāpuṇanasikkhāpadam	
49. The rule about attaining worldly knowledge	
50. tiracchānavijjāvācanasikkhāpadam	180
50. The rule about teaching worldly knowledge	181
f. ārāmaṇavaggo	
f. The monastery section	
51. ārāmapavisanasikkhāpadam	
51. The rule about entering a monastery	
52. bhikkhu-akkosanasikkhāpadam	
52. The rule about reviling a bhikkhu	
53. gaṇaparibhāsanasikkhāpadam	
53. The rule about abusing a group	
54. pavāritasikkhāpadam	
54. The rule about being invited	
55. kulamaccharinīsikkhāpadam	
55. The rule about being grudging to a family	
56. abhikkhukāvāsasikkhāpadam	
56. The rule about a residence where there is no bhikkhu	
57. apavāraṇāsikkhāpadam	182
57. The rule about not inviting	183
58. ovādasikkhāpadam	
58. The rule about exhortation	
59. ovādūpasāṅkamanasikkhāpadam	
59. The rule about approaching for exhortation	
60. pasākhejātasikkhāpadam	
60. The rule about the lower part of the body	

g. gabbhinivaggo

g. The pregnant woman section

61. gabbhinīsikkhāpadam
61. The rule about a pregnant woman
62. pāyantīsikkhāpadam
62. The rule about a woman giving suck
63. paṭhamasikkhamānasikkhāpadam 184
63. The first rule about a trainee 185
64. dutiyasikkhamānasikkhāpadam
64. The second rule about a trainee
65. paṭhamagihigatasikkhāpadam
65. The first rule about married
66. dutiyagihigatasikkhāpadam
66. The second rule about married
67. tatiyagihigatasikkhāpadam
67. The third rule about married
68. paṭhamasahajīvinīsikkhāpadam
68. The first rule about one living with
69. pavattinīnānubandhanasikkhāpadam
69. The rule about not waiting upon a
woman instructor
70. dutiyasahajīvinīsikkhāpadam 186
70. The second rule about one living with 187

h. kumaribhūtavaggo

h. The maiden section

71. paṭhamakumāribhūtasikkhāpadam
71. The first rule about a maiden
72. dutiyakumāribhūtasikkhāpadam
72. The second rule about a maiden
73. tatiyakumāribhūtasikkhāpadam
73. The third rule about a maiden
74. ūnadvādasavassasikkhāpadam
74. The rule about less than twelve years
75. paripuṇṇadvādasavassasikkhāpadam
75. The rule about fully twelve years
76. khiyyanadhammasikkhāpadam 188
76. The rule about a critical nature 189
77. paṭhamasikkhamānanavutthāpanasikkhāpadam
77. The first rule about not sponsoring a trainee
78. dutiyasikkhamānanavutthāpanasikkhāpadam
78. The second rule about not sponsoring a trainee

79. sokāvāsaṣikkhāpaḍaṃ	
79. The rule about a dwelling place of grief	
80. ananuññātaṣikkhāpaḍaṃ	
80. The rule about not permitted	
81. pārivāsaṣikkhāpaḍaṃ	
81. The rule about postponed overnight	
82. anuvassaṣikkhāpaḍaṃ	190
82. The rule about every year	191
83. ekavassaṣikkhāpaḍaṃ	
83. The rule about one year	
i. chattupāhanavaggo	
i. The sunshade and sandal's section	
84. chattupāhanasikkhāpaḍaṃ	
84. The rule about sunshade and sandals	
85. yānaṣikkhāpaḍaṃ	
85. The rule about vehicles	
86. saṅghāṇisaṣikkhāpaḍaṃ	
86. The rule about a petticoat	
87. iṭṭhālaṅkāraṣikkhāpaḍaṃ	
87. The rule about women's ornaments	
88. gandhavaṇṇakaṣikkhāpaḍaṃ	
88. The rule about perfume and paint	
89. vāsitakaṣikkhāpaḍaṃ	192
89. The rule about scented	193
90. bhikkhunī-ummaddāpanasikkhāpaḍaṃ	
90. The rule about having oneself rubbed by a bhikkhunī	
91. sikkhamāna-ummaddāpanasikkhāpaḍaṃ	
91. The rule about having oneself rubbed by a trainee	
92. sāmāṇerī-ummaddāpanasikkhāpaḍaṃ	
92. The rule about having oneself rubbed by a female novice	
93. gihini-ummaddāpanasikkhāpaḍaṃ	
93. The rule about having oneself rubbed by a householder's wife	
94. anāpucchāsikkhāpaḍaṃ	
94. The rule about not asking	
95. pañhāpucchanaṣikkhāpaḍaṃ	
95. The rule about asking questions	194
96. asaṅkaccikaṣikkhāpaḍaṃ	195
96. The rule about without a bodice	

j. musāvādavaggo

j. The section about lying

97. musāvādasikkhāpadam
 97. The rule about lying
98. omasavādasikkhāpadam
 98. The rule about abusive speech
99. pesuññasikkhāpadam
 99. The rule about slander
100. padamṣodhammasikkhāpadam
 100. The rule about Dhamma word by word
101. paṭhamasahaseyyasikkhāpadam
 101. The first rule about a bed together
102. dutiyasahaseyyasikkhāpadam
 102. The second rule about a bed together
103. dhammadesanāsikkhāpadam
 103. The rule about teaching the Dhamma
104. bhūtārocanasikkhāpadam
 104. The rule about announcing what is true
105. duṭṭhullārocanasikkhāpadam
 105. The rule about announcing a gross offence
106. pathavīkhaṇanasikkhāpadam
 106. The rule about digging the earth

196

197

k. bhūtagā mavaggo

k. The section about plant beings

107. bhūtagāmasikkhāpadam
 107. The rule about plant beings
108. aññavādasikkhāpadam
 108. The rule about one replying evasively
109. ujjhāpanasikkhāpadam
 109. The rule about one disparaging
110. paṭhamasenāsanasikkhāpadam
 110. The first rule about lodgings
111. dutiyasenāsanasikkhāpadam
 111. The second rule about lodgings
112. anupakhajjasikkhāpadam
 112. The rule about encroaching
113. nikkaddhanasikkhāpadam
 113. The rule about driving out
114. vehāsakuṭisikkhāpadam
 114. The rule about a lofty cell
115. mahallakavihārasikkhāpadam
 115. The rule about a large dwelling place

198

199

200

201

116. sappāṇakasikkhāpadaṃ	
116. The rule about containing living things	
I. bhojanavaggo	
I. The food section	
117. āvasathapiṇḍasikkhāpadaṃ	
117. The rule about meals in public rest houses	
118. gaṇabhojanasikkhāpadaṃ	
118. The rule about eating in groups	
119. Kāṇamāṭusikkhāpadaṃ	202
119. The "Kāṇā's mother" rule	203
120. vikālabhojanasikkhāpadaṃ	
120. The rule about eating at the wrong time	
121. sannidhikāraśasikkhāpadaṃ	
121. The rule about storing up	
122. dantaponaśasikkhāpadaṃ	
122. The rule about tooth sticks	
123. uyyojanasikkhāpadaṃ	
123. The rule about dismissing	
124. sabhojanasikkhāpadaṃ	204
124. The rule about having food	205
125. rahopāṇicchanasikkhāpadaṃ	
125. The rule about privately on a screened [seat]	
126. rahonisajjasikkhāpadaṃ	
126. The rule about sitting down privately	
m. cārittavaggo	
m. The section about visiting	
127. cārittasikkhāpadaṃ	
127. The rule about conduct	
128. Mahānāmasikkhāpadaṃ	206
128. The "Mahānāma" rule	207
129. uyyuttasenāsikkhāpadaṃ	
129. The rule about an army in array	
130. senāvāśasikkhāpadaṃ	
130. The rule about staying with an army	
131. uyyodhikasikkhāpadaṃ	
131. The rule about a battlefield	
132. surāpānasikkhāpadaṃ	
132. The rule about drinking liquor	
133. aṅgulipatodakasikkhāpadaṃ	208
133. The rule about poking with the fingers	209
134. hāśadhammasikkhāpadaṃ	
134. The rule about sporting	

153. talasattikasikkhāpadam	
153. The rule about the palm of the hand	
154. amūlakasikkhāpadam	218
154. The rule about unfounded	219
155. sañciccasikkhāpadam	
155. The rule about intentionally	
156. upassutisikkhāpadam	
156. The rule about eavesdropping	
p. dhammikavaggo	
p. The section on lawful acts	
157. kammappaṭibāhanasikkhāpadam	
157. The rule about objecting to formal acts	
158. chandāmadatvāgamanasikkhāpadam	
158. The rule about going not having given consent [= proxy vote]	
159. dubbalasikkhāpadam	220
159. The "worn thin [robe]" rule	221
160. pariṇāmanasikkhāpadam	
160. The rule about apportioning	
161. ratanasikkhāpadam	
161. The rule about treasure	
162. sūciḡharasikkhāpadam	
162. The rule about needle cases	
163. mañcapīṭhasikkhāpadam	
163. The rule about beds and benches	
164. tūlonaddhasikkhāpadam	222
164. The rule about stuffed with cotton	223
165. kaṇḍuppaṭicchādisikkhāpadam	
165. The rule about an itch-covering cloth	
166. Nandasikkhāpadam	
166. The "Nanda" rule	
G. pāṭidesanīyā	224
G. The matters to be confessed	225
1. sappiviññāpanasikkhāpadam	
1. The rule about asking for ghee	
2. telaviññāpanasikkhāpadam	
2. The rule about asking for oil	
3. madhuviññāpanasikkhāpadam	
3. The rule about asking for honey	
4. phāṇitaviññāpanasikkhāpadam	
4. The rule about asking for molasses	

5. macchaviññāpanasikkhāpadam	
5. The rule about asking for fish	226
6. maṃsaviññāpanasikkhāpadam	227
6. The rule about asking for meat	
7. khiraviññāpanasikkhāpadam	
7. The rule about asking for milk	
8. dadhiviññāpanasikkhāpadam	
8. The rule about asking for curds	
H. sekhiyā	228
H. The rules of training	229
a. parimaṇḍalavaggo	
a. The section about even all around	
1-2. parimaṇḍalasikkhāpadam	
1-2. The rules about even all around	
3-4. suppaṭicchannasikkhāpadam	
3-4. The rules about well covered	
5-6. susaṃvutasikkhāpadam	
5-6. The rules about being well restrained	
7-9. okkhittacakkhusikkhāpadam	
7-9. The rules about downcast eyes	
9-10. ukkhittakasikkhāpadam	230
9-10. The rules about [robes] hitched up	231
b. ujjagghikavaggo	
b. The section about a loud laugh	
11-12. ujjagghikasikkhāpadam	
11-12. The rules about a loud laugh	
13-14. uccasaddasikkhāpadam	
13-14. The rules about a loud sound	
15-16. kāyappacālakasikkhāpadam	
15-16. The rules about swaying the body, etc.	
17-18. bāhuppacālakasikkhāpadam	232
17-18. The rules about swinging the arms	233
19-20. sīsappacālakasikkhāpadam	
19-20. The rules about shaking the head	
c. khambhakatavaggo	
c. The section about with arms akimbo	
21-22. khambhakatasikkhāpadam	
21-22. The rules about with arms akimbo	
23-24. oḡuṇṭhitasikkhāpadam	
23-24. The rules about with head covered	
25. ukkuṭikasikkhāpadam	

25. The rule about walking on toes or heels	-
26. pallatthikasikkhāpadam	234
26. The rule about lolling	235
27. sakkaccapaṭiggahaṇasikkhāpadam	
27. The rule about accepting appreciatively	
28. pattasaññinīpaṭiggahaṇasikkhāpadam	
28. The rule about accepting with attention to the bowl	
29. samasūpakapaṭiggahaṇasikkhāpadam	
29. The rule about accepting curry in proportion	
30. samatitthikasikkhāpadam	
30. The rules about level with the edge	
d. sakkaccavaggo	
d. The section about appreciatively	
31. sakkaccabhuñjanasikkhāpadam	
31. The rule about eating appreciatively	
32. pattasaññinībhuñjanasikkhāpadam	
32. The rule about eating with attention on the bowl	
33. sapadānasikkhāpadam	
33. The rule about methodically	
34. samasūpakasikkhāpadam	236
34. The rule about curry in proportion	237
35. thūpakatasikkhāpadam	
35. The rule about not from the top	
36. odanappaṭicchādanasikkhāpadam	
36. The rule about hiding food	
37. sūpodanaviññattisikkhāpadam	
37. The rule about asking for curry and rice	
38. ujjhānasaññinisikkhāpadam	
38. The rule about finding fault	
39. kabaḷasikkhāpadam	
39. The rule about mouthfuls	
40. ālopasikkhāpadam	
40. The rule about a piece [of food]	
e. kabaḷavaggo	
e. The section about mouthfuls	
41. anāhaṭasikkhāpadam	238
41. The rule about not brought	239
42. bhuñjamānasikkhāpadam	
42. The rule about eating	
43. sakabaḷasikkhāpadam	
43. The rule about full [with food]	

44. piṇḍukkhepakasikkhāpaḍaṃ
44. The rule about tossing up a lump
45. kabaḷāvacchedakasikkhāpaḍaṃ
45. The rule about breaking up a mouthful
46. avagaṇḍakāra-kasikkhāpaḍaṃ
46. The rule about stuffing out [the cheeks]
47. hatthaniddhunakasikkhāpaḍaṃ
47. The rule about shaking the hand about
48. siṭṭhāvaka-kasikkhāpaḍaṃ
48. The rule about scattering rice about
49. jivhānicchāra-kasikkhāpaḍaṃ 240
49. The rule about putting the tongue out 241
50. capucapuka-kasikkhāpaḍaṃ
50. The rule about making a champing noise
[= smacking my lips]
- f. surusuruvaggo
f. The section on making a sucking noise
51. surusurukāra-kasikkhāpaḍaṃ
51. The rule about making a sucking sound
52. hatthanillehakasikkhāpaḍaṃ
52. The rule about licking the hand
53. pattanillehakasikkhāpaḍaṃ
53. The rule about licking the bowl
54. oṭṭhanillehakasikkhāpaḍaṃ
54. The rule about licking the lips
55. sāmisa-sikkhāpaḍaṃ
55. The rule about soiled by food
56. sasitthaka-sikkhāpaḍaṃ
56. The rule about with rice grains
57. chattapāṇi-sikkhāpaḍaṃ 242
57. The rule about one with an umbrella in hand 243
58. daṇḍapāṇi-sikkhāpaḍaṃ
58. The rule about one with a staff in hand
59. satthapāṇi-sikkhāpaḍaṃ
59. The rule about one with a knife in hand
60. āvudhapāṇi-sikkhāpaḍaṃ
60. The rule about one with a weapon in hand
- g. pāḍukāvaggo
g. The section about shoes
61. pāḍuka-sikkhāpaḍaṃ
61. The rule about shoes
62. upāhana-sikkhāpaḍaṃ

62. The rule about sandals	
63. yānasikkhāpadam	
63. The rule about vehicles	
64. sayanasikkhāpadam	
64. The rule about couches	
65. pallatthikasikkhāpadam	244
65. The rule about lolling	245
66. veṭṭhasikkhāpadam	
66. The rule about wrapped round	
67. oḅḅṭṭhasikkhāpadam	
67. The rule about covered up	
68. chamāsikkhāpadam	
68. The rule about on the ground	
69. nīcāsanasikkhāpadam	
69. The rule about low seats	
70. ṭṭhasikkhāpadam	
70. The rule about standing	
71. pacchatogacchantīsikkhāpadam	
71. The rule about going behind	
72. uppathenagacchantīsikkhāpadam	246
72. The rule about going beside a path	247
73. ṭṭhītā-uccārasikkhāpadam	
73. The rule about defæcating while standing up	
74. harite-uccārasikkhāpadam	
74. The rule about defæcating on green plants	
75. uḍake-uccārasikkhāpadam	
75. The rule about defæcating in water	
I. adhikaraṇasamathā	248
I. The settlement of legal processes	249



PREFACE

Our aim in this book has been to produce the first complete English translation of the Pāli Bhikkhu- and Bhikkhunī-Pātimokkhas. There are several translations of the Bhikkhu-Pātimokkha in existence, and in making our translation we consulted those by J.F. Dickson (1876), T.W. Rhys Davids and Hermann Oldenberg (1881–85), I.B. Horner (1938–66), Ven. Nāṇamoli Thera (1966), and Ven. Thanissaro Bhikkhu (1994), and we gladly acknowledge the help we have received from our predecessors. Our debt to them will be clear to all our readers.

There is, however, no English translation of the complete Bhikkhunī-Pātimokkha. The translation by I.B. Horner includes only those rules of the Bhikkhunī-Pātimokkha which are given in the Bhikkhunī-Vibhaṅga of the Vinaya-piṭaka. The same applies to the German translation by Ute Hüsken (1997). In making our translation we have consulted both of these, and it will be seen that we follow Miss Horner closely, except where we think that her translation can be improved.

Our translation is intended as a preliminary to a translation of the Kaṅkhāvitarāṇī, which is in preparation, and it is therefore not rendered into idiomatic English but in accordance with the way in which the lemmata in that text have to be translated to make sense of the explanations given, i.e. it necessarily follows the structure of the Pāli as closely as is possible in acceptable English. In making our translation we have given full consideration to the comments on the Pātimokkha given in the Samantapāsādikā and Kaṅkhāvitarāṇī, and a number of problems in the interpretation of

the Pātimokkha will be discussed in our forthcoming edition and translation of the latter of these commentaries.

To make our translation we first produced an edition of both Pātimokkhas because the Pali Text Society does not include an edition of this text among its publications. To do that we consulted the editions of both Pātimokkhas which are found at the beginning of the Burmese, Sinhalese and Siamese editions of the Kaṅkhāvitaraṇī, Vadekar 1939, Wijayaratna 1991, and the text of the Pātimokkha rules which is embedded in the Vinaya-piṭaka which, as noted, does not give the complete version of the Bhikkhunī-Pātimokkha. The opening text of a number of Burmese manuscripts in the Fragile Palm Leaves collection in Bangkok were examined,¹ but any useful variant readings found in them were all noted in the Burmese edition, so they were not examined in detail. The edition by Ū: Phye (1904) did not contain useful variant readings in the rules, but the variants in the titles of *vaggas* are included here on the assumption that they reflect an earlier recension. A Mon manuscript of the Pātimokkha from Wat Paramaiyidawat, Bangkok, which the abbot of the monastery graciously permitted us to photocopy, was also examined, but no variant readings of interest were found.

We have occasionally consulted the Pātimokkha of other schools where we thought they might throw light on a Pāli term of doubtful meaning, and especially A. Hirakawa 1982 and Édith Nolot 1991 for the Bhikkhunī-Pātimokkha. This work is not, however, intended as a comparative study of the various Pātimokkhas. We have not referred to them where they differ in a way which seems to be of no consequence for the understanding of the Pāli version.

¹ Both Pātimokkhas in mss nos. 332, 359, 581, 970, 1250, 1264, 1302, 1322, 1350, 1353, 1361, 1364, 1367, 1377; the Bhikkhunī-Pātimokkha only in mss nos. 406, 415, 454, 501, 548.

Among the individuals who have given us help in producing this book, we should like to thank especially Peter Nyunt who, on our behalf, checked a number of points with Burmese Sayadaws, Margaret Cone who allowed us access to unpublished material from the Pali Text Society's *New Pāli-English Dictionary*, and to Ven. Nāṇatussita Bhikkhu who read through and made helpful suggestions on an earlier draft of this book

William Pruitt prepared the Pāli edition, the indexes, and sections VII–XI of the introduction. K.R. Norman prepared the translation and sections I–VI of the introduction. We both read and commented on each other's contributions, so the result can be regarded as a joint production.

INTRODUCTION

I. THE PĀTIMOKKHA

§ 1. The Pātimokkha contains the rules of conduct for Buddhist bhikkhus and bhikkhunīs, and consists of two sections: the Bhikkhu-Pātimokkha and the Bhikkhunī-Pātimokkha.

§ 2. The alternative name, probably arising from this two-fold division, is *dve mātikā*. As Oskar von Hinüber points out,¹ the term *mātikā* refers to lists or summaries typical for Abhidhamma texts, which usually begin with a *mātikā* naming the items to be explained in the following text. It is likely that this usage was borrowed from the Vinaya usage, where *mātikā* refers to the Pātimokkha in the frequent formula *dhammadhara, vinayadhara, mātikādhara*. *Mātikās* probably came into existence when the main points of the Buddha's teaching began to be put into a systematic form which at the same time could be easily memorised.

§ 3. The two Pātimokkhas do not include every rule for bhikkhus and bhikkhunīs but serve more as a summary. There are also *kammavācās* and other rules in the Khandhaka.

II. RULES FOR BHIKKHUS AND BHIKKHUNĪS

§ 4. For bhikkhus, there are 227 rules: 4 *pārājika*, 13 *saṅghādisesa*, 2 *aniyata*, 30 *nissaggiya pācittiya*, 92 *suddha-pācittiya*, 4 *pāṭidesanīya*, 75 *sekhiya*, 7 *adhikaraṇasamatha*.

§ 5. For bhikkhunīs, there are 311 rules: 8 *pārājika* (4 in common), 17 *saṅghādisesa* (7 in common), no *aniyata*, 30

¹1996, § 131.

nissaggiya pācittiya (18 in common), 166 *suddhapācittiya* (70 in common), 8 *pāṭidesanīya* (none in common), 75 *sekhiya* (identical), 7 *adhikaraṇasamatha* (identical).

§ 6. For the bhikkhunīs, the Bhikkhunī-Vibhaṅga gives only the rules which are exclusive to bhikkhunīs, except that the first and last *sekhiya* rules are given, and the *adhikaraṇasamatha* are given in an abbreviated form.

§ 7. The manuscripts and editions of the Pātimokkha, however, give the full set of rules, so we include them and translate them.

§ 8. There are occasional variations in spelling between the Bhikkhu-Pātimokkha and the Bhikkhunī-Pātimokkha: *tathārūpa-(p)paccaṃyā*; *attūpanāyikaṃ*; *upāhanārūḥhassa*; *Kattikatemāsi(ka)puṇṇamaṃ*; *paṭisāyaṇīyāni*; *pāda-kārūḥhassa*; *pāṇīyathālakam*. There seems to be no significance in these variations.

III. THE NAMES OF THE VAGGAS

§ 9. The fact that *vaggas* are usually named after the first rule in them enables us to see that B^c and S^c are wrong to give to the third BhīNiss *vagga* the name *pattavagga*, which is the name also found for the first *vagga*. There it is appropriate, since the first rule is about a hoard of bowls. The first rule of the third *vagga*, however, is about *jātarūpa* (although the title of the rule is *rūpiya-sikkhāpadaṃ*). The C^c name *jātarūpavagga* is therefore more appropriate and is more likely to be correct. The error perhaps arose from the fact that the third BhNiss *vagga* is called *pattavagga*, and this name was taken over mechanically into the Bhikkhunī-Pātimokkha.

IV. THE NAMES OF THE RULES

§ 10. In general the names of the rules, which are clearly secondary and are not recited as part of the Pātimokkha, are taken from the most important word or phrase in the rule.

§ 11. This is not always so, and in one case the name is a synonym of such a word. So BhNiss 27 about going to a weaver (*tantavāya*) is called (*mahā*)-*pesakāra-s°*. The rule before it is also about going to a weaver, but this is called *suttaviññatti-s°* (BhNiss 26). BhNiss 27 is called *mahā*-, which is reminiscent of the pairs of names found, e.g. in the Majjhima-nikāya, where what was originally the shorter version (but is not necessarily so in the versions¹ we have) of a sutta is called *cūḷa*-. We may therefore assume, with Oskar von Hinüber,² that BhNiss 26 was originally regarded as, if not actually called, *cūḷa-pesakāra-s°*.

§ 12. Other rules have a personal name attached to them because they have a prime role in the introductory story, e.g. *Kāṇamātu-s°* (BhPāc 34) and *Mahānāma-s°* (BhPāc 47), or the offence which led to the rule being promulgated was originally committed by the named person, e.g. *Ariṭṭha-s°* (BhPāc 68), *Kaṇṭaka-s°* (BhPāc 70) and *Nanda-s°* (BhPāc 92).

§ 13. One of the strangest titles is *dubbala-s°* (BhPāc 81), which is so called because in the introductory story to the rule the bhikkhu concerned had a *dubbala-cīvara*. The rule, however, has no reference whatsoever to a *dubbala-cīvara*. In the uddāna³ the rule is referred to as *Dabba-°*; in the commentary⁴ it is called *Dabba-°*, after the name of the owner of the *dubbala* robe.

V. THE ORDER OF THE RULES

§ 14. In the various sections, we often find that rules which are structured similarly, whether from the point of view of

¹Norman, 1983, p. 44.

²1999, pp. 10–11.

³Vin IV 157,12*.

⁴Sp (IV) 880,8.

offence or of grammar, occur together. As noted above, BhPāc 26 and BhPāc 27 are both about visiting a weaver.

§ 15. This arrangement is very common in the *sekhiya* section, where the rules frequently come in pairs, one referring to going, and the other to sitting.

§ 16. In the BhPāc rules there is a set at the end (BhPāc 86–92) which has an adjective ending in *-aka* (*chedanaka* five times (87, 89–92), *bhedanaka* once (86), *uddālanaka* once (88)) defining what must be done to the offending object, as well as the expiation (*pācittiya*) which the offender must perform. One might have expected that the five *chedanaka* offences would be together, but in fact the *uddālanaka* rule is inserted after the first *chedanaka* rule. This is particularly surprising, because the *uddālanaka* rule is introduced by *yo pana bhikkhu*, as is the *bhedanaka* rule. One might have thought that remembering the rules would have been helped by putting similarly structured rules together. The insertion of 88 between 87 and 89 is presumably because both 87 and 88 include the words *mañcaṃ vā pīḷhaṃ vā*.

§ 17. These rules are taken over into BhīPāc in the same order (BhīPāc 163–66: *chedanaka* three times (163, 165–66), *bhedanaka* once (162), *uddālanaka* once (164); there is no equivalent of 89 and 91), and it is surprising that BhīPāc 22 — which also has *chedanakam* — is separated from the others.

§ 18. Ute Hüsken has pointed out¹ that the Bhī-Saṅgh offences are arranged according to gender, with the bhikkhunīs' *paṭhamāpattika* offences being placed before those which are common to bhikkhunīs and bhikkhus. The same procedure is then followed with the *yāvatatīyaka* offences.

¹ 1999, p. 27, n. 15.

VI. GENDER DIFFERENCES IN RULES

§ 19. In the case of the rules which are common to bhikkhus and bhikkhunīs, the wording of the rules is identical *mutatis mutandis*, e.g. *yo pana bhikkhu* is replaced by *yā pana bhikkhunī*. There are a very few exceptions where masculine forms appear in feminine rules. These seem rather to be oversights on the part of the redactors, or perhaps arise from alternative interpretations:

(a) *jānaṃ* "knowingly" BhīNiss 30 = BhNiss 30; BhīPāc 112 = BhPāc 16; BhīPāc 116 = BhPāc 20; BhīPāc 143–45 = BhPāc 62, 63, 66; BhīPāc 147–48 = BhPāc 69, 70; BhīPāc 160 = BhPāc 82.

It occurs independently in BhīPār 6, BhīSaṅgh 2, BhīPāc 51.

(b) BhīPār 4 = BhPār 4: both have *ajānaṃ*, *apassaṃ*, *anabhijānaṃ* as present participles.

(c) BhPāc 73 has *yathādhammo kāretabbo*, and this is taken over into BhīPāc 151, perhaps being interpreted as *yathā dhammo kāretabbo*.

(d) In BhPāc 73 the phrase *idaṃ tasmim mohanake pācittiyaṃ* occurs. Kkh explains: "Whoever, when negligence has been imputed to him, is negligent again, this expiation offence is to be understood in respect of that negligent individual",¹ making it clear that *tasmim* is being interpreted as the male offender. We should then have expected the feminine equivalent in BhīPāc 151, but the wording is identical. The form is perhaps being taken as a noun (see next).

(e) The various rules with *-ake*

The forms in *-ake* may refer either to the action, or to the doer of the action. Kkh. however, is not consistent in its interpretation.

¹yo evaṃ āropite mohe puna moheti tasmim mohanake puggale idaṃ pācittiyaṃ vedittabbaṃ. Kkh 129.27–28.

BhPāc 12 = BhīPāc 108 reads: *aññavādake, vihesake pācittiyam*. Kkh explains: “*Replying evasively*: [whatever matter the Vinaya expert asks in the middle of the saṅgha,] he speaks other than that. This is a name for one evading one question by another. *Causing trouble*: he gives trouble,”¹ thus taking the *-aka* forms as referring to the male doer.

BhPāc 13 = BhīPāc 109 reads: *ujjhāpanake, khīyanake pācittiyam*. Kkh explains: “That utterance is *disparaging*. In just the same way, by whatever manner of speaking they criticise him, they show dishonour to him everywhere, that is *criticising*; in that disparaging and criticising ... ,”² thus taking the *-aka* forms to refer to the actions.

I assume that all the *-aka* forms refer to the doers of the actions, and would therefore expect feminine forms in the Bhikkhunī-Pātimokkha.

Oskar von Hinüber gives³ other examples of bhikkhunīs’ regulations being formulated in imitation of those for bhikkhus.

VII. THE TRANSLATION OF TECHNICAL TERMS

§ 20. The names of some of the offences are difficult to translate, because it is clear that, in some cases, the tradition no longer remembered the original meaning of the words.

§ 21. *Pārājika*: probably meant “involving exclusion”, or “referring to expulsion”⁴ but the Theravādin tradition assumed that it meant “defeated”. Because of our need to translate in a way which fits with the lemmata of Kkh, we follow the tradition.

¹ *aññaṃ vadatī ti aññavādako; vihesetī ti vihesako*, Kkh 89,24–25.

² *taṃ vacanaṃ ujjhāpanakaṃ; yena ca tath’ eva vadantā khīyanti. sabbattha tassa avaññaṃ pakāseti, taṃ khīyyanakaṃ, tasmim ujjhāpanake khīyanake pācittiyam*, Kkh 90,8–14.

³ 1994, pp. 69–70.

⁴ O. von Hinüber, 1996, § 17.

§ 22. *Saṅghādisesa*: probably meant “involving the remainder of the saṅgha”, but the tradition assumed that the *ādi* element of the name meant “beginning” and gave an interpretation, “The saṅgha is required at the beginning and on a subsequent [occasion]”.¹ This leads to such translations as: “Entailing initial and subsequent meeting of the saṅgha”.² We translate, “Entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha”.

VIII. THE TRANSLATION OF SEMI-TECHNICAL WORDS

§ 23. We have left a number of semi-technical words untranslated, e.g. *bhikkhu*, *bhikkhunī*, *buddha*, *bhagavant*, *saṅgha*.

§ 24. Others we have translated, e.g. *sāmaṇera*, *sāmaṇerī* = (male, female) novice; *sikkhamānā* = trainee.

§ 25. Some words have caused difficulties, e.g. *vuṭṭhapeti*, since it is used in different contexts. Édith Nolot uses³ “prendre en charge” for all contexts. We have decided to translate this as “sponsor [as a novice, as a trainee, for ordination]”.

IX. THE RECITATION OF THE PĀTIMOKKHA

§ 26. The background of the fortnightly recitation of the Pātimokkha is found in the second section of the Mahāvagga of the Vinaya-piṭaka.⁴ King Bimbisāra noticed that people went to hear the teachings of other sects when they met on the eighth day and the fourteenth or fifteenth day of the fortnight. He suggested to the Buddha that his bhikkhus

¹ *saṅgho ādimhi c' eva sese ca icchitabbo assā ti saṅghādiseso*, Sp (III) 522,9–10 = Kkh 35,20–21.

² Nāṇamoli, 1966, p. 70.

³ 1991. §§ 207, 213.

⁴ Vin I 101–36 (BD IV 130–82). The discussion here does not give all the details relating to the twice monthly recitation. Specific instructions for bhikkhunis are not given in the Vinaya-piṭaka.

should do the same. When the Buddha informed the bhikkhus that they were allowed to meet in this manner, they did so but remained silent. People criticized them for this, and the Buddha then told the bhikkhus they could teach the doctrine at those times. Then he decided to have the bhikkhus recite the rules of training he had laid down.

§ 27. The Buddha told the bhikkhus of his decision and laid down the wording for the introduction.¹ A number of regulations regarding the recitation are given in the second section of the *Mahāvagga*. The Buddha reduced the *Upasatha* days for reciting the *Pātimokkha* to two in a month on either the fourteenth or fifteenth day of the fortnight. All the bhikkhus of one residence should come together for the recitation, which led to the establishing of boundaries and a hall for the *Upasatha*.

§ 28. For the recitation of the *Pātimokkha*, it must be the right day,² there must be a minimum of four bhikkhus,³ the bhikkhus present must not be guilty of the same offence,⁴ and no unsuitable person should be present.⁵ If only two or three bhikkhus are present, they simply make a declaration of their purity. If a bhikkhu is alone, he should do the four preliminary duties, then make a determination that the day is an *Upasatha* day for an individual.⁶

§ 29. Before the recitation, any bhikkhu who has committed an offence must confess it to another bhikkhu.⁷ The four

¹See below, p. 4.

²*Vin I 117 (BD IV 154f.)*

³*Vin I 124 (BD IV 164).*

⁴*Vin I 126f. (BD IV 167).*

⁵*Vin I 115, 135f. (BD IV 152, 180).*

⁶*Vin I 124 (BD IV 164–66).*

⁷*Vin I 125–28 (BD IV 166–71).*

preliminary functions are to be performed,¹ and the five preliminary duties must be fulfilled.² How these preliminary functions and duties are presented at the beginning of the recitation of the Pātimokkha differs from one monastic tradition to another.³

§ 30. The Pātimokkha is normally recited by a therā, but if a therā is not able to do so, an experienced, competent bhikkhu may recite it.⁴ There are five ways of reciting the Pātimokkha:⁵ (1) the introduction is recited, and the rest is announced without being recited; (2) the introduction and the first four rules are recited and the rest is announced; (3) the thirteen *saṅghādisesa* rules are added to the second type of recitation; (4) the two indefinite rules are added to the third type of recitation; (5) the entire Pātimokkha is recited.

¹See below, p. 3. These functions are given with the instructions for the Uposatha day for an individual bhikkhu, Vin I 125 (BD IV 166). The wording used in the recitation is found in Sp (V) 1063.

²See below, p. 2. Four of these are mentioned in the second section of the Mahāvagga: (1) declaration of purity, Vin I 120f. (BD IV 159f.); (2) consent, Vin I 120f. (BD IV 161f.); (3) announcing the time, Vin I 117 (BD IV 154f.); and (4) counting the bhikkhus, Vin I 117 (BD IV 154); the fifth, the exhortation of the bhikkhunīs, is given elsewhere in the Vinaya-piṭaka, Vin IV 49–53 (BD II 263–72).

³Burmese manuscripts, and the editions of the Pātimokkha published singly or with the Kaṅkhāvitaraṇī in Burma and Thailand begin with the preliminary text give below in section A (pp. 2–4). The Simon Hewavitarne edition in Sri Lanka does not include the Pātimokkha as a separate text at the beginning; but Sinhalese translations, editions with translations made in Sri Lanka of the Pātimokkha, and the Minayeff edition (1869) all begin with different preliminary texts — different from our edition here and from each other, although they do have common points with each other. The preliminary material in these are found in Gogerly and Beal, 1862, pp. 417–19; Dickson, 1876, pp. 70–72; Nāṇamoli, 1992, pp. 55–64; and Nāṇadassana Bhikkhu and Vivekavīhārī Bhikkhu, ca. 1999, pp. 3–8.

⁴Vin I 116 (BD IV 152f.).

⁵Vin I 112f. (BD IV 147f.).

X. SANCTIONS FOR BREAKING THE RULES

§ 31. The Vinaya-piṭaka and its commentaries include a number of details concerning sanctions for bhikkhus and bhikkhunīs who break the rules of the Pātimokkha.¹ Interestingly, the most serious infractions (offences involving defeat, *pārājikā*) are not dealt with by a formal action being taken. If a bhikkhu or bhikkhunī is guilty of a *pārājika* offence, admission of guilt constitutes their exclusion from the saṅgha. The saṅgha does not have to take any further action. If a bhikkhu or bhikkhunī refuses to admit that a *pārājika* rule has been broken, the saṅgha can take action to exclude that person from taking part in the recitation of the Pātimokkha, and it is also possible to expel a member of the saṅgha.

§ 32. The second type of offence (offences entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha, *saṅghādisesā*) is the most complicated type to redress. It is complicated because of what the bhikkhu or bhikkhunī must do to make amends, because of the number of bhikkhus or bhikkhunīs required to take action, and because of the many possible variations in the nature of the offence. Édith Nolot points out that these are the only offences in the Pātimokkha that require the supervision of the saṅgha, that involve penalties, and that require re-admission to full status as a bhikkhu or bhikkhunī.²

§ 33. The offences entailing expiation with forfeiture (*nissaggiya-pācittiyā*) require confession of the fault and forfeiture of the item involved in the offence.

¹For more information on how confessions are made by present-day bhikkhus, see "Confession of Offences Before Pātimokkha", condensed from *Ordination Procedure* and published in Nāṇamoli 1996, pp. 43–47; Thanissaro Bhikkhu 1994, pp. 542–44; Nāṇadassana and Vivekavihāri, ca. 199, pp. 82–90; Nāṇadassana. 1999. pp. 198–217.

²Nolot, 1996, p. 116.

§ 34. The remaining offences (offences involving expiation [*pācittiyā*],¹ offences to be confessed [*pāṭidesanīyā*], and the rules of training [*sekhiyā*]) are redressed through a general confession that does not specify the fault being confessed.²

§ 35. In the Bhikkhu-Pātimokkha, there is the category of two indefinite offences (*dve aniyatā dhammā*), but the two matters given there will be determined to fall under one of the other categories (an offence entailing defeat, an offence entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha, or an offence requiring expiation) depending on the circumstances surrounding the offence.

§ 36. In addition to giving the list of rules, the Pātimokkhas end with a list of seven ways in which legal matters are to be settled. These cover four types of legal question that might arise: (1) disputes (*vivādādhikaraṇaṃ*), (2) censure (*anuvādādhikaraṇaṃ*), (3) offences (*āpattādhikaraṇaṃ*), and (4) obligations (*kiccādhikaraṇaṃ*).³

(a) Offences involving defeat

§ 37. One passage in the Vinaya-piṭaka seems to indicate that there should be a formal action taken with regard to a bhikkhu who is guilty of an offence entailing defeat:⁴

A bhikkhu is guilty of an offence entailing defeat. A saṅgha; [a group of] several [bhikkhus], or one individual [bhikkhu] reprove him for that, saying, "The venerable one is guilty of an offence entailing defeat." He says, "Yes, friends, I am guilty of an offence entailing defeat." The saṅgha deals with him on the basis of the offence

¹Called "offences involving simple expiation" (*suddha-pācittiyā*) in the titles of the rules in order to distinguish them from offences entailing expiation with forfeiture (*nissaggiya-pācittiyā*).

²The wording of the confessions given below (§§ 46, 48) seems to be derived from the wording given at Vin I 126.1-4 and Vin II 102.20-22.

³See Vin II 88-93 (*BD V 117-25*).

⁴Vin II 84.10-14 (*BD V 110*).

entailing defeat, [etc., that he has confessed to]. The acknowledgement made is in accordance with the rule.

§ 38. Another passage explains how the Pātimokkha can be suspended for a bhikkhu guilty of an offence entailing defeat,¹ but no formal act connected with bhikkhus or bhikkhunīs guilty of an offence entailing defeat is given in either the Vinaya-piṭaka or the Pāli commentaries. Ute Hüsken points out that no concrete act of expulsion is given in the Vinaya-piṭaka for a bhikkhu who “is aware of his *pārājika* offence and leaves the order on his own initiative”.² The status of a bhikkhu or bhikkhunī who has committed one of the gravest offences is given in the expression “*ayam pi pārājiko [-ikā] hoti asaṃvāso [-sā]*” (“He [she] too becomes defeated, not in communion”) which is given at the end of each rule. She points out that there are cases in the Vinaya-piṭaka where bhikkhus and bhikkhunīs guilty of *pārājika* offences are to be expelled.³ This is particularly true in the case of bhikkhus or bhikkhunīs who refuse to admit they are guilty of a *pārājika* offence, but no procedure of expulsion is laid out in the Vinaya-piṭaka.⁴

(b) Offences entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha⁵

§ 39. The simplest case for a bhikkhu or bhikkhunī who has committed an offence entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha is a single unconcealed offence and is handled as follows:

(1) The bhikkhu or bhikkhunī requests permission to undergo a period of penance (*mānatta*). For bhikkhus the period is six

¹ Vin II 243f. (BD V 342).

² 1997b. p. 93.

³ Hüsken. 1997b. pp. 94–96, 109.

⁴ 1997b. 94.

⁵ A number of the formal procedures to be followed in the case of an offence entailing a formal meeting of the Saṅgha are given by Vajirañāṇavararasa, 1983, Vol. III. pp. 312–64.

days. For bhikkhunīs it is half a month, and their period of penance is spent before both the bhikkhu and bhikkhunī saṅghas.¹

(α) First the bhikkhu or bhikkhunī requests that the saṅgha allow him or her to undergo a period of penance, repeating the request three times.²

(β) An experienced, competent bhikkhu or bhikkhunī puts the motion to the saṅgha three times, and they indicate their agreement by remaining silent.

(χ) The bhikkhu or bhikkhunī undertakes the period of penance.³

(2) During the period of penance, the bhikkhu observes ninety-four restrictions.⁴ One of these restrictions requires him to inform incoming bhikkhus that he is observing the penance.⁵

Bhikkhunīs must announce that they are observing penance to a group of at least four bhikkhunīs and four bhikkhus each day of the fortnight.⁶

(3) At the end of the period of penance, the bhikkhu requests a saṅgha of at least twenty bhikkhus⁷ for reinstatement (*abbhāna*).⁸

(α) The bhikkhu makes his request three times.

(β) An experienced, competent bhikkhu puts the motion to the saṅgha three times, and they indicate their agreement by remaining silent.

¹See below, p. 143.

²Vin II 38.11–39.14 (*BD V 56f.*).

³The wording to be used by the bhikkhu is given in Sp (VI) 1171.18f.

⁴Vin II 31.28–33.31 (*BD V 51–52*, to be expanded with *BD V 45–48*); summarized by Nolot, 1996, pp. 119–22. Bhikkhunīs presumably observed the restrictions that could apply to them.

⁵The wording of the announcement is found in Sp (VI) 1171.21–28.

⁶See Kkh 167f. and Nolot, 1996, p. 136.

⁷See below, p. 23.

⁸Vin II 39.24–40.16 (*BD V 57f.*).

A bhikkhunī put her request to a saṅgha of at least twenty bhikkhunīs.¹

§ 40. There are many complications which may arise that will make it more complicated to redress an offence entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha:

(1) If a bhikkhu commits a second unconcealed offence of this class during his period of penance or after having completed six days of penance but before he has been reinstated, he is to be sent back to the beginning and must begin the six days of penance again.²

(2) If the offence is concealed, a period of probation (*parivāsa*) equal to the number of days the offence was concealed must be observed before the period of penance.³ (Bhikkhunīs do not undergo a period of probation even when they conceal an offence.⁴) A second offence which is concealed results in being sent back to the beginning of the period of penance. Serving the second period of penance is concurrent with the first period of penance.⁵ Provisions are also given for further hidden offences of various durations.

(3) It may be necessary to suspend the period of penance or of probation for a given time, after which it is to be taken up again.⁶

(c) Indefinite rules (*aniyatā*).

§ 41. The offences in the section of indefinite rules will eventually be classified under one of three types of offence : offences entailing defeat, offences entailing a formal meeting

¹See below, p. 143.

²Vin II 46.8–33 (*BD* V 62f.).

³See below, p. 23. For the wording of the procedure, see Vin II 40.15–41.12.

⁴See Kkh 166.26f.; Nolot, 1996, pp. 135f.

⁵Vin II 48.20–49.18.

⁶See Nolot, 1996, pp. 122, 125.

of the saṅgha, or offences requiring expiation. The offence is brought to the attention of the saṅgha by a “female lay follower whose word can be trusted”. The determination of which offence has been broken depends on the circumstances, either admitted by the bhikkhu, or if he refuses, it depends on the word of the female follower. There are no indefinite rules for bhikkhunīs.

“ (d) Expiation with forfeiture (*nissaggiya-pācittiya*)

§ 42. When a bhikkhu or bhikkhunī breaks a rule that involves expiation with forfeiture, they have to confess their offence, hand over the article that was obtained in the wrong way, and in all but two cases the article is then given back to them.¹

§ 43. A bhikkhu should approach and confess his offence to either a saṅgha, a group of two or three bhikkhus, or an individual bhikkhu. In the first two cases an experienced, competent bhikkhu accepts the confession of the offence and proposes to the saṅgha or the other bhikkhus that the article be returned to the offending bhikkhu. If confession is made to an individual bhikkhu, he does not need to propose the return of the article to anyone else. The procedure is the same for a bhikkhunī, who approaches other bhikkhunīs.²

§ 44. The articles that are to be returned include robes, robe material, rugs, sheep’s wool, something obtained through buying and selling, bowls, medicines, an apportioned possession belonging to the saṅgha; and, found only in the bhikkhunī rules, something asked for wrongly, something

¹For a discussion and examples of the wording of the confession of this and the following rules, see “Confession of Offences before Pātimokkha” in Nāṇamoli, 1966, pp. 43–47.

²The description of the procedure and wording of the confession is found in the explanation of the words after each rule in the Vinaya. For the full form of the formal procedure for bhikkhus for the first of these rules, see Vin III 196–97 (BD II 7–9); for bhikkhunīs, see Vin IV 244 (BD III 214).

obtained in exchange wrongly, a heavy cloth worth more than four *kaṃsas* that has been bargained for, and a light cloth worth two and a half *kaṃsas* that has been bargained for.

§ 45. Three rules in each Pātimokkha concern items that are not to be returned to the offending bhikkhu or bhikkhunī. In two rules,¹ gold and silver or money are to be removed by a monastery attendant or a lay follower who can exchange them for oil, ghee, honey, or molasses. If these cannot be obtained, the gold and silver or money are to be disposed of. If there is no attendant or lay follower, an acceptable bhikkhu or bhikkhunī should throw them away.² In a third rule,³ if a new bowl is obtained in exchange for a bowl with fewer than five mends, after the new bowl is forfeited, the offender is to be given the “last of the bowls of that assembly”.

(e) Expiation (*pācittiya*)

§ 46. Expiation is effected through a confession. The wording is found in the Khuddasikkhā (p. 115, 13–16).

(f) Matters to be confessed (*pāṭidesanīyā*)

§ 47. The words of the confession for matters to be confessed are contained in the rules themselves. A bhikkhu confesses to another bhikkhu.⁴ A bhikkhunī confesses to another bhikkhunī.⁵

(g) Rules of training (*sekhiyā*)

§ 48. Confession of an offence against the rules of training is made through a general confession without specifying the

¹See p. 39, rules 18 and 19; p. 157, rules 21 and 22.

²See Vin III 238 (BD II 104).

³See p. 41, rule 41; p. 159, rule 24.

⁴See below, pp. 85, 87. For a detailed discussion, see Nolot, 1996, pp. 96–99.

⁵See below, pp. 225, 227.

offence. The wording for the confession is found in the Mūlasikkhā, p. 129,23–27.

XI. SEVEN WAYS FOR SETTLEMENT

§ 49. The last seven items in the Bhikkhu- and Bhikkhunī-Pātimokkhas are not rules but a list of seven methods to be used to settle legal processes. The seven methods are used to deal with four types of legal processes (*adhikāraṇa*):¹

- I. Disputes over what is or is not (1) *dhamma*, (2) discipline, (3) spoken or (4) practised or (5) laid down by the Buddha, (6) an offence, (7) a serious offence, (8) an offence with [membership in the saṅgha] remaining, or (9) a bad offence.
- II. Censure of bhikkhus or bhikkhunīs for falling away from (1) moral habits, (2) good habit, (3) right view, or (4) a right mode of livelihood.
- III. Offences.
- IV. Legal proceedings of the saṅgha: (1) acts for which leave should be asked, (2) acts involving a motion, (3) acts involving a motion and a resolution, (4) acts involving a motion and a resolution put three times.

§ 50. Details about how to apply the seven methods to these four types of legal processes are found in the Vinaya-piṭaka² and Majjhima-nikāya.³

- I. A verdict “in the presence of” (*sammukhā-vinaya*) is used for all four types of legal processes, either alone or in combination with one of the other six methods. It involves the presence of (1) a saṅgha (or a committee that has been appointed), (2) the *dhamma*, (3) the discipline, and (4) individuals (*i.e.*, those involved in a dispute).

¹Vin II 88,17–89,4 (*BD V 117f.*), Vin IV 207 (*BD III 153f.*); see also M II 247 (*MLS III 33*) and Nolot, 1996, pp. 92–115.

²Vin II 73,1–104,11 (*BD V 96–140*), Vin V 91,1–113,9 (*BD VI 132–67*). See Nolot, 1996, p. 92, nn. 3 and 4 for more references.

³M II 247,3–50,21 (*MLS III 33–36*). See Nolot, 1996, p. 92, n. 5 for more references.

- II. A verdict of mindfulness (*sati-vinaya*) is used in the second legal process involving censure. This is used when a bhikkhu or bhikkhunī can deny an unfounded charge.¹
- III. A verdict of insanity (*amūḥa-vinaya*) is also used with a legal process involving censure. This is used by a bhikkhu or bhikkhunī who is accused of having committed an offence but who was insane at the time.
- IV. A legal process carried out according to what is admitted (*paṭiññāya kāretabbaṃ*) is used with regard to offences, the third type of legal process. This involves confessing one's offences.
- V. The decision of the majority (*yebhuyyasikā*) is used for settling disputes, the first type of legal process.
- VI. Giving a penalty to a bhikkhu or bhikkhunī for further evil (*tassa-pāpiyasikā*) is used to censure a bhikkhu or bhikkhunī, the second type of legal process.
- VII. Covering up as with grass (*tiṇa-vatthāraka*) is used to settle controversy over offences, the third type of legal process.

¹See Nolot, 1996, p. 109.

ABBREVIATIONS

BD	<i>The Book of the Discipline</i> (trans. of Vin)
B ^c	Burmese edition
Bh	Bhikkhu
BhīNiss	Bhikkhunī-nissaggiya-pācittiya
BhīPāc	Bhikkhunī-pācittiya
BhīPār	Bhikkhunī-pārājika
BhīSaṅgh	Bhikkhunī-saṅghādisesa
BhNiss	Bhikkhu-nissaggiya-pācittiya
BhPāc	Bhikkhu-pācittiya
BhPār	Bhikkhu-pārājika
BhSaṅgh	Bhikkhu-saṅghādisesa
BhSekh	Bhikkhu-sekhiya
C ^c	Sinhalese edition
E ^c	European edition
IJJ	<i>Indo-Iranian Journal</i>
JIAS	<i>Journal of the International Association of Buddhist Studies</i>
JRAS	<i>Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society</i>
Kkh	Kaṅkhāvitarāṇī
M	Majjhima-nikāya
MLS	<i>The Middle Length Sayings</i> (translation of M)
Mp	Manorathapūraṇī
Ñā	Ñānamoli Thera, <i>Pātimokkha</i> . Bangkok 1992.
Pāt B ^c	Burmese edition of Pātimokkha published with the Burmese edition of Kkh
Phyc	Ū: Phyc, ed. <i>Dvemaṭikā pali-tō</i> . Rangoon, 1904.
Po	variant reading in S ^c
s ^o	<i>sikkhāpada</i>
SBB	Sacred Books of the Buddhists
SBE	Sacred Books of the East
S ^c	Thai edition
Sp	Samantapāsādikā
Vin	Vinaya-piṭaka
Wij	Môhan Wijayaratna, <i>Les Moniales bouddhistes : Naissance et développement du monachisme féminin</i> . Paris 1991.
ZDMG	<i>Zeitschrift der Deutschen Morgenländischen Gesellschaft</i>

EDITIONS OF THE PĀTIMOKKHA USED FOR THIS EDITION

“Dvemātikāpālī” (Bhikkhu- and Bhikkhunī-pātimokkha) published with *Kaṅkhāvitaranī-aṭṭhakathā*, pp. 1–81, Rangoon, 1990 (= B^c)

Ū: Phye, ed. *Dvemātikā pali-tō*, Rangoon, 1904 (= Phyc)

Pātimokkhapālī and Kaṅkhāvitaranī-aṭṭhakathā, Bangkok: The Bhūmibalo Bhikkhu Foundation Press, 1984; pp. 1–70 (= S^c)

Edition quoted included in Ñānamoli Thera, 1966. *The Pātimokkha*. Bangkok: Mahāmakūṭarājavidhyālaya (= Nā)

Môhan Wijayaratna, *Les Moniales bouddhistes : Naissance et développement du monachisme féminin*. Paris 1991 (= Wij)

WORKS CITED

[This list contains only those publications which we have consulted when making our translation. A more detailed bibliography will appear in our edition and translation of the *Kaṅkhāvitaranī*.]

Davids, T.W. Rhys & Hermann Oldenberg. H., 1881–85 *Vinaya Texts*, 3 vols. (Sacred Books of the East XII, XVII. XX).

Dickson, J.F. 1876. “The Pātimokkha, Being the Buddhist Office of the Confession of Priests : The Pali Text, with a Translation and Notes,” *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*, new series, VIII, pp. 62–130.

Gogerly, D.J. and S. Beal, 1862. “Comparative Arrangement of Two Translations of the Buddhist Ritual for the Priesthood, Known as the Prātimoksha, or Pātimokhan,” *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*, 2nd series, XIX, pp. 407–80. [Note: The Gogerly translation was originally published in *Ceylon Friend*, Volume III.]

Heirman, Ann. 1999a, “On Pārājika”, *Buddhist Studies Review*, 16, 1, pp. 51–59.

———. 1999b, review of Hüskens 1997a, *Buddhist Studies Review*, 16, 1, pp. 87–91.

Hinüber, O. von. 1994. “Die neun Aṅgas: Ein früher Versuch zur Einteilung buddhistischer Texte”. *Wiener Zeitschrift für die Kunde Südasiens*, XXXVIII, pp. 121–35.

———. 1996. *A Handbook of Pāli Literature*. Berlin : Walter de Gruyter.

- . 1999. *Das Pātimokkhasutta der Theravādin*. Mainz/Stuttgart.
- Hirakawa, A. 1982. *Monastic Discipline for the Buddhist Nuns*. Patna.
- Horner, I.B. 1938–66. *The Book of the Discipline*, 6 volumes, Sacred Books of the Buddhists. London.
- Hüsken, Ute. 1997a. *Die Vorschriften für die buddhistische Nonnengemeinde im Vinaya-Piṭaka der Theravādin*. Berlin.
- . 1997b. "The Application of the Vinaya Term *nāsanā*", *Journal of the International Association of Buddhist Studies*, Vol. 20, no. 2, pp. 93–111.
- . 1999. "Rephrased Rules : The Application of Monks' Prescriptions to the Nuns' Discipline in Early Buddhist Law", *Buddhist Studies* (Bukkyō Kenkyū), Vol. XXVIII, pp. 19–29.
- Minayeff, I. P. 1869. *Prātimokṣa Sūtra*. Saint Petersburg.
- Ñāṇadassana Bhikkhu and Vivekavihārī Bhikkhu, trans., ca. 1999. *Pātimokkha : Das Hauptgesetz der Bettelmönche mit Notizen der ethischen Führung (Vinaya) im Anhang*. N.p.
- Ñāṇadassana Bhikkhu, 1999. *Bhikkhu-Pātimokkham: Das Hauptregelwerk der buddhistischen Bettelmönche* (2nd ed. of the preceding). Colombo : Karunaratne & Sons.
- Ñāṇamoli Thera, 1992. *The Pāṭimokkha*. Bangkok: Mahāmakuta-rājavidyālaya (first edition, 1966).
- Nolot, Édith. 1991. *Règles de discipline des nonnes bouddhistes*. Paris (Collège de France, Publications de l'Institut de Civilisation Indienne, 60).
- . 1996. "Studies in Vinaya Technical Terms, I–III," *Journal of the Pali Text Society*, Vol. XXII, pp. 73–150.
- Norman, K.R. 1983. *Pāli Literature*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Oldenberg, Hermann. 1879–83. *Vinaya-piṭaka*. 5 vols. London.
- Thanissaro Bhikkhu. 1994. *The Buddhist Monastic Code*. Valley Center, Calif. : Metta Forest Monastery.
- Vadekar, R.D. 1939. *Pātimokkha*. Poona.
- Vajirañāṇavarorasa. 1983. *The Entrance to the Vinaya (Vinayamukha)*. Bangkok: Mahāmakut Rajavidyālaya Press, Vol. III.
- Wijayaratna, Mohan. 1991. *Les moniales bouddhistes*. Paris.

THE PĀTIMOKKHA

I. Bhikkhupātimokkhapāli¹

namo tassa Bhagavato arahato sammāsambuddhassa.

A. [pubbakiccaṃ]

1. pubbakaraṇaṃ (4)

- 5 sammajjanī padīpo ca udakaṃ āsanena ca ;
 uposathassa etāni pubbakaraṇaṃ ti vuccati.

[Sp V 1063.3f.]

2. pubbakiccaṃ (5)

- 10 chanda-pārisuddhi-utukkhānaṃ bhikkhugaṇaṇā ca
 ovādo;
 uposathassa etāni pubbakiccaṃ ti vuccati.

[Sp V 1063.6f.]

3. pattakalla-aṅgā (4)

- 15 uposatho, yāvatikā ca bhikkhū kammappattā,²
 sabhāgāpattiyo ca na vijjanti,

¹Ñā: -mokkhaṃ

²Sp: kammam pa-

I. The Text of the Bhikkhu Pātimokkha

*Homage to the Bhagavant, the arahat,
the fully and perfectly awakened one.*

A. [The preliminary duty]

1. The preliminary functions

[Sweeping the place for the uposatha¹ with] a broom and [lighting] a lamp, and [preparing] water [for drinking and for washing] together with seat[s]: these are called the preliminary functions of the uposatha day.²

2. The preliminary duties

[The declaration of] purity [on behalf of absent bhikkhus], [bringing] consent [to the recitation on behalf of bhikkhus who are ill], announcing the time [to recite the Pātimokkha], counting the [participating] bhikkhus, and the exhortation [of the bhikkhunīs], these are called the preliminary duties of the uposatha day.³

3. The appropriate time

[It is the day for the] uposatha; and as many bhikkhus [as are required] have arrived for the formal proceeding;⁴ and there are none [of the

¹According to Vin I 125,16 (BD IV 166) this can be an assembly hall (*upaṭṭhāna-sālā*), a pavilion (*maṇḍapa*), or the foot of a tree (*rukkhamaṭṭha*).

²Sp V 1063,3f.; cf. Sp VII 1333,14f.; 1st ¶. Mp II 155.

³Sp V 1063,6f.; cf. Sp VII 1333,16f.; 1st ¶. Mp II 155.

⁴*kammapattā*. Sp VI 1197.11-14 explains that this means there are the required number of bhikkhus (four, five, ten, or twenty).

vajjanīyā ca puggalā tasmim na honti,
pattakallan ti vuccati.

[Sp V 1063,10-13]

pubbakaraṇapubbakiccāni samāpetvā desitāpattikassa
5 samaggassa bhikkhusaṅghassa anumatiyā pātimokkhaṃ¹
uddisītum ārādhanam karoma.²

B. nidānuddeso³

suṇātu me bhante saṅgho. ajj' uposatho pannaraso.⁴ yadi
saṅghassa pattakallaṃ, saṅgho uposathaṃ kareyya
10 pātimokkhaṃ uddiseyya.

kiṃ saṅghassa pubbakiccaṃ? pārisuddhiṃ āyasmanto
ārocetha. pātimokkhaṃ uddisissāmi.

taṃ sabbe va santā sādhukaṃ suṇoma manasikaroma.
yassa siyā āpatti, so āvikareyya. asantiyā āpattiyā tuṇhī
15 bhavitabbaṃ.

tuṇhībhāvena kho pan' āyasmante parisuddhā ti vedi-
ssāmi.

yathā kho pana paccekapuṭṭhassa veyyākaraṇaṃ hoti,
evam evaṃ⁵ evarūpāya parisāya yāvatatiyaṃ anusāvitam⁶
20 hoti.

yo pana bhikkhu yāvatatiyaṃ anusāviyamāne⁷ saramāno
santiṃ āpattiṃ n' āvikareyya, sampajānamusāvāḍ' assa hoti.
sampajānamusāvādo kho pan' āyasmanto antarāyiko
dhammo vutto Bhagavatā.

25

¹Nā: pāṭi-

²Nā, pp. 55, 57, 59, has a different text

³Nā omits titles throughout.

⁴Nā, S^c: -ṇṇ- (throughout)

⁵Vin E^c: eva

⁶Vin E^c, Nā: -ss-

⁷Vin E^c, Nā: -ss-

bhikkhus who are guilty of] the same offences; and there are no individuals who are to be avoided. This is called the appropriate time.

Having finished the preliminary works and duties, with the permission of the united bhikkhu saṅgha, which has confessed its offences, I shall make an undertaking to recite the Pātimokkha.¹

B. The recitation of the introduction

Reverend sir, let the saṅgha hear me. Today is the uposatha of the fifteenth day. If the proper time has come for the saṅgha, the saṅgha should carry out the uposatha, it should recite the Pātimokkha.

What is the preliminary duty for the saṅgha? Venerable sirs, you should announce [your] purity. I shall recite the Pātimokkha.

Let all of us being [present] listen to it carefully; let us pay attention. For whom there may be an offence, he should reveal it.

There being no offence, silence is to be kept. I shall know by their silence that the venerable ones are pure.

As there is an answer for one questioned individually, so it is proclaimed up to the third time in such an assembly [as this].

But if any bhikkhu, when it is being proclaimed up to the third time, on remembering it should not reveal an offence which exists, it is a conscious lie for him. Venerable sirs, a conscious lie has been pronounced by the Bhagavant to be an obstructing matter.

¹ See above, p. lii, n. 3.

tasmā saramānena bhikkhunā āpannena visuddhā-
pekkhena santī āpatti āvikātabbā. āvikatā hi 'ssa phāsu hoti.

[Vin I 102,33–103,11]

¹uddiṭṭhaṃ kho āyasmanto nidānaṃ.

- 5 tatth' āyasmante pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā?
dutiyaṃ pi pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? tatiyaṃ pi
pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? parisuddh' etth' āyas-
manto, tasmā tuṇhī, evaṃ etaṃ dhārayāmi ti.¹

nidānaṃ niṭṭhitaṃ.²

¹—¹Ñā omits; S^c puts in parentheses and notes that it is in the Chaṭṭha-
saṅgāyana edition

²Ñā, S^c: nidānuddeso niṭṭhito; Phye: nidānuddeso paṭhama.

Therefore any offence which exists is to be revealed by a bhikkhu who, having committed an offence, remembers it and looks for purification. When revealed, it is good for him.

Recited, venerable sirs, is the introduction.

Herein I ask the venerable ones: Are you pure in this? A second time I ask: Are you pure in this? A third time I ask: Are you pure in this? The venerable ones are pure in this, therefore they are silent. Thus I record it.

The introduction is finished.

C. pārājikuddeso¹

tatr' ime cattāro pārājikā dhammā uddesaṃ āgacchanti.

methunadhammasikkhāpadaṃ²

1. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhūnaṃ sikkhāsājīvasamāpanno
5 sikkhaṃ appaccakkhāya³ dubbalyaṃ anāvikatvā methunaṃ
dhammaṃ paṭiseveyya antamaso tiracchānagatāya pi,
pārājiko hoti asaṃvāso. [Vin III 23.33-36]

adinnādānasikkhāpadaṃ

2. yo pana bhikkhu gāmā vā araṇṇā vā adinnaṃ theyya-
10 saṅkhātāṃ ādiyeyya yathārūpe adinnādāne rājāno coraṃ
gahetvā haneyyūṃ vā bandheyūṃ vā pabbājeyyūṃ vā coro
'si, bālo 'si, mūlho⁴ 'si. theno 'sī ti, tathārūpaṃ bhikkhu
adinnaṃ ādiyamāno, ayaṃ pi pārājiko hoti asaṃvāso. [Vin
III 46.16-20]

15 manussaviggahasikkhāpadaṃ

3. yo pana bhikkhu saṅcicca manussaviggahaṃ jīvītā
voropeyya satthahāraṃ vāssa pariyeseyya maraṇavaṇṇaṃ
vā saṃvaṇṇeyya maraṇāya vā samādapeyya ambho purisa
kiṃ tuyh' iminā pāpakena dujjīvitena? matan te jīvītā seyyo
20 ti, iti cittamano cittasaṅkappo anekapariyāyena maraṇa-
vaṇṇaṃ vā saṃvaṇṇeyya maraṇāya vā samādapeyya, ayaṃ
pi pārājiko hoti asaṃvāso. [Vin III 73.10-16]

¹Nā omits

²Nā omits titles of rules throughout

³Vin E^c: āpa-

⁴Nā: mulho

C. The recitation of the [rules entailing] defeat

Herein these four matters entailing defeat come up for recitation.

The rule about sexual intercourse

1. Whatever bhikkhu, [who has] undertaken the training and the way of life of the bhikkhus, having neither renounced the training nor declared his weakness, should engage in sexual intercourse even with a female animal, he becomes defeated, not in communion.

The rule about taking what is not given

2. Whatever bhikkhu should take away from a village or from a forest what is not given in a way which is called theft, in such manner of taking what is not given that kings, having arrested a robber, would beat or would bind or would expel him. [saying]. "You are a robber, you are a fool, you are stupid, you are a thief," the bhikkhu taking anything of such a nature that is not given, he too becomes defeated, not in communion.

The rule about a human being

3. Whatever bhikkhu should intentionally deprive a human being of life, or seek a [life-]taking weapon for him, or should utter praise of death, or should urge him towards death [saying], "Good man, what use to you is this miserable life? Death is better for you than life," having such thoughts in mind and such intentions in mind, in many ways should utter praise of death, or should urge him towards death, he too becomes defeated, not in communion.

uttarimanussadhammasikkhāpadam

4. yo pana bhikkhu anabhijānaṃ uttarimanussadhammaṃ
attūpanāyikaṃ alamariyañānadassanaṃ samudācareyya iti
jānāmi. iti passāmi ti, tato aparena samayena samanuggāhī-
5 yamāno¹ vā asamanuggāhīyamāno² vā āpanno visuddhā-
pekkho evaṃ vadeyya ajānaṃ evaṃ āvuso avacaṃ jānāmi,
apassaṃ passāmi, tucchaṃ musā vilapin ti, aññatra
adhimānā. ayaṃ pi pārājiko hoti asaṃvāso. [Vin III 91,19-25]

- uddiṭṭhā kho āyasmanto cattāro pārājikā dhammā. yesaṃ
10 bhikkhu aññataraṃ vā aññataraṃ vā āpajjitvā na labhati
bhikkhūhi saddhiṃ saṃvāsaṃ, yathā pure tathā pacchā.
pārājiko hoti asaṃvāso.

- tatth' āyasmante pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā?
dutiyaṃ pi pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? tatiyaṃ pi
15 pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? parisuddh' etth' āyas-
manto, tasmā tuṇhī, evaṃ etaṃ dhārayāmi³ ti. [Vin III
109,21-27]

pārājikaṃ niṭṭhitaṃ.⁴

¹Vin E^c. C^c. S^c: -hi-

²Vin E^c. C^c. S^c: -hi-

³Nā: -mi (omits ti)

⁴Nā: pārājikuddeso niṭṭhito; S^c: pārājikā dhammā niṭṭhitā; Phyc:
pārājikuddeso dutiyo.

The rule about a superhuman state

4. Whatever bhikkhu should, while not knowing [for certain], boast a superhuman state, knowledge and insight deserving the name "noble", as being present in himself, [saying], "I know thus, I see thus," then afterwards on another occasion should, whether being examined or not being examined, having committed the offence and looking for purification, say thus, "Friend, not knowing, I said, 'I know': not seeing, I said, 'I see': I spoke falsely, lying." other than from an overestimation [of himself], he too becomes defeated, not in communion.

Recited, venerable sirs, are the four matters entailing defeat. If a bhikkhu has committed one or other of these offences, he is no longer allowed [to live in] communion with bhikkhus; as [he was] before [ordination] so [he is] after [the confession of the offence]; he becomes defeated, not in communion.

Herein I ask the venerable ones: Are you pure in this? A second time I ask: Are you pure in this? A third time I ask: Are you pure in this? The venerable ones are pure in this, therefore they are silent. Thus I record it.

The defeat section is finished.

D. saṅghādisesuddeso

ime kho pan' āyasmanto terasa saṅghādisēsā dhammā
uddesaṃ āgacchanti. [Vin III 110,1f.]

sukkavissatthisikkāpadam

- 5 1. sañcetanikā sukkavissatthi¹ aññatra supinantā saṅghādiseso. [Vin III 112,17f.]

kāyasamsaggasikkhāpadam

2. yo pana bhikkhu otiṇṇo vipariṇatena cittena mātugāmena
saddhiṃ kāyasamsaggaṃ samāpajjeyya hatthaggaṃ² vā
10 veṇiggāhaṃ³ vā aññatarassa vā aññatarassa vā aṅgassa
parāmasanaṃ, saṅghādiseso. [Vin III 120,33-36]

duṭṭhullavācāsikkhāpadam

3. yo pana bhikkhu otiṇṇo vipariṇatena cittena mātugāmaṃ
duṭṭhullāhi vācāhi obhāseyya yathā taṃ yuvā yuvatim
15 methunupasaṃhitāhi,⁴ saṅghādiseso. [Vin III 128,21ff.]

attakāmapāricariyasikkhāpadam

4. yo pana bhikkhu otiṇṇo vipariṇatena cittena mātugāmassa
santike attakāmapāricariyāya vaṇṇaṃ bhāseyya etad aggamaṃ
bhagini pāricariyānaṃ yā mādisaṃ sīlavantaṃ kalyāṇa-
20 dhammaṃ brahmacāriṃ etena dhammena paricareyyā⁵ ti
methunupasaṃhitaṃ,⁶ saṅghādiseso. [Vin III 133,12-16]

¹Vin E^c, Nā: -s-

²Vin E^c, Nā, S^c: -g-

³Vin E^c, Nā, S^c: -g-

⁴Nā: -nū-

⁵Nā: pā-

⁶Nā: -nū-

C. The recitation of the saṅghādisesa [rules]

Now, venerable sirs, these thirteen matters entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha come up for recitation.

The rule about the emission of semen

1. Intentional emission of semen, other than in a dream, entails a formal meeting of the saṅgha.

The rule about bodily contact

2. If any bhikkhu should, beset [by passion], with perverted mind, engage in bodily contact with a woman or in holding of hands or holding of locks of hair or touching this or that limb, this entails a formal meeting of the saṅgha.

The rule about lewd words

3. If any bhikkhu should, beset [by passion], with perverted mind, address a woman with lewd words, as a young man [addresses] a young girl [with words] alluding to sexual intercourse, this entails a formal meeting of the saṅgha.

The rule about one's own sexual pleasure

4. If any bhikkhu should, beset [by passion], with perverted mind, in the presence of a woman, speak in praise of ministering to his own sensual pleasure, [saying], "Sister, this is the highest of ministries, [namely] if any [woman] should minister with this act to one like me, virtuous, of noble nature, a liver of the holy life," [with an utterance] alluding to sexual intercourse, this entails a formal meeting of the saṅgha.

sañcarittasikkhāpadam

5. yo pana bhikkhu sañcarittam samāpajjeyya itthiyā vā purisamatim, purisassa vā itthimatim,¹ jāyattane vā jārattane vā, antamaso taṅkhaṇikāya pi, saṅghādiseso. [Vin III 139,7ff.]

5

kuṭikārasikkhāpadam

6. saññācīkāya pana bhikkhunā kuṭim kārayamānena assāmikam attuddesam pamāṇikā kāretabbā. tatr' idam pamāṇam: dīghaso dvādasā vidatthiyo sugatavidatthiyā, tiriyaṃ satt' antarā. bhikkhū abhinetaḍḍā vatthudesanāya, 10 tehi bhikkhūhi vatthu² desetabbaṃ anārambhaṃ saparikkamanam. sārambhe ce bhikkhu vatthusmiṃ aparikkamane saññācīkāya kuṭim kāreyya bhikkhū vā anabhineyya vatthudesanāya, pamāṇam vā atikkāmeyya, saṅghādiseso. [Vin III 149,10-18]

15

vihārakārasikkhāpadam

7. mahallakam pana bhikkhunā vihāram kārayamānena sassāmikam attuddesam bhikkhū abhinetaḍḍā vatthudesanāya. tehi bhikkhūhi vatthu³ desetabbaṃ anārambhaṃ saparikkamanam. sārambhe ce bhikkhu vatthusmiṃ aparikkamane mahallakam vihāram kāreyya, bhikkhū vā 20 anabhineyya vatthudesanāya, saṅghādiseso. [Vin III 156,15-20]

duṭṭhadosasikkhāpadam

8. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhum duṭṭho doso appatīto amūla- 25 kena pārājikena dhammena anuddhamseyya app eva nāma nam imamahā brahmacariyā cāveyyan ti, tato aparena

¹Nā, S^c: itthī- (but S^c has *itthi*- in the Bhikkhunī-pātimokkha)

²Vin E^c, Nā, S^c: -uṃ

³Vin E^c, Nā, S^c: -uṃ

The rule about acting as a go-between

5. If any bhikkhu should act as a go-between, [conveying] either a man's intentions to a woman or a woman's intentions to a man in respect of being a wife or being a paramour [or] even being a temporary [wife], this entails a formal meeting of the saṅgha.

The rule about making a hut

6. When a bhikkhu by his own begging is having a hut made, without a [lay] owner, [that is] intended for himself, it must be made according to the [prescribed] measurements. Herein these are the measurements: in length, twelve spans of the sugata span; in width, seven [spans] inside. Bhikkhus are to be brought to appoint the site. By those bhikkhus a site not involving harm [to living creatures] is to be appointed with a space around it. If a bhikkhu by his own begging should have a hut made on a site involving harm with no space around it, or if he should not bring bhikkhus to appoint the site, or if he should exceed the [prescribed] measurements, this entails a formal meeting of the saṅgha.

The rule about building a dwelling place

7. When a bhikkhu is having a large dwelling place made, with a [lay] owner [to build and give it], [that is] intended for himself, bhikkhus are to be brought to appoint the site. By those bhikkhus a site not involving harm [to living creatures] is to be appointed with a space around it. If a bhikkhu should have a large dwelling place made on a site involving harm with no space around it, or if he should not bring bhikkhus to appoint the site, this entails a formal meeting of the saṅgha.

The rule about being corrupted and corrupting

8. Whatever bhikkhu should, being corrupted, corrupting, displeased, accuse a bhikkhu of an unfounded matter entailing defeat, [thinking], "Perhaps I may make him fall from this holy life," [and] then on another occasion being

samayena samanuggāhīyamāno¹ vā asamanuggāhīyamāno vā amūlakañ c' eva taṃ adhikaraṇaṃ hoti, bhikkhu ca dosaṃ patitthāti, saṅghādiseso. [Vin III 163.21–26]

aññabhāgiyasikkhāpadaṃ

- 5 9. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhuṃ duttho doso appatīto añña-
bhāgiyassa adhikaraṇassa kiñci desaṃ lesamattaṃ upādāya
pārājikena dhammena anuddhamseyya app eva nāma naṃ
imamhā brahmacariyā cāveyyan ti, tato aparena samayena
samanuggāhīyamāno vā asamanuggāhīyamāno vā añña-
10 bhāgiyañ c' eva taṃ adhikaraṇaṃ hoti, koci deso lesamatto
upādinno. bhikkhu ca dosaṃ patitthāti, saṅghādiseso. [Vin III
167.38–68.6]

saṅghabhedasikkhāpadaṃ

10. yo pana bhikkhu samaggassa saṅghassa bhedāya para-
15 kkameyya, bhedanasaṃvattanikaṃ vā adhikaraṇaṃ samā-
dāya paggayha tiṭṭheyya, so bhikkhu bhikkhūhi evaṃ assa
vacanīyo māyasmā² samaggassa saṅghassa bhedāya
parakkami, bhedanasaṃvattanikaṃ vā adhikaraṇaṃ samā-
dāya paggayha atthāsi, samet' āyasmā saṅghena, samaggo hi
20 saṅgho sammodamāno avivadamāno ekuddeso phāsu viharatī
ti. evañ ca so bhikkhu bhikkhūhi vuccamāno tath' eva
paggaṇheyya, so bhikkhu bhikkhūhi yāvatatiyaṃ samanubhā-
siyamāno taṃ paṭinissaggāya. yāvatatiyañ ce samanubhā-
siyamāno taṃ paṭinissajjeyya, icc etaṃ kusalaṃ. nō ce
25 paṭinissajjeyya, saṅghādiseso. [Vin III 172.31–73.4]

¹ Vin E^c. Nā. S^c throughout: -hi-

² Nā. S^c: mā āyas-

questioned or not being questioned, that legal process turns out to be unfounded. and the bhikkhu admits to corruption, this entails a formal meeting of the saṅgha.

The rule about belonging to another class

9. Whatever bhikkhu should, being corrupted, corrupting, displeased, accuse a bhikkhu of a matter entailing defeat, taking merely as a pretext some point of a legal process connected with another class, [thinking], "Perhaps I may make him fall from this holy life," [and] then on another occasion being questioned or not being questioned, that legal process turns out to be connected with another class, [and] some point has been taken merely as a pretext, and the bhikkhu admits to corruption, this entails a formal meeting of the saṅgha.

The rule about schism in the saṅgha

10. Should any bhikkhu attempt to cause schism in a united saṅgha or should he persist having undertaken and having taken up a legal process conducive to schism, that bhikkhu is to be spoken to by the bhikkhus thus, "Do not, venerable sir, attempt to cause schism in a united saṅgha; do not persist having undertaken and having taken up a legal process conducive to schism. Let the venerable one be at peace with the saṅgha: for the saṅgha, united, in agreement, not disputing, having a united recitation [of the Pātimokkha, etc.], lives comfortably." And should that bhikkhu, being spoken to thus by the bhikkhus, persist in the same way [as before], that bhikkhu is to be admonished by the bhikkhus up to the third time to give up that [course of action]. If, being admonished up to the third time, he should give it up, that is good. If he should not give it up, this entails a formal meeting of the saṅgha.

bhedānuvattakasikkhāpadaṃ

11. tass' eva kho pana bhikkhussa bhikkhū honti anuvattakā
vaggavādakā eko vā dve vā tayo vā, te evaṃ vadeyyuṃ
māyasmanto¹ etaṃ bhikkhuṃ kiñci avacuttha, dhammavādī
5 c' eso bhikkhu, vinayavādī c' eso bhikkhu, amhākañ c' eso
bhikkhu chandañ ca ruciñ ca ādāya voharati, jānāti, no
bhāsati, amhākaṃ p' etaṃ khamaṭī ti. te bhikkhū bhikkhūhi
evaṃ assu vacanīyā māyasmanto evaṃ avacuttā, na c' eso
bhikkhu dhammavādī, na c' eso bhikkhu vinayavādī, māyas-
10 mantānaṃ pi saṅghabhedo ruccittha,² samet' āyasmantānaṃ
saṅghena. samaggo hi saṅgho sammodamāno avivadamāno
ekuddeso phāsu viharatī ti. evañ ca te bhikkhū bhikkhūhi
vuccamānā tath' eva paggaṇheyyuṃ, te bhikkhū bhikkhūhi
yāvatatiyaṃ samanubhāsitaṃ tassa paṭinissaggāya. yāva-
15 tatiyañ ce samanubhāsiyamānā taṃ paṭinissajjeyyuṃ, icc
etaṃ kusalaṃ. no ce paṭinissajjeyyuṃ, saṅghādiseso. [Vin
III 175.14-28]

dubbacasikkhāpadaṃ

12. bhikkhu pan' eva dubbacajātiko hoti, uddesapariyā-
20 pannesu sikkhāpadesu bhikkhūhi sahadhammikaṃ vucca-
māno attānaṃ avacanīyaṃ karoti mā maṃ āyasmanto kiñci
avacuttha kalyāṇaṃ vā pāpakaṃ vā, aham p' āyasmante na
kiñci vakkhāmi kalyāṇaṃ vā pāpakaṃ vā, vīramath'
āyasmanto mama vacanāyā ti. so bhikkhu bhikkhūhi evaṃ
25 assa vacanīyo māyasmā attānaṃ avacanīyaṃ akāsi,
vacanīyaṃ ev³ āyasmā attānaṃ karotu, āyasmā pi bhikkhū
vadetu saha dhammena, bhikkhū pi āyasmantaṃ vakkhanti
saha dhammena, evaṃ saṃvaddhā hi tassa Bhagavato paṇisa

¹Ñā, S^c throughout: mā āyas-

²Ñā: ruci-

³Vin E^c, Ñā, S^c: eva

The rule about siding with schism

11. [It may be that] there are bhikkhus who are followers of that same bhikkhu, who take his part, one or two or three. They may say thus, "Do not, venerable sirs, say anything to that bhikkhu; that bhikkhu is a speaker of Dhamma, and that bhikkhu is a speaker of Vinaya, and that bhikkhu speaks in accordance with our desire and choice; he knows us and speaks [with us], and that suits us." Those bhikkhus are to be spoken to by the bhikkhus thus, "Do not, venerable sirs, speak thus; for that bhikkhu is neither a speaker of Dhamma nor a speaker of Vinaya. May schism in the saṅgha not seem good to the venerable ones too. Let the venerable ones be at peace with the saṅgha; for the saṅgha, united, in agreement, not disputing, having a united recitation [of the Pātimokkha, etc.], lives comfortably." And should those bhikkhus, being spoken to thus by the bhikkhus, persist in the same way [as before], those bhikkhus are to be admonished by the bhikkhus up to the third time to give up that [course of action]. If, being admonished up to the third time, they should give it up, that is good. If they should not give it up, this entails a formal meeting of the saṅgha.

The rule about being difficult to speak to

12. [It may be that] a bhikkhu is naturally difficult to speak to, and when spoken to in accordance with the law by bhikkhus in respect of the rules of training included in the recitation, he makes himself unadmonishable, [saying], "Do not, venerable sirs, say anything at all to me, either good or bad; and I too shall not say anything at all to the venerable ones, either good or bad. Refrain, venerable sirs, from speaking to me." That bhikkhu is to be spoken to by the bhikkhus thus, "Venerable sir, do not make yourself unadmonishable, rather let the venerable one make himself admonishable. Let the venerable one speak in accordance with the law to the bhikkhus, and the bhikkhus will speak in

- yad idaṃ aññamaññavacanena aññamaññavutthāpanenā ti.
 evaṃ ca so bhikkhu bhikkhūhi vuccamāno tath' eva paggaṇ-
 heyya, so bhikkhu bhikkhūhi yāvatatiyaṃ samanubhāsitaḥ
 tassa paṭinissaggāya. yāvatatiyaṃ ce samanubhāsiyamāno
 5 taṃ paṭinissajjeyya, icc etaṃ kusalaṃ. no ce paṭinissajjeyya,
 saṅghādiseso. [Vin III 178,3-18]

kuladūsakasikkhāpadaṃ

13. bhikkhu paṇ' eva aññataraṃ gāmaṃ vā nigamaṃ vā
 upanissāya viharati kuladūsako pāpasamācāro, tassa kho
 10 pāpakā samācārā dissanti c' eva suyyanti ca, kulāni ca tena
 duṭṭhāni dissanti c' eva suyyanti ca. so bhikkhu bhikkhūhi
 evaṃ assa vacanīyo āyasmā¹ kho kuladūsako pāpasamācāro.
 āyasmato kho pāpakā samācārā dissanti c' eva suyyanti ca,
 kulāni c' āyasmatā duṭṭhāni dissanti c' eva suyyanti ca.
 15 pakkamat' āyasmā imamahā āvāsā, alan te idhavāsenā ti.
 evaṃ ca so bhikkhu bhikkhūhi vuccamāno te bhikkhū evaṃ
 vadeyya chandagāmino ca bhikkhū, dosagāmino ca bhikkhū,
 mohagāmino ca bhikkhū, bhayagāmino ca bhikkhū,
 tādīsikāya āpattiyaṃ ekaccaṃ pabbājenti, ekaccaṃ na pabbā-
 20 jentī ti. so bhikkhu bhikkhūhi evaṃ assa vacanīyo māyasmā²
 evaṃ avaca, na ca bhikkhū chandagāmino, na ca bhikkhū
 dosagāmino, na ca bhikkhū mohagāmino, na ca bhikkhū
 bhayagāmino, āyasmā kho kuladūsako pāpasamācāro,
 āyasmato kho pāpakā samācārā dissanti c' eva suyyanti ca,
 25 kulāni c' āyasmatā duṭṭhāni dissanti c' eva suyyanti ca.
 pakkamat' āyasmā imamahā āvāsā, alan te idhavāsenā ti.
 evaṃ ca so bhikkhu bhikkhūhi vuccamāno tath' eva paggaṇ-
 heyya, so bhikkhu bhikkhūhi yāvatatiyaṃ samanubhāsitaḥ
 tassa paṭinissaggāya. yāvatatiyaṃ ce samanubhāsiyamāno
 30 taṃ paṭinissajjeyya, icc etaṃ kusalaṃ. no ce paṭinissajjeyya,
 saṅghādiseso. [Vin III 184,9-32]

¹Nā: ayas- [sic]

²Nā. S^c: mā āyas-

accordance with the law to the venerable one; for the Bhagavant's assembly has come to growth thus, that is to say by speaking to one another [and] by urging one another to abstain [from wrong doing]." And should that bhikkhu, being spoken to thus by the bhikkhus, persist in the same way [as before], that bhikkhu is to be admonished by the bhikkhus up to the third time to give up that [course of action]. If, being admonished up to the third time, he should give it up, that is good. If he should not give it up, this entails a formal meeting of the saṅgha.

The rule about a corrupter of families

13. [It may be that] a bhikkhu [who is] a corrupter of families [and] of bad behaviour lives in dependence on some village or town, his bad behaviour is seen and heard about, and families corrupted by him are seen and heard about. That bhikkhu is to be spoken to by the bhikkhus thus, "The venerable one is a corrupter of families [and] of bad behaviour. The venerable one's bad behaviour is seen and heard about, and families corrupted by the venerable one are seen and heard about. Let the venerable one depart from this abode. You have lived here long enough." And should that bhikkhu, being spoken to thus by the bhikkhus, say to those bhikkhus, "The bhikkhus are going [wrong] from desire and the bhikkhus are going [wrong] from hatred and the bhikkhus are going [wrong] from stupidity and the bhikkhus are going [wrong] from fear. Because of the same offence they banish one and do not banish another," that bhikkhu is to be spoken to by the bhikkhus thus, "Do not, venerable sir, speak thus. The bhikkhus are not going [wrong] from desire nor going [wrong] from hatred nor going [wrong] from stupidity nor going [wrong] from fear. The venerable one is a corrupter of families [and] of bad behaviour. The venerable one's bad behaviour is seen and heard about, and families corrupted by the venerable one are seen and heard about. Let the venerable

- uddiṭṭhā kho āyasmanto tērasa saṅghādisesā dhammā,
 nava paṭhamāpattikā, cattāro yāvatatīyakā. yesaṃ bhikkhu
 aññataraṃ vā aññataraṃ vā āpajjitvā yāvatīhaṃ¹ jānaṃ
 paṭicchādeti, tāvatīhaṃ² tena bhikkhunā akāmā parivattha-
 5 bbaṃ. parivutthaparivāseṇa bhikkhunā uttari³ chārattaṃ
 bhikkhumānattāya paṭipajjitabbāṃ, ciṇṇamānatto bhikkhu
 yattha siyā vīsati gaṇo bhikkhusaṅgho, tattha so bhikkhu
 abbhetaḥ. ekeṇa pi ce ūno vīsati gaṇo bhikkhusaṅgho taṃ
 bhikkhuṃ abbhēyya, so ca bhikkhu anabbhito, te ca bhikkhū
 10 gārayhā. ayaṃ tattha sāmīci.
 tatth' āyasmante pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā?
 dutiyam pi pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? tatiyam pi
 pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? parisuddh' etth' āyas-
 manto, tasmā tuṇhī, evaṃ etaṃ dhārayāmi⁴ ti. [Vin III
 15 186,11-23]

saṅghādiseso nīṭṭhito.⁵

¹Vin E^c, Nā, S^c: -ti-

²Vin E^c, S^c: -ti-

³Vin E^c, Nā, S^c: -riṃ

⁴Nā: -mi (omits ti)

⁵S^c: saṅghādisesā dhammā nīṭṭhitā: Phyc: saṅghādisesuddeso tatiyo.

one depart from this abode. You have lived here long enough." And should that bhikkhu being spoken to thus by the bhikkhus, persist in the same way [as before], that bhikkhu is to be admonished by the bhikkhus up to the third time to give up that [course of action]. If, being admonished up to the third time, he should give it up, that is good; if he should not give it up, this entails a formal meeting of the saṅgha.

Recited, venerable sirs, are the thirteen matters entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha. nine being offences at once and four after the third [admonition]. If a bhikkhu has committed one or other of these offences, he is to live on probation against his will for as many days as he knowingly concealed [the offence]. When the bhikkhu has finished the probation, the six-night penance for bhikkhus is to be undertaken in addition. When the bhikkhu has completed the penance, he is to be reinstated where there may be a bhikkhu saṅgha comprising a group of twenty. If a bhikkhu saṅgha comprising a group of even one less than twenty should reinstate that bhikkhu, that bhikkhu is not reinstated and those bhikkhus are censurable. This is the proper course here.

Herein I ask the venerable ones: Are you pure in this? A second time I ask: Are you pure in this? A third time I ask: Are you pure in this? The venerable ones are pure in this; therefore they are silent. Thus I record it.

The saṅghādisesa section is finished.

E. aniyatuddeso

ime kho pan' āyasmanto dve aniyatā dhammā uddesaṃ āgacchanti. [Vin III 187.1f.]

paṭhama-aniyatasikkhāpadaṃ

- 5 1. yo pana bhikkhu mātugāmena saddhiṃ eko ekāya raho paṭicchanne āsane alaṅkammaniye¹ nisajjaṃ kappeyya, tam enaṃ saddheyyavacasā² upāsikā disvā tiṇṇaṃ dhammānaṃ aññatarena vadeyya pārājikena vā saṅghādisesena vā pācittiyena vā. nisajjaṃ bhikkhu paṭijānamāno tiṇṇaṃ
10 dhammānaṃ aññatarena kāretabbo pārājikena vā saṅghādisesena vā pācittiyena vā. yena vā sā saddheyyavacasā upāsikā vadeyya, tena so bhikkhu kāretabbo. ayam dhammo aniyato. [Vin III 188.17-24]

dutiya-aniyatasikkhāpadaṃ

- 15 2. na h' eva kho pana paṭicchannaṃ āsanaṃ hoti nālaṅkammaniyaṃ,³ alaṅ ca kho hoti mātugāmaṃ dutṭhullāhi vācāhi obhāsituṃ. yo pana bhikkhu tathārūpe āsane mātugāmena saddhiṃ eko ekāya raho nisajjaṃ kappeyya, tam enaṃ saddheyyavacasā upāsikā disvā dvinnaṃ dhammānaṃ
20 aññatarena vadeyya saṅghādisesena vā pācittiyena vā. nisajjaṃ bhikkhu paṭijānamāno dvinnaṃ dhammānaṃ aññatarena kāretabbo saṅghādisesena vā pācittiyena⁴ vā. yena vā sā saddheyyavacasā upāsikā vadeyya, tena so bhikkhu kāretabbo. ayam pi dhammo aniyato. [Vin III
25 191.27-92.2]

¹ Vin E^c: -ṇi-

² Nā: -y- [sic]

³ Vin E^c: -ṇi-

⁴ Nā: pa- [sic]

E. The recitation of the indefinite [rules]

Now, venerable sirs, these two indefinite matters come up for recitation.

The first indefinite rule

1. Whatever bhikkhu should take a seat with a woman, one man with one woman privately, on a screened seat convenient enough [for sexual intercourse], [then] a female lay follower whose word can be trusted, having seen him, should speak in accordance with one or other of three matters, [namely] defeat or entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha or expiation. The bhikkhu, acknowledging that he was sitting [there], is to be dealt with in accordance with one or other of three matters, [namely] defeat or entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha or expiation. Or [if he does not acknowledge it] that bhikkhu is to be dealt with in accordance with whatever that female lay follower whose word can be trusted should say. This matter is indefinite.

The second indefinite rule

2. [It may be that] the seat is not screened [or] convenient enough [for sexual intercourse], but it is convenient for addressing a woman with lewd words. Whatever bhikkhu should take a seat with a woman, one man with one woman privately, on such a seat, [then] a female lay follower whose word can be trusted, having seen him, should speak in accordance with one of two matters, [namely] entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha or expiation. The bhikkhu, acknowledging that he was sitting [there], is to be dealt with in accordance with one of two matters, [namely] entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha or expiation. Or [if he does not acknowledge it] that bhikkhu is to be dealt with in accordance with whatever that female lay follower

uddiṭṭhā kho āyasmanto dve aniyatā dhammā.

tatth' āyasmante pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā?
 dutiyam pi pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? tatiyam pi
 pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? parisuddh' etth' āyas-
 5 manto, tasmā tuṇhī, evam etaṃ dhārayāmī ti.¹ [Vin I/I 194,1-
 5]

aniyato niṭṭhito.²

¹Ñā: -mi (omits ti)

²Ñā: aniyatuddeso n.; S^c: aniyatā dhammā niṭṭhitā; Phye: aniyatuddeso catuttho.

whose word can be trusted should say. This matter also is indefinite.

Recited, venerable sirs, are the two indefinite matters.

Herein I ask the venerable ones: Are you pure in this? A second time I ask: Are you pure in this? A third time I ask: Are you pure in this? The venerable ones are pure in this; therefore they are silent. Thus I record it.

The section on indefinite [rules] is finished.

F. nissaggiyapācittiyā

ime kho pan' āyasmanto tiṃsa nissaggiyā pācittiyā dhammā uddesaṃ āgacchanti. [Vin III 195.1f.]

a. [kaṭṭhinavaggo]¹

5

kaṭṭhinasikkhāpadaṃ

1. niṭṭhitacīvarasmim bhikkhunā ubbhatasmim kaṭṭhine dasā-haparamaṃ atirekacīvaraṃ dhāretabbam. taṃ atikkāmayato nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. [Vin III 196.9ff.]

udositasikkhāpadaṃ

- 10 2. niṭṭhitacīvarasmim bhikkhunā ubbhatasmim kaṭṭhine eka-rattaṃ pi ce bhikkhu ticīvarena vippavaseyya, aññatra bhikkhusammutiyā,² nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. [Vin III 199.24ff.]

akālacīvarasikkhāpadaṃ

- 15 3. niṭṭhitacīvarasmim bhikkhunā ubbhatasmim kaṭṭhine bhikkhuno pan' eva akālacīvaraṃ uppajjeyya, ākaṅkha-mānena bhikkhunā paṭiggahetabbam, paṭiggahetvā khippam eva kāretabbam. no c' assa pāripūrī, māsaparamaṃ tena bhikkhunā taṃ cīvaraṃ nikkhipitabbam ūnassa pāripūriyā
20 satiā paccāsāya. tato ce uttari³ nikkhipeyya satiā pi paccā-sāya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. [Vin III 203.32-38]

purāṇacīvarasikkhāpadaṃ

4. yo pana bhikkhu aññātikāya bhikkhuniyā purāṇacīvaraṃ dhovāpeyya vā rajāpeyya vā ākoṭāpeyya vā, nissaggiyaṃ
25 pācittiyaṃ. [Vin III 206.20ff.]

¹S^c: cīvaravagga; other sources omit. B^c has "kaṭṭhinavaggo" at the end.

²Ñā, S^c: -mma-

³Vin E^c, Ñā, S^c: -im

F. The expiation with forfeiture section

Now, venerable sirs, these thirty matters entailing expiation with forfeiture come up for recitation.

a. [The kaṭhina section]

The rule about the kaṭhina frame

1. The robe material having been used up, the kaṭhina frame having been removed by a bhikkhu, an extra robe is to be worn for ten days at the most. For one exceeding that, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The “storehouse” rule

2. The robe material having been used up, the kaṭhina frame having been removed by a bhikkhu, if any bhikkhu should live apart from the three robes, even for one night, other than with the agreement of the bhikkhus, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about out-of-season robe material

3. The robe material having been used up, the kaṭhina frame having been removed by a bhikkhu, should out-of-season robe material accrue to a bhikkhu, it is to be accepted by the bhikkhu if he wishes. Having accepted it, it is to be made up quickly. But should it not be sufficient for him, that robe material is to be deposited by that bhikkhu for a month at most, there being expectation that the deficiency may be supplied. If he should deposit it for longer than that, even with there being expectation, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about an old robe

4. If any bhikkhu should have an old robe washed or dyed or washed by beating by a bhikkhunī not related [to him], there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

cīvarapaṭiggahaṇasikkhāpadam

5. yo pana bhikkhu aññātikāya bhikkhuniyā hatthato cīvaram paṭiggahēyya aññatra pārivattakā,¹ nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. [Vin III 209,33ff.]

5

aññātakaviññattisikkhāpadam

6. yo pana bhikkhu aññātakam gahapatiṃ vā gahapatāniṃ vā cīvaram viññāpeyya aññatra samayā, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. tatthāyaṃ samayo: acchinnacīvaro vā hoti bhikkhu, natthacīvaro vā. ayaṃ tattha samayo. [Vin III 212,28-31]

10

tatuttarisikkhāpadam²

7. tañ ce aññātakō gahapati vā gahapatānī vā bahūhi cīvarehi abhihaṭṭhuṃ pavāreyya, santaruttaraparamāṇ tena bhikkhunā tato cīvaram sādītābham. tato ce uttari³ sādiyeyya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. [Vin III 214,19-22]

15

paṭhama-upakkhaṭasikkhāpadam

8. bhikkhuṃ pan' eva uddissa aññātakassa gahapatissa vā gahapatāniyā vā cīvaracetāpanam⁴ upakkhaṭam hoti iminā cīvaracetāpanena cīvaram cetāpetvā itthannāmaṃ bhikkhuṃ cīvarena acchādessāmī ti. tatra ce so bhikkhu pubbe appa-
20 vārito upasaṅkamitvā cīvare vikappam āpajjeyya sādhu vata maṃ āyasmā iminā cīvaracetāpanena evarūpaṃ vā evarūpaṃ vā cīvaram cetāpetvā acchādehī ti, kalyāṇakamyataṃ upādāya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. [Vin III 216,11-18]

¹Ñā, S^c: -tt-

²S^c: -riṃ-

³Vin E^c, Ñā: -riṃ

⁴Vin E^c, Ñā, S^c so: B^c throughout: -nn-

The rule about accepting a robe

5. If any bhikkhu should accept a robe from the hand of a bhikkhunī not related [to him], other than in exchange, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about asking someone not related

6. If any bhikkhu should ask for robe material from a householder or householder's wife, not related [to him], other than on the proper occasion, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture. Herein this is the proper occasion: the bhikkhu has had a robe stolen or has lost a robe. This is the proper occasion here.

The rule about more than that

7. If a householder or householder's wife, not related [to the bhikkhu], should bring and invite him with many pieces of robe material, [only] robe material for at most an under robe and an upper robe is to be accepted therefrom by that bhikkhu. If he should accept more than that, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The first rule about laid by

8. [It may be that] by a householder or householder's wife, not related [to the bhikkhu], a robe fund has been laid by specifically for a bhikkhu, [thinking], "Having purchased a robe with this robe fund, I will dress the bhikkhu named so-and-so with a robe." If that bhikkhu should, having gone there without being previously invited, suggest an alternative in respect of the robe, [saying], "[It would be] truly venerable one, having purchased this or that kind of robe with this robe fund, dress me [with that]," because of desire for a fine [robe], there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

dutiya-upakkhaṭasikkhāpadam

9. bhikkhum pan' eva uddissa ubhinnaṃ aññātakānaṃ gahapatīnaṃ vā gahapatānīnaṃ vā paccekacīvaracetāpanā¹ upakkhaṭāni² honti imehi mayaṃ paccekacīvaracetāpanehi³
- 5 paccekacīvarāni cetāpetvā itthannāmaṃ bhikkhum cīvarehi acchādessāmā ti. tatra ce so bhikkhu pubbe appavārito upasaṅkamitvā cīvare vikappaṃ āpajjeyya sādhu vata maṃ āyasmanto imehi paccekacīvaracetāpanehi evarūpaṃ vā evarūpaṃ vā cīvaraṃ cetāpetvā acchādettha ubho va santā
- 10 ekenā ti, kalyāṇakamyataṃ upādāya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. [Vin III 218.30-38]

rājasikkhāpadam

10. bhikkhum pan' eva uddissa rājā vā rājabhoggo vā brāhmaṇo vā gahapatiko vā dūtena cīvaracetāpanaṃ
- 15 paṇiṇeyya iminā cīvaracetāpanena⁴ cīvaraṃ cetāpetvā itthannāmaṃ bhikkhum cīvarena acchādehi ti. so ce dūto taṃ bhikkhum upasaṅkamitvā evaṃ vadeyya idaṃ kho bhante āyasmantaṃ uddissa cīvaracetāpanaṃ ābhaṭaṃ, paṭiggaṇhātu āyasmā cīvaracetāpanan ti, tena bhikkhunā so
- 20 dūto evaṃ assa vacanīyo na kho mayaṃ āvuso cīvaracetāpanaṃ paṭiggaṇhāma, cīvaraṃ ca kho mayaṃ paṭiggaṇhāma kālena kappiyaṃ ti. so ce dūto taṃ bhikkhum evaṃ vadeyya atthi pan' āyasmato koci veyyāvaccakaro ti. cīvaratthikena bhikkhave bhikkhunā veyyāvaccakaro

¹Vin E^c, Nā, S^c so: B^c: -pannāni

²Vin E^c, Nā, S^c: -ṭā

³Vin E^c so, Nā, S^c: B^c throughout: -pannehi

⁴Vin E^c so, Nā, S^c: B^c throughout: -pannena

The second rule about laid by

9. [It may be that] by two householders or householders' wives, not related [to the bhikkhu], individual robe funds have been laid by specifically for a bhikkhu [thinking], "Having purchased individual robes with these individual robe funds, we will dress the bhikkhu named so-and-so with robes." If that bhikkhu should, having gone there without being previously invited, suggest an alternative in respect of the robe. [saying], "[It would be] truly good. Venerable ones, having purchased this or that kind of robe with these individual robe funds, dress me, [the] two [of you] being [together], with one [robe]," because of desire for a fine [robe], there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about kings

10. A king or a king's officer or a brahman or a householder may send specifically for a bhikkhu a robe fund by a messenger, [saying], "Having purchased a robe with this robe fund, dress the bhikkhu named so-and-so with a robe." If that messenger, having approached that bhikkhu, should speak thus, "Reverend sir, this robe fund has been brought specifically for the venerable one; let the venerable one accept the robe fund," then that messenger is to be spoken to thus by that bhikkhu, "Friend, we do not accept the robe fund, but we accept a robe at the [proper] time, [if it is] allowable." If that messenger should say to that bhikkhu thus, "Has the venerable one a steward?," bhikkhus, a monastery attendant or a lay follower is to be indicated as a steward by the bhikkhu if he needs a robe, [saying], "Friend, this one is the bhikkhus' steward." If that messenger, having instructed the steward, having approached that bhikkhu should say thus, "Reverend sir, the steward whom the venerable one indicated has been instructed by me; let the venerable one approach him at the right time; he will dress you with a robe," then, bhikkhus, the steward may be prompted and reminded two or three times by the bhikkhu,

- niddisitaṭṭha ārāmiko vā upāsako vā eso kho āvuso bhikkhūnaṃ veyyāvaccakaro ti. so ce dūto taṃ veyyāvaccakaraṃ saññāpetvā taṃ bhikkhuṃ upasaṅkami tvā evaṃ vadeyya yaṃ kho bhante āyasmā veyyāvaccakaraṃ niddisi,
- 5 saññatto so mayā, upasaṅkamat' ¹ āyasnā kālena, cīvarena taṃ acchādessatī ti. cīvaratthikena bhikkhave bhikkhūnā veyyāvaccakaro upasaṅkamitvā dvittikkhattuṃ codetaṭṭha sāretaṭṭha attho me āvuso cīvarena ti. dvittikkhattuṃ codaya-
- 10 māno ² sārāyamaṇo ³ taṃ cīvaraṃ abhinipphādeyya. icc etaṃ kusalaṃ. no ce abhinipphādeyya, catukkhattuṃ pañcakkhattuṃ chakkhattuparamaṃ tuṇhībhūtena ⁴ uddissa tṭhātabbaṃ. catukkhattuṃ pañcakkhattuṃ chakkhattuparamaṃ tuṇhībhūto ⁵ uddissa tṭṭhamāno taṃ cīvaraṃ abhinipphādeyya, icc etaṃ-kusalaṃ. ⁶ tato ce uttari ⁷ vāyamaṇo taṃ
- 15 cīvaraṃ abhinipphādeyya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. no ce abhinipphādeyya, yat' assa cīvaracetāpanaṃ ⁸ ābhaṭaṃ. tattha sāmaṃ vā gantabbaṃ, dūto vā pāhetabbo yaṃ kho tumhe āyasmanto bhikkhuṃ uddissa cīvaracetāpanaṃ ⁹ paṇiṭṭha, na tan tassa bhikkhuno kiñci atthaṃ anubhoti, yuñjant'
- 20 āyasmanto sakaṃ, mā vo sakaṃ vinassā ¹⁰ ti. ayaṃ tattha sāmīci. [Vin III 221,15-22,8]

kāthinaṃ vaggō paṭhamo ¹¹

¹ Vin E^c, Nā, S^c: -matu

² Vin E^c: codi-

³ Vin E^c: sārī-

⁴ Vin E^c: -hi-

⁵ Vin E^c: -hi-

⁶ Nā, S^c add: no ce abhinipphādeyya

⁷ Vin E^c, Nā, S^c: -riṃ

⁸ Vin E^c, Nā, S^c so; B^c: -pannaṃ

⁹ Vin E^c, Nā, S^c so; B^c: -pannaṃ

¹⁰ Nā, S^c: -ssī

¹¹ Phye: cīvaravaggo paṭhamo.

having approached him, if he needs a robe, [saying], “Friend, I have need of a robe.” If prompting and reminding two or three times he should succeed in obtaining that robe, that is good. If he should not succeed in obtaining it, he is to stand in silence for that purpose four times, five times, or six times at most. If on standing for that purpose four times, five times or six times at most he should succeed in obtaining that robe, that is good. [If he should not succeed in obtaining it in that way, but] if on making further efforts, he should succeed in obtaining that robe, then there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture. If he should not succeed in obtaining it, he is to go himself or send a messenger to the place from which the robe fund was brought to him [to say]. “That robe fund that you, venerable sirs, sent specifically for a bhikkhu has provided no benefit at all for that bhikkhu. Let the venerable ones obtain what is theirs. May what is yours not be lost.” This is the proper course here.

The robe section; the first

b. kosiyaavaggo¹

kosiyaikkhāpadam

11. yo pana bhikkhu kosiyaṃissakam santhatam kārāpeyya, nissaggiyam pācittiyam. [Vin III 224,24f.]

5

suddhakālakasikkhāpadam

12. yo pana bhikkhu suddhakālakānam elakalomānam santhatam kārāpeyya, nissaggiyam pācittiyam. [Vin III 225,29f.]

dvebhāgasikkhāpadam

13. navam² pana bhikkhunā santhatam kārayamānena dve
10 bhāgā suddhakālakānam elakalomānam ādātabbā, tatiyam odātānam, catuttham gocariyānam. anādā ce bhikkhu dve bhāge suddhakālakānam elakalomānam, tatiyam odātānam, catuttham gocariyānam, navam santhatam kārāpeyya, nissaggiyam pācittiyam. [Vin III 226,23-28]

15

chabbassasikkhāpadam

14. navam³ pana bhikkhunā santhatam kārāpetvā chabbassāni dhāretabbam. orena ce channam vassānam tam santhatam vissajjetvā vā avissajjetvā vā aññam navam santhatam kārāpeyya aññatra bhikkhusammutiyā,⁴ nissaggiyam
20 pācittiyam. [Vin III 229,7-12]

nisīdanasanthatasikkhāpadam

15. nisīdanasanthatam pana bhikkhunā kārayamānena purāṇasanthatassa sāmantaṃ sugatavidatthi ādātabbā dubbhaṇṇakaraṇāya. anādā⁵ ce bhikkhu purāṇasanthatassa

¹S^c so; other sources omit

²S^c v.l.: nava

³S^c v.l.: nava

⁴Ñā, S^c: -mma-

⁵Ñā: ānāda [sic]

b. The section about silk

The rule about silk

11. If any bhikkhu should have a rug made mixed with silk, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about pure black [sheep's wool]

12. If any bhikkhu should have a rug made of pure black sheep's wool, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about two portions

13. When a bhikkhu is having a new rug made, two parts of pure black sheep's wool are to be taken, the third of white, the fourth of ruddy brown. If a bhikkhu should have a new rug made without taking two parts of pure black sheep's wool, the third of white, the fourth of ruddy brown, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about six years

14. When a bhikkhu has had a new rug made, it is to be carried for six years. If the bhikkhu should have another new rug made within six years, whether having got rid of that rug or not, other than with the permission of the bhikkhus, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about a sitting rug

15. When a bhikkhu is having a sitting rug made, [a piece] of an old rug a sugata span all round is to be taken in order to make it unsightly. If a bhikkhu should have a new sitting rug

sāmantā sugatavidatthim navaṃ nisīdanasanthatam kārāpeyya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyam. [Vin 232,12-16]

elakalomasikkhāpadam

16. bhikkhuno pan' eva addhānamaggappaṭipannassa¹ elaka-
5 lomāni uppajjeyyūṃ. ākaṅkhamānena bhikkhunā paṭigga-
hetabbāni, paṭiggahetvā tiyojanaparamam sahatthā hāreta-
bbāni² asante hārake. tato ce uttari³ hareyya, asante pi
hārake, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyam. [Vin III 233,30-34]

elakalomadhovāpanasikkhāpadam

- 10 17. yo pana bhikkhu aññātikāya bhikkhuniyā elakalomāni
dhovāpeyya vā rajāpeyya vā vijaṭṭheyya vā, nissaggiyaṃ
pācittiyam. [Vin III 235,27ff.]

rūpiyasikkhāpadam

18. yo pana bhikkhu jātārūparajataṃ uggaṇheyya vā uggaṇ-
15 hāpeyya vā upanikkhittaṃ vā sādīyeyya, nissaggiyaṃ
pācittiyam. [Vin III 237,36ff.]

rūpiyasamvohārasikkhāpadam

19. yo pana bhikkhu nānappakāraṃ rūpiyasamvohāraṃ
samāpajjeyya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyam. [Vin III 239,28f.]

20 kayavikkayasikkhāpadam

20. yo pana bhikkhu nānappakāraṃ kayavikkayaṃ samā-
pajjeyya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyam. [Vin III 241,27f.]

kosiyavaggo dutiyo⁴

¹Vin E^c: -ggapa-

²Vin E^c, Nā so; B^c, S^c: harita-

³Vin E^c, Nā, S^c: -rim

⁴Phye: elakalomavaggo dutiyo.

made without taking a [piece] of an old rug a sugata span all round, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about sheep's wool

16. Should sheep's wool accrue to a bhikkhu when he has set
5 out on a journey, it is to be accepted by the bhikkhu if he wishes. Having accepted it, it is to be carried [by him] with his own hand for three yojanas at most, there being no one to carry [it]. If he should carry it further than that, even though there is no one to carry [it], there is an offence entailing
10 expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about having sheep's wool washed

17. If any bhikkhu should have sheep's wool washed or dyed or carded by a bhikkhunī not related [to him], there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

5 **The rule about money**

18. If any bhikkhu should either receive gold or silver or have it received, or accept it when deposited [for him], there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about money transactions

- 20 19. If any bhikkhu should engage in various kinds of money transactions, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about buying and selling

- 20 20. If any bhikkhu should engage in various kinds of buying
15 and selling, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The section about silk; the second

c. pattavaggo¹

pattasikkhāpadaṃ

21. dasāhaparamaṃ atirekapatto dhāretabbo. taṃ atikkāmayato nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. [Vin III 243.5f.]

5 ūnapaṇcabandhanasikkhāpadaṃ

22. yo pana bhikkhu ūnapaṇcabandhanena pattena aññaṃ
navam pattaṃ cetāpeyya. nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. tena
bhikkhunā so patto bhikkhuparisāya nissajjitabbo, yo ca tassā
bhikkhuparisāya pattapariyanto, so² tassa bhikkhuno padā-
10 tabbo ayan te bhikkhu patto yāva bhedanāya dhāretabbo ti.
ayaṃ tattha sāmīci. [Vin III 246.10–15]

bhesajjasikkhāpadaṃ

23. yāni kho pana tāni gilānānaṃ bhikkhūnaṃ paṭisāyaniyāni
bhesajjāni, seyyath' idaṃ:³ sappi navanītaṃ telaṃ madhu
15 phāṇitaṃ, tāni paṭiggahetvā sattāhaparamaṃ sannidhi-
kāraṃ paribhuñjitabbāni. taṃ atikkāmayato nissaggiyaṃ
pācittiyaṃ. [Vin III 251.14–18]

vassikasāṭikasikkhāpadaṃ

24. māso seso gimhānan ti bhikkhunā vassikasāṭikacīvaraṃ
20 pariyesitabbaṃ, addhamāso⁴ seso gimhānan ti katvā nivāse-
tabbaṃ. orena ce māso seso gimhānan ti vassikasāṭika-
cīvaraṃ pariyeseyya, oren' addhamāso⁵ seso gimhānan ti
katvā nivāseyya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. [Vin III 252.25–
53.3]

¹Sc so; other sources omit

²Nā, Sc add: ca

³Vin E^c, Nā, Sc: idaṃ

⁴Nā, Sc: -ddh-

⁵Nā, Sc: -ddh-

c. The section about bowls

The rule about bowls

21. An extra bowl is to be kept for ten days at most. For one exceeding that, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about less than five mends

22. If any bhikkhu should exchange a bowl with less than five mends for another new bowl, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture. That [new] bowl is to be forfeited by that bhikkhu in the assembly of bhikkhus. And whichever is the last of the bowls of that assembly of bhikkhus is to be given to that bhikkhu [with the words], "Bhikkhu, this is your bowl; [it] is to be kept until it is broken." This is the proper course here.

The rule about medicines

23. There are medicines to be eaten by sick bhikkhus, namely, ghee, fresh butter, oil, honey, molasses. Having accepted them, they are to be used, storing them up for seven days at most. For one exceeding that, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about rains robes

24. By a bhikkhu [thinking], "A month of the hot weather is left." material for a rains robe is to be sought. Having made it, it is to be worn [by him thinking], "Half a month of the hot weather is left." Should he seek material for a rains robe [thinking], "More than a month of the hot weather is left," and should he, having made, it wear it, [thinking], "More than half a month of the hot weather is left," there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

cīvara-acchindanasikkhāpadam

25. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhussa sāmam cīvaram datvā kupito anattamano acchindeyya vā acchindāpeyya vā, nissaggiyam pācittiyam. [Vin III 255.5ff.]

5

suttaviññatisikkhāpadam

26. yo pana bhikkhu sāmam suttam viññāpetvā tantavāyehi cīvaram vāyāpeyya, nissaggiyam pācittiyam. [Vin III 256.27f.]

mahāpesakārasikkhāpadam

- 10 27. bhikkhum pan' eva uddissa aññātako gahapati vā gahapatānī vā tantavāyehi cīvaram vāyāpeyya. tatra ce so bhikkhu pubbe appavārīto tantavāyē upasaṅkamitvā cīvare vikappam āpajjeyya idam kho āvuso cīvaram mam uddissa viyyati,¹ āyataṇ ca karoṭha, vitthataṇ ca, appitaṇ ca, suvitaṇ²
- 15 ca. supavāyitaṇ³ ca, suvilekhitaṇ⁴ ca, suvitacchitaṇ ca karoṭha, app eva nāma mayam⁵ pi āyasmantānam kiñci-mattam anupadajjeyyāmā ti. evaṇ ca so bhikkhu vatvā kiñci-mattam anupadajjeyya antamaso piṇḍapātamattam pi, nissaggiyam pācittiyam. [Vin III 259.5-14]

20

acceka-cīvarasikkhāpadam

28. dasāhānāgataṇ kattikatemāsipunṇamam⁶ bhikkhuno pan' eva acceka-cīvaram uppajjeyya, accekam maññamānena bhikkhunā paṭiggahetabbam, paṭiggahetvā yāva cīvarakāla-samayam nikkhipitabbam. tato ce uttari⁷ nikkhipeyya,
- 25 nissaggiyam pācittiyam. [Vin III 261.20-24]

¹Nā. S^c: vīya-

²Nā. S^c: -vi-

³Nā: -p-

⁴Nā: -kkh-

⁵Vin E^c: -yam

⁶Vin E^c. S^c, Nā so; B^c: -māsikapu-

⁷Vin E^c. Nā, S^c: -rim

The rule about taking a robe away

25. If any bhikkhu should, having himself given a robe to a bhikkhu, [afterwards] being angry and displeased, take it away or have it taken away [from him], there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about asking for yarn

26. If any bhikkhu should, having himself asked for yarn, have it woven into robe material by weavers, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The longer rule about weavers

27. A householder or a householder's wife not related [to the bhikkhu] may have robe material woven by weavers specifically for a bhikkhu. If that bhikkhu, without being previously invited, having gone there to the weavers, should suggest an alternative, [saying], "Friends, this robe material is being woven specifically for me. Make it long and wide and firm and well woven and evenly woven and well scraped and well combed; then perhaps we might give you venerable ones a little something," and if after having spoken thus he should give a little something, even merely [the contents of] an alms bowl, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about special robes

28. Should a special robe become available for a bhikkhu when the Kattika full moon [which comes at the end of the] three months [of the rainy season] has not come by ten days, it is to be received by that bhikkhu, thinking that it is special. Having received it, it is to be deposited until the robe-time occasion. If he should deposit it for longer than that, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

sāsaṅkasikkhāpadaṃ

29. upavassaṃ kho pana kattikapuṇṇamaṃ yāni kho pana
 tāni ārañṇakāni senāsanāni sāsaṅkasammatāni sappatibhayāni
 tathārūpesu bhikkhu senāsanesu viharanto ākaṅkhamāno
 5 tiṇṇaṃ cīvarānaṃ aṇṇataraṃ cīvaraṃ antaraghare nikkhi-
 peyya, siyā ca tassa bhikkhuno kocid eva paccayo tena
 cīvarena vippavāsāya, chārattaparamaṃ tena bhikkhunā tena
 cīvarena vippavasitabbaṃ. tato ce uttari¹ vippavaseyya
 aṇṇatra bhikkhusammutiyā,² nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. [Vin
 10 III 263,19-27]

pariṇatasikkhāpadaṃ

30. yo pana bhikkhu jānaṃ saṅghikaṃ lābhaṃ pariṇataṃ
 attano pariṇāmeyya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. [Vin III
 265,31f.]

15

pattavaggo tatiyo

uddiṭṭhā kho āyasmanto tiṃsa nissaggiyā pācittiyā
 dhammā.

- tatth' āyasmante pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā?
 dutiyam pi pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? tatiyam pi
 20 pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? parisuddh' etth' āyas-
 manto, tasmā tuṇhī, evaṃ etaṃ dhārayāmi³ ti. [Vin III
 266,31-35]

nissaggiyapācittiyā⁴ niṭṭhitā.

¹ Vin E^c, Nā, S^c: -rim

² Nā: -mma-

³ Nā: -mi (omits ti)

⁴ Nā, S^c: nissaggiyā pacittiyā dhammā

The rule about dangerous

29. When a bhikkhu has kept the rains up to the Kattika full moon, living in such abodes as forest abodes [which are] agreed to be dangerous [and] frightening, he may if he wishes deposit one or other of his three robes in a house. And should there be some reason for that bhikkhu to live away from that robe, he is to live away from that robe for six nights at the most. If he should live away from it for longer than that, other than with the permission of the bhikkhus, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about apportioned

30. If any bhikkhu should knowingly have apportioned to himself an apportioned possession belonging to the saṅgha, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The section about bowls; the third

Recited, venerable sirs, are the thirty matters entailing expiation with forfeiture.

Herein I ask the venerable ones: Are you pure in this? A second time I ask: Are you pure in this? A third time I ask: Are you pure in this? The venerable ones are pure in this; therefore they are silent. Thus I record it.

The expiation with forfeiture section is finished.

G. *suddhapācittiyā*

ime kho pan' āyasmanto dvenavuti pācittiyā dhammā
uddesaṃ āgacchanti. [Vin IV 1,5f.]

musāvādavaggo¹

5

musāvādasikkhāpadaṃ

1. sampajānamusāvāde pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 2,14]

omasavādasikkhāpadaṃ

2. omasavāde pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 6,5]

pesuññasikkhāpadaṃ

10 3. bhikkhupesuñṇe pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 12,23]

padāsodhammasikkhāpadaṃ

4. yo pana bhikkhu anupasampannaṃ padaso dhammaṃ
vāceyya, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 14,20f.]

paṭhamasahaseyyasikkhāpadaṃ

15 5. yo pana bhikkhu anupasampannena uttaridīrattatirattaṃ²
sahaseyyaṃ kappeyya, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 16,31f.]

dutiyasahaseyyasikkhāpadaṃ

6. yo pana bhikkhu mātugāmena sahaseyyaṃ kappeyya,
pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 19,31f.]

20

dhammadesanāsikkhāpadaṃ

7. yo pana bhikkhu mātugāmassa uttarichappañcavācāhi
dhammaṃ deseyya aññatra viññunā purisaviggahena,
pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 22,17ff.]

¹Sc so; other sources omit

²Vin Ec, Nā, Sc: -dvi-

G. The section on matters entailing simple expiation

Now, venerable sirs, these ninety-two matters entailing expiation come up for recitation

The section about lying

The rule about lying

1. In [uttering] a conscious lie there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about abusive speech

2. In abusive speech there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about slander

3. In slander of a bhikkhu there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about the Dhamma word by word

4. If any bhikkhu should make someone who is not ordained recite the Dhamma word by word, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The first rule about a bed together

5. If any bhikkhu should make his bed for more than two or three nights together with one who is not ordained, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The second rule about a bed together

6. If any bhikkhu should make his bed together with a woman, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about teaching the Dhamma

7. If any bhikkhu should teach the Dhamma to a woman in more than five or six sentences other than with a knowledgeable man [being present], there is an offence entailing expiation.

bhūtārocanasikkhāpadam

8. yo pana bhikkhu anupasampannassa uttarimanussa-
dhammam āroceyya, bhūtasmiṃ pācittiyam. [Vin IV 25,22f.]

duṭṭhullārocanasikkhāpadam

5 9. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhussa duṭṭhullam āpattiṃ anu-
pasampannassa āroceyya aññatra bhikkhusammutiyā,¹
pācittiyam. [Vin IV 31.12ff.]

pathavīkhaṇanasikkhāpadam

10. yo pana bhikkhu pathaviṃ khaṇeyya vā khaṇāpeyya vā,
10 pācittiyam. [Vin IV 33.4f.]

musāvādavaggo paṭhamo

bhūtagāmapavaggo²

b. bhūtagāmasikkhāpadam

11. bhūtagāmapātabyatāya pācittiyam. [Vin IV 34,34]

15 aññavādakasikkhāpadam

12. aññavādake vihesake pācittiyam. [Vin IV 36,37]

ujjhāpanakasikkhāpadam

13. ujjhāpanake khīyanake³ pācittiyam. [Vin IV 38,23]

paṭhamasenāsanasikkhāpadam

20 14. yo pana bhikkhu saṅghikam mañcam vā pīṭham vā
bhisim vā koccham vā ajjhokāse santharivā vā santharāpetvā
vā tam pakkamanto n' eva uddhareyya na uddharāpeyya
anāpuccham vā gaccheyya, pācittiyam. [Vin IV 39,25-28]

¹Nā. S^c: -mma-

²S^c: bhūtagāvagga; other sources omit

³Nā. S^c: khiyya-

The rule about announcing what is true

8. If any bhikkhu should announce [his own] superhuman state to one who is not ordained, if it is true, there is an offence entailing exiation.

The rule about announcing a gross offence

9. If any bhikkhu should announce a bhikkhu's gross offence to one who is not ordained, other than with the agreement of the bhikkhus, there is an offence entailing exiation.

The rule about digging the earth

10. If any bhikkhu should dig the earth or have it dug, there is an offence entailing exiation.

The section about lying; the first

b. The section about plant beings

The rule about plant beings

11. In causing damage to plant beings there is an offence entailing exiation.

The rule about one replying evasively

12. In respect of one replying evasively [and] causing trouble there is an offence entailing exiation.

The rule about one disparaging

13. In respect of one disparaging [and] criticising there is an offence entailing exiation.

The first rule about lodgings

14. If any bhikkhu, having spread out or having had spread out in the open a couch or a chair or a mattress or a stool belonging to the saṅgha, when departing should neither put it away nor have it put away or should go without asking leave, there is an offence entailing exiation.

dutiyaśeṇāsanaśikkhāpadaṃ

15. yo pana bhikkhu saṅghike vihāre seyyaṃ santharitvā vā
santharāpetvā vā taṃ pakkamanto n' eva uddhareyya na
uddharāpeyya anāpucchā vā gaccheyya, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin
5 41,21-24]

anupakhajjaśikkhāpadaṃ

16. yo pana bhikkhu saṅghike vihāre jānaṃ pubbupagataṃ¹
bhikkhuṃ anupakhajja² seyyaṃ kappeyya yassa sambādho
bhavissati so pakkamissatī ti etad eva paccayaṃ karitvā
10 anaññaṃ, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin 43,7-10]

nikkaḍḍhaśikkhāpadaṃ

17. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhuṃ kupito anattamano saṅghikā
vihārā nikkāḍḍheyya vā nikkāḍḍhāpeyya vā, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin
44,31f.]

- 15 vehāsaṭṭisaśikkhāpadaṃ

18. yo pana bhikkhu saṅghike vihāre uparivehāsaṭṭiyā
āhaccapādaṃ mañcaṃ vā pīṭhaṃ vā abhinisīdeyya vā
abhinipajjeyya vā, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 46,16ff.]

mahallakavihāraśikkhāpadaṃ

- 20 19. mahallakaṃ pana bhikkhunā vihāraṃ kārayamānena
yāva dvāraṃ aggaḷaṭṭhapanāya³ ālokaśandhiparikammāya
dvatticchadanassa⁴ pariyāyaṃ appaharite ṭhitena adhiṭṭhā-
tabbaṃ. tato ce uttari⁵ appaharite pi ṭhito adhiṭṭhaheyya,
pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 47,22-26]

¹Ñā. S^c: -bbū-

²Ñā: anū-

³Ñā: -l-

⁴Vin E^c. Ñā. S^c: dvi-

⁵Ñā. S^c: -riṃ

The second rule about lodgings

15. If any bhikkhu, having spread out a bed or having had it spread out in a dwelling place belonging to the saṅgha, when departing should neither put it away nor have it put away or should go without asking leave, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about encroaching

16. If any bhikkhu in a dwelling place belonging to the saṅgha should knowingly make his bed encroaching on a bhikkhu who arrived before him [thinking], "He for whom it is too crowded will go away," having done it for that reason and no other, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about driving out

17. If any bhikkhu should, being angry [and] displeased, drive a bhikkhu out from a dwelling place belonging to the saṅgha or have him driven out, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about a lofty cell

18. If any bhikkhu should, in a dwelling place belonging to the saṅgha in a lofty cell with an upper platform, sit down or lie down [suddenly] on a bed or bench with detachable legs, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about a large dwelling place

19. When a bhikkhu is having a large dwelling place made, an area of two or three coverings [of plaster] is to be determined by him standing in a place without green crops, as far as the doorway for placing the door bolts, for making the window holes. If he should determine more than that, even if standing in an area without green crops, there is an offence entailing expiation.

sappāṇakasikkhāpadaṃ

20. yo pana bhikkhu jānaṃ sappāṇakaṃ udakaṃ tiṇaṃ vā
mattikaṃ vā siñceyya vā siñcāpeyya vā, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV
49.3f.]

5

bhūtagāmaṃvavaggo dutiyo

c. ovādavaggo¹

ovādasikkhāpadaṃ

21. yo pana bhikkhu asaṃmato bhikkhuniyo ovadeyya,
pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 51.3f.]

10

atthaṅgatasikkhāpadaṃ

22. saṃmato pi ce² bhikkhu atthaṅgate sūriye³ bhikkhuniyo
ovadeyya, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 55.9f.]

bhikkhunupassayasikkhāpadaṃ

23. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhunupassayaṃ⁴ upasaṅkamitvā
15 bhikkhuniyo ovadeyya aññatra samayā, pācittiyaṃ.
tathāyaṃ samayo: gilānā hoti bhikkhunī. ayaṃ tattha
samayo. [Vin IV 57.1-4]

āmisasikkhāpadaṃ

24. yo pana bhikkhu evaṃ vadeyya āmisahetu therā⁵ bhikkhū
20 bhikkhuniyo ovaḍantī ti, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 58.10f.]

cīvaraḍānasikkhāpadaṃ

25. yo pana bhikkhu aññātikāya bhikkhuniyā cīvaraṃ
ḍadeyya aññatra pārivattakā,⁶ pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 60.9f.]

¹S^c so; other sources omit

²Vin E^c inverts: ce pi

³Vin E^c, Ñā, S^c: su-

⁴Vin E^c, Ñā, S^c: -nū-

⁵Ñā, S^c omit

⁶Ñā, S^c: -tt-

The rule about containing living things

20. If any bhikkhu should knowingly pour water containing living things on to grass or earth or have it poured, there is an offence entailing exiation.

The section about plant beings; the second

c. The section on exhortation

The rule about exhortation

21. If any bhikkhu, not approved, should exhort bhikkhunīs, there is an offence entailing exiation.

The rule about sunset

22. If any bhikkhu, although approved, should exhort bhikkhunīs after the sun has set, there is an offence entailing exiation.

The rule about bhikkhunīs' quarters

23. If any bhikkhu, having gone to the bhikkhunīs' quarters, should exhort bhikkhunīs, other than on the proper occasion, there is an offence entailing exiation. Herein this is the proper occasion: a bhikkhunī is sick. This is the proper occasion here.

The rule about material gain

24. If any bhikkhu should say thus. "The bhikkhus [who are] elders are exhorting bhikkhunīs for the sake of material gain," there is an offence entailing exiation.

The rule about giving robe material

25. If any bhikkhu should give robe material to a bhikkhunī not related [to him], other than in exchange, there is an offence entailing exiation.

cīvarasibbanasikkhāpadaṃ

26. yo pana bhikkhu aññātikāya bhikkhuniyā cīvaram
sibbeyya vā sibbāpeyya vā, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 61.31f.]

saṃvidhānasikkhāpadaṃ

5 27. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhuniyā saddhiṃ saṃvidhāya eka-
ddhānamaggaṃ paṭipajjeyya antamaso gāmantaram pi
aññatra samayā, pācittiyaṃ. tatthāyaṃ samayo: sattha-
gamanīyo hoti maggo sāsāṅkasammato sappatibhayo. ayaṃ
tatha samayo. [Vin IV 63.17-21]

10 nāvabhiruhanasikkhāpadaṃ

28. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhuniyā saddhiṃ saṃvidhāya ekaṃ
nāvaṃ abhirūheyya uddhaṅgāminim¹ vā adhogāminim vā
aññatra tiriyantaraṇāya, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 65.18ff.]

paripācitasikkhāpadaṃ

15 29. yo pana bhikkhu jānaṃ bhikkhunīparipācitaṃ piṇḍa-
pātaṃ bhuñjeyya aññatra pubbe gihisamārambhā, pācittiyaṃ.
[Vin IV 67.19ff.]

rahonisajjasikkhāpadaṃ

30. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhuniyā saddhiṃ eko ekāya raho
20 nisajjaṃ kappeyya, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 68.28f.]

ovādavaggo tatiyo²

¹Ñā, S^c: uddhagā-

²Phye: bhikkhunovādavaggo tatiyo.

The rule about sewing robe material

26. If any bhikkhu should sew a robe or have it sewn for a bhikkhunī not related [to him], there is an offence entailing expiation.

5 The rule about arrangements

27. If any bhikkhu should by arrangement set out on the same journey with a bhikkhunī, even to the [next] village, other than on the proper occasion, there is an offence entailing expiation. Herein this is the proper occasion: the
o journey, [which is] agreed to be dangerous [and] frightening, is to be undertaken by a caravan. This is the proper occasion here.

The rule about embarking on a boat

28. If any bhikkhu should by arrangement embark with a
5 bhikkhunī on a boat going upstream or downstream, other than for crossing over [to the other side], there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about prepared

29. If any bhikkhu should knowingly eat alms food prepared
10 by [the agency of] a bhikkhunī, other than by a prior arrangement with the householder, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about sitting privately

30. If any bhikkhu should take a seat together with a
15 bhikkhunī privately, one man with one woman, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The section on exhortation ; the third

d. bhojanavaggo¹

āvasathapiṇḍasikkhāpada

31. agilānena bhikkhunā eko āvasathapiṇḍo bhuñjitabbo.
tato ce uttari² bhuñjeyya, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 70.33f.]

5

gaṇabhojanasikkhāpadaṃ

32. gaṇabhojane aññatra samayā pācittiyaṃ. tatthāyaṃ
samayo: gilānasamayo, cīvaradānasamayo, cīvarakāra-
samayo, addhānagamanasamayo, nāvābhiruhanasamayo,³
maḥāsamayo, samaṇabhattasamayo. ayaṃ tattha samayo.

10 [Vin IV 74.24-27]

paramparabhojanasikkhāpadaṃ

33. paramparabhojane⁴ aññatra samayā pācittiyaṃ. tatthāyaṃ
samayo: gilānasamayo cīvaradānasamayo cīvarakārasamayo.
ayaṃ tattha samayo. [Vin IV 77.30ff.]

15

kānamātusikkhāpadaṃ

34. bhikkhuṃ pan' eva kulaṃ upagataṃ pūvehi vā manthehi
vā abhihaṭṭhuṃ pavāreyya, ākaṅkhamānena bhikkhunā
dvattipattapūrā⁵ paṭiggahetabbā. tato ce uttari⁶ paṭiggaṇ-
heyya,⁷ pācittiyaṃ. dvattipattapūre⁸ paṭiggahetvā tato
20 nīharitvā bhikkhūhi saddhiṃ saṃvibhajitabbaṃ. ayaṃ tattha
sāmīci. [Vin IV 80.16-21]

¹So; other sources omit

²So, Nā: -riṃ

³Nā, Vin E^c: -rū-

⁴Vin E^c: parampa-

⁵Vin E^c: dvitti-

⁶So, Nā: -riṃ

⁷Vin E^c: -g-

⁸Vin E^c: dvitti-

d. The section on food

The rule about meals in a public rest house

31. One meal in a public rest house is to be eaten by a bhikkhu who is not sick. If he should eat more than that, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about eating in groups

32. In eating in groups, other than on the proper occasion, there is an offence entailing expiation. Herein this is the proper occasion: an occasion of sickness, an occasion of giving robe material, an occasion of making up robes, an occasion of going on a journey, an occasion of embarking on a boat, a special occasion, an occasion of a recluses' meal. This is the proper occasion here.

The rule about meals in succession

33. In meals in succession, other than on the proper occasion, there is an offence entailing expiation. Herein this is the proper occasion: an occasion of sickness, an occasion of giving robe material, an occasion of making up robes. This is the proper occasion here.

The "Kāṇā's mother" rule

34. Should a family bring and invite with cakes or biscuits a bhikkhu who has arrived, two or three bowlfuls are to be accepted by the bhikkhu if he wishes. If he should accept more than that, there is an offence entailing expiation. Having accepted two or three bowlfuls, having brought them back from there, they are to be shared with the bhikkhus. This is the proper course here.

paṭhamapavāraṇāsikkhāpadam

35. yo pana bhikkhu bhuttāvī pavārito anatirittam khādanīyam¹ vā bhojanīyam vā khādeyya vā bhuñjeyya vā, pācittiyam. [Vin IV 82,21ff.]

5

dutiya-pavāraṇāsikkhāpadam

36. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhum bhuttāvim pavāritam anatirittena khādanīyena vā bhojanīyena vā abhihaṭṭhum pavāreyya handa bhikkhu khāda vā bhuñja vā ti jānam āsādanāpekkho, bhuttasmim pācittiyam. [Vin IV 84,14-17]

10

vikālabhojanasikkhāpadam

37. yo pana bhikkhu vikāle khādanīyam vā bhojanīyam vā khādeyya vā bhuñjeyya vā, pācittiyam. [Vin IV 85,33f.]

sinnidhikāra-sikkhāpadam

38. yo pana bhikkhu sannidhikārakam khādanīyam vā
15 bhojanīyam vā khādeyya vā bhuñjeyya vā, pācittiyam. [Vin IV 87,1f.]

paññātabhojanasikkhāpadam

39. yāni kho pana tāni paññātabhojanāni seyyath' idam:²
sappi, navanītam, telam, madhu, phaññitam, maccho,
20 maṃsam, khīram, dadhi, yo pana bhikkhu evarūpāni
paññātabhojanāni agilāno attano atthāya viññāpetvā bhuñ-
jeyya, pācittiyam. [Vin IV 88,23-26]

¹ Vin E^c throughout: -ni-

² Vin E^c, Nā, S^c: ī-

The first rule about invitations

35. If any bhikkhu, who has finished eating, [but is] invited [to eat more], should chew or consume solid food or soft food that is not left over, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The second rule about invitations

36. If any bhikkhu should bring and invite with solid food or soft food that is not left over a bhikkhu, who has finished eating, [but is] invited [to eat more], [saying] knowingly and looking to find fault, "Here, bhikkhu, chew or consume [this]," [then] when [it is] eaten there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about eating at the wrong time

37. If any bhikkhu should chew or consume solid food or soft food at the wrong time, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about storing up

38. If any bhikkhu should chew or consume solid food or soft food, having stored it up, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about fine foods

39. There are fine foods such as these: ghee, butter, oil, honey, molasses, fish, meat, milk, and curds. If any bhikkhu who is not sick, having asked for such fine foods for himself, should consume them, there is an offence entailing expiation.

dantaponasikkhāpadam

40. yo pana bhikkhu adinnaṃ mukhadvāraṃ āhāraṃ
āhareyya aññatra udakadantaponā,¹ pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV
90.9f.]

5

bhojanavaggo catuttho

e. acelakavaggo²

acelakasikkhāpadam

41. yo pana bhikkhu acelakassa vā paribbājakassa vā
paribbājikāya vā sahatthā khādanīyaṃ³ vā bhojanīyaṃ⁴ vā
10 dadeyya, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 92.4ff.]

uyyojanasikkhāpadam

42. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhum⁵ eh' āvuso, gāmaṃ vā
nigamaṃ vā piṇḍāya pavisissāmā ti tassa dāpetvā vā
adāpetvā vā uyyojeyya gacchāvuso, na me tayā saddhiṃ
15 kathā vā nisajjā vā phāsu hoti, ekakassa me kathā vā nisajjā
vā phāsu hoti ti etad eva paccayaṃ karitvā anaññaṃ,
pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 93.14-18]

sabhojanasikkhāpadam

43. yo pana bhikkhu sabhojane kule anupakhajja⁶ nisajjaṃ
20 kappeyya, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 95.7f.]

rahopaticchannasikkhāpadam

44. yo pana bhikkhu mātugāmena saddhiṃ raho paṭicchanne
āsane nisajjaṃ kappeyya, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 96.14f.]

¹ Vin E^c, Nā, S^c: -ṇā

² S^c so; other sources omit

³ Vin E^c: -ni-

⁴ Vin E^c: -ni-

⁵ Nā, S^c add: evaṃ vadeyya

⁶ Nā: anū-

The rule about tooth sticks

40. If any bhikkhu should convey to the opening of his mouth food that has not been given, other than water and a tooth stick, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The section on food; the fourth

e. The section on naked recluses

The rule about naked recluses

41. If any bhikkhu should give with his own hand solid food or soft food to a naked ascetic or to a male wanderer or to a female wanderer, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about dismissing

42. If any bhikkhu [should say thus] to a bhikkhu, "Come, friend, let us go to the village or the town for alms food," [and then] having had anything given to him or not, he should dismiss him, [saying], "Go, friend, talking or sitting with you is not pleasant for me; talking or sitting is pleasant for me all alone," having done it for that reason and no other, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about having food

43. If any bhikkhu should intrude upon and take a seat with a family having food,¹ there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about privately on a screened [seat]

44. If any bhikkhu should take a seat with a woman privately on a screened seat, there is an offence entailing expiation.

¹ *Sabhojana* could mean "having food" or "having sex."

rahonisajjābhikkhāpada

45. yo pana bhikkhu mātugāmena saddhiṃ eko ekāya raho
nisajjaṃ kappeyya, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 97,23f.]

cārittasikkhāpadaṃ

- 5 46. yo pana bhikkhu nimantito sabhatto samāno santaṃ
bhikkhuṃ anāpucchā purebhattaṃ vā pacchābhattaṃ vā
kulesu cārittaṃ apajjeyya aññatra sāmāyā, pācittiyaṃ.
tathāyaṃ samayo: cīvaradānasamayo, cīvarakārasamayo.
ayaṃ tattha samayo. [Vin IV 100.9-13]

10

Mahānāmasikkhāpadaṃ

47. agilānena bhikkhunā catumāsappaccayapavāraṇā¹ sāditi-
abbā aññatra punapavāraṇāya aññatra niccapavāraṇāya. tato
ce uttari² sādiyeyya, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 102,38-103,2]

uyyattasenāsikkhāpadaṃ

- 15 48. yo pana bhikkhu uyyuttaṃ senaṃ dassanāya gaccheyya
aññatra tathārūpapaccayā, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 105,12f.]

senāvāsasikkhāpadaṃ

49. siyā ca tassa bhikkhuno kocid eva paccayo senaṃ gama-
nāya, dirattatirattaṃ³ tena bhikkhunā senāya vasitabbaṃ.
20 tato ce uttari⁴ vaseyya, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 106,18ff.]

¹Vin E^c, Nā, S^c: cā---sapa-; S^c v.l.: cātummasappa-

²Nā, S^c: -riṃ

³Vin E^c, Nā, S^c: dvi-

⁴Nā, S^c: -riṃ

The rule about sitting down privately

45. If any bhikkhu should take a seat with a woman privately, one man with one woman, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about visiting

46. If any bhikkhu being invited and being [provided] with a meal should go either before the meal or after the meal to visit [other] families without asking leave of a bhikkhu if one is present, other than on the proper occasion, there is an offence entailing expiation. Herein this is the proper occasion: an occasion of giving robe material, an occasion of making up robes. This is the proper occasion here.

The “Mahānāma” rule

47. An invitation [to accept] requisites for four months may be accepted by a bhikkhu [who is] not sick, other than a repeated invitation, other than a permanent invitation. If he should accept for longer than that, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about an army in array

48. If any bhikkhu should go to see an army in array, other than for sufficient reason, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about staying with an army

49. But there may be some reason for that bhikkhu going to an army. [Then] that bhikkhu is to stay with the army for two or three nights. If he should stay longer than that, there is an offence entailing expiation.

uyyodhikasikkhāpadaṃ

50. dirattatirattañ¹ ce bhikkhu senāya vasamāno uyyodhikaṃ
vā balaggaṃ vā senābyūhaṃ vā anīkadassanaṃ vā
gaccheyya, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 107,26ff.]

5

acelakavaggo pañcama

f. surāpanavaggo²

surāpānasikkhāpadaṃ

51. surāmerayapāne pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 110,13]

aṅgulipatodakasikkhāpadaṃ

10 52. aṅgulipatodake pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 111,7]

hāsadhammasikkhāpadaṃ

53. udake hāsadhamme³ pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 112,22]

anādariyasikkhāpadaṃ

54. anādariye pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 113,17]

15

bhimsāpanasikkhāpadaṃ

55. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhuṃ bhimsāpeyya, pācittiyaṃ.
[Vin IV 114,17]

jotisikkhāpadaṃ

20 56. yo pana bhikkhu agilāno visibbanāpekkho⁴ jotim
samādaheyya vā samādahāpeyya vā aññatra tathā-
rūpapaccayā, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 115,7ff.]

¹Vin E^c, Nā. S^c: dvi-

²S^c so: other sources omit

³Vin E^c; B^c so: hasa-; Nā, S^c: hassa-

⁴Nā, S^c: visīvanā-

The rule about a battlefield

50. If while the bhikkhu is staying two or three nights with an army, he should go to a battlefield or to the head of the army or to an army array or to an army review, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The section about naked recluses; the fifth

f. The section on drinking liquor

The rule about drinking liquor

51. In drinking fermented liquors and spirits there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about poking with the finger

52. In poking with the fingers there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about sporting

53. In sporting in the water there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about disrespect

54. In disrespect there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about frightening

55. If any bhikkhu should frighten a bhikkhu, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about fires

56. If any bhikkhu [who is] not sick should kindle a fire or have one kindled, looking to be warmed by it, other than for sufficient reason, there is an offence entailing expiation.

nahānasikkhāpadam

57. yo pana bhikkhu oren' addhamāsaṃ¹ nahāyeyya² aññatra samayā, pācittiyam. tatthāyam samayo: diyaddho māso seso gimhānan ti vassānassa paṭhamo māso icc ete addhateyya-
 5 māsā uḥhasamayo, pariḷāhasamayo, gilānasamayo, kamma-
 samayo, addhānagamanasamayo, vātavutṭhisamayo. ayam tattha samayo. [Vin IV 119.4-9]

dubbaṇṇakaraṇasikkhāpadam

58. navam pana bhikkhunā cīvaralābhena tiṇṇam dubbaṇṇa-
 10 kaṇaṇānam aññataram dubbaṇṇakaraṇam ādātabbam nīlam
 vā kaddamam vā kāḷasāmam vā. anādā ce bhikkhu tiṇṇam
 dubbaṇṇakaraṇānam aññataram dubbaṇṇakaraṇam navam
 cīvaram paribhuñjeyya, pācittiyam. [Vin IV 120.21-25]

vikappanasikkhāpadam

59. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhussa vā bhikkhuniyā vā sikkha-
 15 mānāya vā sāmaṇerassa vā sāmaṇeriyā vā sāmam cīvaram
 vikappetvā appaccuddhāraṇam³ paribhuñjeyya, pācittiyam.
 [Vin IV 121.30-33]

apanidhānasikkhāpadam

60. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhussa pattam vā cīvaram vā nisīda-
 20 nam vā sūciḥaram vā kāyabandhanam vā apanidheyya vā
 apanidhāpeyya vā antamaso hāsapekkho⁴ pi, pācittiyam. [Vin
 IV 123.22ff.]

surāpānavaggo chaṭṭho

¹Nā. S^c: -ddh-

²Vin E^c. Nā, S^c: nhā-

³Vin E^c. Nā, S^c: apa---rakam

⁴S^c: B^c so: hāsā-; Nā: hassā-

The rule about bathing

57. If any bhikkhu should bathe at intervals of less than half a month, other than on the proper occasion, there is an offence entailing expiation. Herein, this is the proper occasion: the remaining month and a half of the hot season, the first month of the rainy season, thus these two and a half months are the occasion of hot weather; [the other occasions are] an occasion of fever, an occasion of sickness, an occasion of work, an occasion of going on a journey, an occasion of wind and rain. This is the proper occasion here.

The rule about disfigurement

58. One or other disfigurement of the three disfigurements is to be applied by a bhikkhu after acquiring a new robe: blue or mud[-colour] or dark brown. If a bhikkhu should use a new robe without applying one or other disfigurement of the three disfigurements, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about assigning

59. If any bhikkhu, having himself assigned a robe to a bhikkhu or to a bhikkhunī or to a female trainee or to a male novice or to a female novice, should use it without a formal taking back [i.e. rescinding of the assignment], there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about hiding

60. If any bhikkhu should hide or have hidden a bhikkhu's bowl or robe or sitting cloth or needle case or waistband, even if intending a joke, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The section on drinking liquor; the sixth

g. sappāṇakavaggo¹

sañciccaṣikkhāpadaṃ

61. yo pana bhikkhu sañcicca paṇaṃ jīvitaṃ voropeyya, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 124,26f.]

5

sappāṇakasikkhāpadaṃ

62. yo pana bhikkhu jānaṃ sappāṇakaṃ udakaṃ paribhuñjeyya, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 125,20f.]

ukkoṭanasikkhāpadaṃ

63. yo pana bhikkhu jānaṃ yathādhammaṃ nihatādhi-
10 karaṇaṃ² punakammāya ukkoṭeyya, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 126,15f.]

duṭṭhulasikkhāpadaṃ

64. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhussa jānaṃ duṭṭhullaṃ āpattiṃ paṭicchādeyya, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 127,29f.]

15

ūnavāsativassasikkhāpadaṃ

65. yo pana bhikkhu jānaṃ ūnavāsativassaṃ puggalaṃ upa-
sampādeyya, so ca puggalo anupasampanno te ca bhikkhū
gārayhā, idaṃ tasmim pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 130,15ff.]

theyyasatthasikkhāpadaṃ

20 66. yo pana bhikkhu jānaṃ theyyasatthena saddhiṃ saṃ-
vidhāya ekaddhānamaggaṃ paṭipajjeyya antamaso gāman-
taram pi, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 131,21ff.]

saṃvidhānasikkhāpadaṃ

25 67. yo pana bhikkhu mātugāmena saddhiṃ saṃvidhāya eka-
ddhānamaggaṃ paṭipajjeyya antamaso gāmantaram pi,
pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 133,6ff.]

¹Se so; other sources omit

²Se, Ñā: nī-

g. The section on living beings

The rule about intentionally

61. If any bhikkhu should intentionally deprive a living being of life, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about containing living things

62. If any bhikkhu should knowingly make use of water containing living things, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about reopening

63. If any bhikkhu should knowingly reopen for renewed action a legal process which has been settled according to the law, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about gross offences

64. If any bhikkhu should knowingly conceal a bhikkhu's gross offence, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about under twenty years

65. If any bhikkhu should knowingly ordain an individual under twenty years of age, that individual is not ordained and those bhikkhus are censurable; this is an offence entailing expiation for him [who ordained].

The rule about a caravan of thieves

66. If any bhikkhu should knowingly by arrangement set out on the same journey with a caravan of thieves, even to the [next] village, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about arrangements

67. If any bhikkhu should by arrangement set out on the same journey with a woman, even to the [next] village, there is an offence entailing expiation.

Aritthasikkhāpadam

68. yo pana bhikkhu evaṃ vadeyya tathāhaṃ Bhagavatā dhammaṃ desitaṃ ājānāmi, yathā ye 'me antarāyikā dhammā vuttā Bhagavatā, te paṭisevato nālaṃ antarāyāyā ti,
 5 so bhikkhu bhikkhūhi evaṃ assa vacanīyo māyasmā¹ evaṃ avaca, mā Bhagavantaṃ abbhācikkhi, na hi sādhu Bhagavato abbhakkhānaṃ, na hi Bhagavā evaṃ vadeyya. aneka-pariyāyen² āvuso antarāyikā dhammā antarāyikā³ vuttā Bhagavatā alaṃ ca pana te paṭisevato antarāyāyā ti. evañ ca⁴
 10 so bhikkhu bhikkhūhi vuccamāno tath' eva paggaṇheyya, so bhikkhu bhikkhūhi yāvatatiyaṃ samanubhāsitaṃ tassa paṭinissaggāya. yāvatatiyaṃ ce samanubhāsiyamāno taṃ paṭinissajjeyya, icc etaṃ kusalaṃ, no ce paṭinissajjeyya, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 135.18-30]

- 15 ukkhittasambhogasikkhāpadam

69. yo pana bhikkhu jānaṃ tathāvādinā bhikkhunā akaṭānu-dhammena taṃ dīṭṭhiṃ appaṭinissatthena saddhiṃ sambhuñjeyya⁵ vā, saṃvāseyya⁶ vā, saha vā seyyaṃ kappeyya, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 137.17-20]

- 20 Kaṇṭakasikkhāpadam⁷

70. samaṇuddeso pi ce evaṃ vadeyya tathāhaṃ Bhagavatā dhammaṃ desitaṃ ājānāmi, yathā ye 'me antarāyikā dhammā vuttā Bhagavatā, te paṭisevato nālaṃ antarāyāyā ti, so samaṇuddeso bhikkhūhi evaṃ assa vacanīyo māvuso⁸
 25 samaṇuddesa evaṃ avaca, mā Bhagavantaṃ abbhācikkhi, na hi sādhu Bhagavato abbhakkhānaṃ, na hi Bhagavā evaṃ

¹Ñā, S^c: mā āyas- ²Vin E^c, Ñā, S^c: -yena ³Ñā, S^c omit ⁴Vin E^c adds: pana ⁵Vin E^c: saṃ- ⁶Ñā: -va- ⁷Sp: Kaṇḍaka- (Vin E^c IV 138f.: Kaṇḍaka) ⁸Ñā, S^c: mā āvu-

The “Ariṭṭha” rule

68. Whatever bhikkhu should say thus, “In such a way I understand the Dhamma taught by the Bhagavant that those things said by the Bhagavant to be obstructive are not in fact an obstruction for one indulging in them,” then that bhikkhu is to be spoken to by the bhikkhus thus, “Do not, venerable sir, speak thus, do not misrepresent the Bhagavant; for misrepresentation of the Bhagavant is not good; the Bhagavant would not say thus. Obstructive things, friend, have been said by the Bhagavant in many ways to be obstructive and are enough of an obstruction for one indulging in them.” And should that bhikkhu, being spoken to thus by the bhikkhus, persist in the same way [as before], then that bhikkhu is to be admonished by the bhikkhus up to the third time to give up that [course of action]. If, being admonished up to the third time, he should give it up, that is good; if he should not give it up, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about eating together with one who is suspended

69. If any bhikkhu should knowingly eat together with or live together with or make his bed together with a bhikkhu who says thus, who has not been dealt with according to the law, and who has not given up that view, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The “Kaṇṭaka” rule

70. If a novice should say thus, “In such a way I understand the Dhamma taught by the Bhagavant that those things said by the Bhagavant to be obstructive are not in fact an obstruction for one indulging in them,” then that novice is to be spoken to by the bhikkhus thus, “Do not, friend novice, speak thus, do not misrepresent the Bhagavant; for misrepresentation of the Bhagavant is not good; the Bhagavant would not say thus. Obstructive things, friend novice, have been said by the Bhagavant in many ways to be

vadeyya. anekapariyāyen¹ āvuso samaṇuddesa antarāyikā²
 dhammā antarāyikā vuttā Bhagavatā, alaṇ ca pana te
 paṭisevato antarāyāyā ti. evaṇ ca³ so samaṇuddeso bhikkhūhi
 vuccamāno tath' eva paggaṇheyya, so samaṇuddeso
 5 bhikkhūhi evaṃ assa vacanīyo ajjatagge te āvuso sama-
 ṇuddesa na c' eva so Bhagavā satthā apadisitabbo, yam pi c'
 aññe samaṇuddesā labhanti bhikkhūhi saddhiṃ dirattati-
 rattam⁴ sahasseyyaṃ, sāpi te n' atthi, cara pi re, vinassā ti. yo
 pana bhikkhu jānaṃ tathānāsitaṃ samaṇuddesaṃ upalāpeyya
 10 vā, upaṭṭhāpeyya vā, sambhuñjeyya vā, saha vā seyyaṃ
 kappeyya. pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 139.18-34]

sappāṇakavaggo⁵ sattamo

h. sahadhammikavaggo⁶

sahadhammikasikkhāpadaṃ

15 71. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhūhi sahadhammikaṃ vuccamāno
 evaṃ vadeyya na tāvāhaṃ āvuso etasmiṃ sikkhāpade
 sikkhissāmi yāva na⁷ aññaṃ bhikkhuṃ byattaṃ vinaya-
 dharaṃ paripucchāmi ti, pācittiyaṃ. sikkhamānena
 bhikkhave bhikkhunā aññātabbaṃ paripucchitabbaṃ pari-
 20 pañhitabbaṃ. ayaṃ tattha sāmīci. [Vin IV 141.19-24]

vilekhanasikkhāpadaṃ

72. yo pana bhikkhu pātimokkhe⁸ uddissamāne evaṃ
 vadeyya kiṃ pan' imehi khuddānukhuddakehi sikkhāpadehi
 uddiṭṭhehi. yāvad eva kukkucāya vihesāya vilekhāya

¹Vin E^c, Nā. S^c: -ena

²Nā. S^c omit

³Vin E^c adds: pana

⁴Vin E^c, Nā. S^c: dvi-

⁵Nā: -ṇavaggo

⁶S^c so; other sources omit

⁷Nā, S^c: n'

⁸Nā: paṭi-

obstructive, and are enough of an obstruction for one indulging in them.” And should that novice, being spoken to thus by the bhikkhus, persist in the same way [as before], that novice is to be spoken to by the bhikkhus thus, “Friend novice. from today the Bhagavant is not to be claimed by you as your teacher nor is yours [the privilege of] making your bed with bhikkhus for two or three nights which other novices have. Get away with you, be off!” If any bhikkhu should knowingly speak to a novice thus expelled or cause him to be supported or eat together with him or make his bed with him. there is an offence entailing expiation.

The section on living beings ; the seventh

h. The section regarding accordance with the law

The rule regarding accordance with the law

71. If any bhikkhu, being spoken by bhikkhus in accordance with the law, should say thus, “Friends, I shall not train myself in this training rule until I can ask some other bhikkhu [who is] a learned expert in the Vinaya about it,” there is an offence entailing expiation. Bhikkhus, [a rule] is to be understood, to be asked [about], to be investigated by a bhikkhu while [he is] in training.

The rule about confusion

72. If any bhikkhu should, when the Pātimokkha is being recited, say thus, “Why are these lesser and minor training rules recited? They are only conducive to worry, trouble, and confusion,” in disparaging the training rules there is an offence entailing expiation.

samvattantī ti, sikkhāpadavivaṇṇake¹ pācittiyam. [Vin IV 143.16-19]

mohanasikkhāpadam

73. yo pana bhikkhu anvaddhamāsaṃ² pātimokkhe³ uddissa-
 5 māne evaṃ vadeyya idān' eva kho ahaṃ jānāmi,⁴ ayam pi
 kira dhammo suttagato suttapariyāpanno anvaddhamāsaṃ⁵
 uddesaṃ āgacchatī ti, taṃ ce bhikkhuṃ aññe bhikkhū
 jāneyyumaṃ nisinnapubbaṃ iminā bhikkhunā dvittikkhattuṃ
 pātimokkhe⁶ uddissamāne, ko pana vādo bhiyyo.⁷ na ca
 10 tassa bhikkhuno aññāṇakena mutti atthi, yaṃ ca tattha āpattiṃ
 āpanno taṃ ca yathā dhammo kāretabbo, uttari⁸ c' assa moho
 āropetabbo tassa te āvuso alābhā, tassa te dulladdham. yaṃ
 tvam pātimokkhe³ uddissamāne na sādhu kaṃ aṭṭhikatvā⁹
 15 144.23-33]

pahārasikkhāpadam

74. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhussa kupito anattamano pahāraṃ
 dadeyya, pācittiyam. [Vin IV 146.13f.]

talasattikasikkhāpadam

- 20 75. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhussa kupito anattamano tala-
 sattikaṃ uggireyya, pācittiyam. [Vin IV 147.14f.]

¹Ñā, S^c: -ṇṇanake

²Ñā, S^c: -ddh-

³Ñā: pāṭi-

⁴Ñā, S^c: ājā-

⁵Ñā, S^c: -ddh-

⁶Ñā: pāṭi- [sic]; pāṭi- in 1966 ed.

⁷Ñā, S^c add: ti

⁸Ñā, S^c: -riñ

⁹Vin E^c, Ñā, S^c so; B^c: aṭṭhiṃ katvā

The rule about negligence

73. If any bhikkhu should, when the Pātimokkha is being recited every half month, say thus, "Only now do I understand; this matter, it seems, is handed down in the sutta, is contained in the sutta, and comes up for recitation every half month." If the other bhikkhus should know of that bhikkhu, "This bhikkhu has already sat while the Pātimokkha was recited two or three times", then why speak further? There is no release for that bhikkhu because of his ignorance, and whatever fault he has committed, for that he is to be dealt with as one acting in accordance with the law, and furthermore negligence is to be imputed to him. [saying], "It is no gain for you, friend, it is ill-gained by you, in that when the Pātimokkha is being recited you do not heed well and pay attention." This is an offence entailing expiation for that negligent person.

The rule about a blow

74. If any bhikkhu, being angry [and] displeased, should give a bhikkhu a blow, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about the palm of the hand

75. If any bhikkhu, being angry [and] displeased, should raise the palm of his hand against a bhikkhu, there is an offence entailing expiation.

amūlakasikkhāpadam

76. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhuṃ amūlakena saṅghādisesena
anuddhamseyya, pācittiyam. [Vin IV 148.5f.]

sañcicca-sikkhāpadam

- 5 77. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhussa sañcicca kukkucam upada-
heyya iti 'ssa muhuttam pi aphāsu bhavissatī ti etad eva
paccayam karitvā anaññaṃ, pācittiyam. [Vin IV 149.9ff.]

upassutisikkhāpadam

78. yo pana bhikkhu bhikkhūnaṃ bhaṇḍana-jātānaṃ kalaha-
10 jātānaṃ vivādāpannānaṃ upassutiṃ tiṭṭheyya yaṃ ime
bhaṇissanti, taṃ sossāmī ti etad eva paccayam karitvā
anaññaṃ, pācittiyam. [Vin IV 150.19-22]

kammappaṭibāhanasikkhāpadam

79. yo pana bhikkhu dhammikānaṃ kammānaṃ chandaṃ
15 datvā pacchā khīyanadhammaṃ¹ āpajjeyya, pācittiyam. [Vin
IV 152.19ff.]

chandaṃdatvāgamanasikkhāpadam

80. yo pana bhikkhu saṅghe vinicchaya-kathāya vattamānāya
chandaṃ datvā utṭhāy' āsanā pakkameyya, pācittiyam. [Vin
20 IV 153.8ff.]

dubbalasikkhāpadam²

81. yo pana bhikkhu samaggena saṅghena cīvaram datvā
pacchā khīyanadhammaṃ³ āpajjeyya yathāsanthutaṃ⁴
bhikkhū saṅghikaṃ lābhaṃ pariṇāmentī ti, pācittiyam. [Vin
25 IV 154.19ff.]

¹ Vin E^c: khīyadha-; Ñā: khiyyana-

² Sp IV 888.8: Dabbasikkhāpadam

³ Vin E^c: khīyadha-; Ñā: khiyyana-

⁴ Vin E^c: -santatam

The rule about unfounded

76. If any bhikkhu should accuse a bhikkhu of an unfounded [matter] entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about intentionally

77. If any bhikkhu should intentionally provoke worry in a bhikkhu, [thinking], "Thus it will be unpleasant for him for a while," having done it for that reason and no other, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about eavesdropping

78. If any bhikkhu should stand eavesdropping upon bhikkhus who are quarrelling, disputing, engaged in contention, [thinking], "I shall hear what they are saying," having done it for that reason and no other, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about objecting to formal acts

79. If any bhikkhu, having given his consent [= proxy vote] for lawful acts, should later engage in criticism, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about going not having given consent [= proxy vote]

80. If any bhikkhu, not having given his consent [= proxy vote], getting up from his seat, should depart while deliberation is still proceeding in the saṅgha, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The "worn thin [robe]" rule¹

81. If any bhikkhu should, after giving a robe [in company] with a united saṅgha, later engage in criticism, [saying], "Bhikkhus are apportioning the saṅgha's property according to acquaintanceship," there is an offence entailing expiation.

¹Or: The "Dabba" rule

pariṇāmaṇasikkhāpadaṃ

82. yo pana bhikkhu jānaṃ saṅghikaṃ lābhaṃ pariṇataṃ
puggalassa pariṇāmeyya, pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 156,18f.]

sahadhammikavaggo aṭṭhamo

5

i. ratanavaggo¹

antepurasikkhāpadaṃ

83. yo pana bhikkhu raṇṇo khattiyassa muddhābhisittassa²
anikkhantarājake aniggataratanake pubbe appaṭisaṃvidito
indakhīlaṃ atikkāmeyya,³ pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 160,14ff.]

10

ratanasikkhāpadaṃ

84. yo pana bhikkhu ratanaṃ vā ratanasammatam vā aññatra
ajjhārāmā vā ajjhāvasathā vā uggaṇheyya vā uggaṇhāpeyya
vā, pācittiyaṃ. ratanaṃ vā pana bhikkhunā ratanasammatam
vā ajjhārāme vā ajjhāvasathe vā uggaḥetvā vā uggaḥāpetvā⁴
15 vā nikkhipitabbaṃ yassa bhavissati, so harissatī ti. ayaṃ
tattha sāmīci. [Vin IV 163,13-18]

vikālagāmapavesanasikkhāpadaṃ

85. yo pana bhikkhu santaṃ bhikkhuṃ anāpucchā vikāle
gāmaṃ paviseyya aññatra tathārūpā accāyikā karaṇīyā,
20 pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 166,11ff.]

sūcigharasikkhāpadaṃ

86. yo pana bhikkhu aṭṭhimayaṃ vā dantamayaṃ vā visāṇa-
mayam vā sūcigharaṃ kārāpeyya, bhedanakaṃ pācittiyaṃ.
[Vin IV 167,24ff.]

¹Se so; other sources omit

²Vin E^c: muddhāvasi-

³Nā: -kka-

⁴Nā: uggaṇhā-

The rule about apportioning

82. If any bhikkhu should knowingly apportion to an individual an apportioned property belonging to the saṅgha, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The section regarding accordance with the law; the eighth

i. The section on treasure

The rule about the bedchamber

83. If any bhikkhu, not announced beforehand, should cross over the [bedchamber] threshold of a khattiya king, who has been anointed on the head, when the king has not departed and the [queen-]treasure has not withdrawn, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about treasure

84. If any bhikkhu should pick up or have picked up a treasure or what is reckoned as a treasure, other than in his own monastery or in his own dwelling place, there is an offence entailing expiation. But having picked up or having had picked up a treasure or what is reckoned a treasure in his own monastery or in his own dwelling place, it is to be deposited by a bhikkhu. [thinking], "He to whom it belongs will take it." This is the proper course here.

The rule about entering a village at the wrong time

85. If any bhikkhu should enter a village at the wrong time without asking leave of a bhikkhu if one is present, other than when there is something urgent to be done, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about needle cases

86. If any bhikkhu should have a needle case made of bone or ivory or horn, there is an offence entailing expiation with breaking up.

mañcapīṭhasikkhāpadaṃ

87. navaṃ pana bhikkhunā mañcaṃ vā pīṭhaṃ vā kāraya-
mānena atthaṅgulapādaṃ kāretabbāṃ sugataṅgulena
aññatra heṭṭhimāya¹ aṇiyā. taṃ atikkāmayato chedanakaṃ
5 pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 168.24-27]

tūlonaddhasikkhāpadaṃ

88. yo pana bhikkhu mañcaṃ vā pīṭhaṃ vā tūlonaddhaṃ
kāraṇeṃ uddānakaṃ pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 169.29f.]

nisīdanasikkhāpadaṃ

- 10 89. nisīdanaṃ pana bhikkhunā kārayamānena pamāṇikaṃ
kāretabbāṃ. tatr' idaṃ pamāṇaṃ: dīghaso dve vidatthiyo
sugatavidatthiyā, tiriyaṃ diyaḍḍhaṃ, dasā vidatthi. taṃ
atikkāmayato chedanakaṃ pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 171.11-14]

kaṇḍuppaṭicchādisikkhāpadaṃ

- 15 90. kaṇḍuppaṭicchādiṃ² pana bhikkhunā kārayamānena
pamāṇikā kāretabbā. tatr' idaṃ pamāṇaṃ: dīghaso catasso
vidatthiyo sugatavidatthiyā, tiriyaṃ dve vidatthiyo. taṃ
atikkāmayato chedanakaṃ pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 172.11-14]

vassikasāṭikasikkhāpadaṃ

- 20 91. vassikasāṭikaṃ pana bhikkhunā kārayamānena pamāṇikā
kāretabbā. tatr' idaṃ pamāṇaṃ: dīghaso cha vidatthiyo
sugatavidatthiyā, tiriyaṃ aḍḍhateyyā. taṃ atikkāmayato
chedanakaṃ pācittiyaṃ. [Vin IV 172.30-33]

¹ Nā: -tthi-

² Vin E^c. Nā. S^c: -p-

The rule about beds and benches

87. When a bhikkhu is having a new bed or bench made, it is to be made with legs eight fingers of the sugata finger high, other than [= excluding] the frame below. For one exceeding that, there is an offence entailing expiation with cutting down.

The rule about stuffed with cotton

88. If any bhikkhu should have a bed or bench stuffed with cotton, there is an offence entailing expiation with tearing off.

The rule about sitting cloths

89. When a bhikkhu is having a sitting cloth made, it is to be made according to the [prescribed] measurements. Herein these are the measurements: in length, two spans of the sugata span; in width, one and a half; the border a span. For one exceeding that, there is an offence entailing expiation with cutting down.

The rule about an itch-covering cloth

90. When a bhikkhu is having an itch-covering cloth made, it is to be made according to the [prescribed] measurements. Herein these are the measurements: in length, four spans of the sugata span; in width, two spans. For one exceeding that, there is an offence entailing expiation with cutting down.

The rule about a rains cloth

91. When a bhikkhu is having a rains cloth made, it is to be made according to the [prescribed] measurements. Herein these are the measurements: in length, six spans of the sugata span; in width, two and a half. For one exceeding that, there is an offence entailing expiation with cutting down.

Nandasikkhāpadaṃ

92. yo pana bhikkhu sugatacīvarappamāṇaṃ cīvaraṃ
 kārāpeyya, atirekaṃ vā, chedanakaṃ pācittiyaṃ. tatr' idaṃ
 sugatassa sugatacīvarappamāṇaṃ: dīghaso nava vidatthiyo
 5 sugatavidatthiyā, tiriyaṃ cha vidatthiyo. idaṃ sugatassa
 sugatacīvarappamāṇaṃ¹ ti. [Vin IV 173,22-26]

ratanavaggo navamo

- uddiṭṭhā kho āyasmanto dvenavuti pācittiyaṃ dhammā.
 tatth' āyasmante pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā?
 10 dutiyam pi pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? tatiyam pi
 pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? parisuddh' etth' āyas-
 manto, tasmā tuṇhī, evaṃ etaṃ dhārayāmi² ti. [Vin IV 174.8-
 12]

pācittiya³ niṭṭhitā.

¹Ñā: -pamāṇaṃ [sic] (omits ti)

²Ñā: -āmi (omits ti)

³Sc adds: dhammā

The "Nanda" rule

92. If any bhikkhu should have a robe made to the measurements of a sugata robe or larger, there is an offence entailing expiation with cutting down. Herein these are the measurements of the Sugata's sugata robe: in length, nine spans of the sugata span; in width, six spans. These are the measurements of the Sugata's sugata robe.

The section on treasure: the ninth

Recited, venerable sirs, are the ninety-two matters entailing expiation.

Herein I ask the venerable ones: Are you pure in this? A second time I ask: Are you pure in this? A third time I ask: Are you pure in this? The venerable ones are pure in this; therefore they are silent. Thus I record it.

The section on matters entailing
simple expiation is finished.

H. pāṭidesanīyā

ime kho pan' āyasmanto cattāro pāṭidesanīyā dhammā
uddesaṃ āgacchanti. [Vin IV 175.1f.]

paṭhamapāṭidesanīyasikkhāpadam

- 5 1. yo pana bhikkhu aññātikāya bhikkhuniyā antaragharaṃ
pavittihāya hatthato khādanīyaṃ¹ vā bhojanīyaṃ vā sahatthā
paṭiggahetvā khādeyya vā bhuñjeyya vā, paṭidesetabbaṃ tena
bhikkhunā gārayhaṃ āvuso dhammaṃ āpajjīm asappāyaṃ
pāṭidesanīyaṃ,² taṃ paṭidesemī ti. [Vin IV 176.8-13]

10 dutiyapāṭidesanīyasikkhāpadam

2. bhikkhū pan' eva kulesu nimantitā bhuñjanti. tatra ce sā³
bhikkhunī vosāsamānarūpā ttitā hoti idha sūpaṃ detha. idha
odanaṃ dethā ti, tehi bhikkhūhi sā bhikkhunī apasādetabbā
apasakka tāva bhagini, yāva bhikkhū bhuñjantī ti. ekassa pi
15 ce⁴ bhikkhuno na paṭibhāseyya⁵ taṃ bhikkhunim apasādetum
apasakka tāva bhagini, yāva bhikkhū bhuñjantī ti.
paṭidesetabbaṃ tehi bhikkhūhi gārayhaṃ āvuso dhammaṃ
āpajjimhā asappāyaṃ pāṭidesanīyaṃ, taṃ paṭidesemā ti. [Vin
IV 177.20-27]

20 tatiyapāṭidesanīyasikkhāpadam

3. yāni kho pana tāni sekkhasammatāni⁶ kulāni. yo pana
bhikkhu tathārūpesu sekkhasammatesu⁷ kulesu pubbe
animantito agilāno khādanīyaṃ vā bhojanīyaṃ⁸ vā sahatthā
paṭiggahetvā khādeyya vā, bhuñjeyya vā, paṭidesetabbaṃ

¹Vin E^c throughout: -ni-

²Vin E^c throughout: -ni-

³Ñā omits

⁴Vin E^c: ce pi

⁵Ñā, S^c: ppa-

⁶Vin E^c: -kh-

⁷Vin E^c: -kh-

⁸Vin E^c: -ni-

H. The matters to be confessed

Now, venerable sirs, these four matters to be confessed come up for recitation.

The first rule entailing confession

1. If any bhikkhu, having accepted with his own hand solid food or soft food from the hand of a bhikkhunī not related [to him] who has gone among the houses [= into a village], should chew or consume them, it is to be confessed by that bhikkhu [saying], "Friend, I have committed a censurable offence, unbecoming, to be confessed. That I confess."

The second rule entailing confession

2. [It may be that] bhikkhus have been invited among families [= into family homes] and are eating. If a bhikkhunī is standing there giving directions [saying], "Give sauce here, give rice there," that bhikkhunī is to be sent away by those bhikkhus, [saying], "Sister, go away while the bhikkhus are eating." If it should not occur even to one bhikkhu to send that bhikkhunī away, [saying], "Sister, go away while the bhikkhus are eating," it is to be confessed by those bhikkhus, [saying], "Friend, we have committed a censurable offence, unbecoming, to be confessed. That we confess."

The third rule entailing confession

3. There are those families approved as learners. If any bhikkhu, not being previously invited, [and] not sick, having accepted with his own hand solid food or soft food among such families which are approved as learners, should chew or consume it, it is to be confessed by that bhikkhu, [saying], "Friend, I have committed a censurable offence, unbecoming, to be confessed. That I confess."

tena bhikkhunā gārayhaṃ āvuso dhammaṃ āpajjīṃ
asappāyaṃ pāṭidesanīyaṃ, taṃ pāṭidesemī ti. [Vin IV 180,22–
27]

catutthapāṭidesanīyasikkhāpadaṃ

- 5 4. yāni kho pana tāni āraññakāni senāsanāni sāsāṅka-
sammātāni sappāṭibhayāni, yo pana bhikkhu tathārūpesu
senāsanesu¹ pubbe appaṭisaṃviditaṃ khādanīyaṃ² vā,
bhojanīyaṃ³ vā ajjhārāme sahatthā paṭiggahetvā agilāno
khādeyya vā, bhuñjeyya vā, pāṭidesetabbaṃ tena bhikkhunā
10 gārayhaṃ āvuso dhammaṃ āpajjīṃ asappāyaṃ pāṭidesanī-
yaṃ, taṃ pāṭidesemī ti. [Vin IV 182,36–83,5]

uddiṭṭhā kho āyasmanto cattāro pāṭidesanīyā dhammā.

- tatth' āyasmante pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā?
dutiyaṃ pi pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? tatiyaṃ pi
15 pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? parisuddh' etth' āyas-
manto, tasmā tuṇhī, evaṃ etaṃ dhārayāmī ti. [Vin IV 184,20–
24]

pāṭidesanīyā niṭṭhitā.

¹Ñā, S^c add: viharanto

²Vin E^c: -ni-

³Vin E^c: -ni-

The fourth rule entailing confession

4. There are those forest abodes [that are] agreed to be dangerous, frightening. If any bhikkhu [living] in such abodes having accepted with his own hand in his own monastery solid food or soft food not announced beforehand, not being sick, should chew or consume it, it is to be confessed by that bhikkhu [saying]. "Friend, I have committed a censurable offence, unbecoming, to be confessed. That I confess."

Recited, venerable sirs, are the four matters to be confessed.

Herein I ask the venerable ones: Are you pure in this? A second time I ask: Are you pure in this? A third time I ask: Are you pure in this? The venerable ones are pure in this; therefore they are silent. Thus I record it.

The matters to be confessed are finished.

I. sekhiyā¹

ime kho pan' āyasmanto sekhiyā dhammā uddesaṃ
āgacchanti. [Vin IV 185,1]

a. parimaṇḍalavaggo²

5 parimaṇḍalasikkhāpadaṃ

1. parimaṇḍalaṃ nivāseṣṣāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV
185,18]

[dutiya-parimaṇḍalasikkhāpadaṃ³]

2. parimaṇḍalaṃ pārūpissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV
10 185,27]

suppaṭicchannasikkhāpadaṃ

3. suppaṭicchanno⁴ antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
[Vin IV 186,8f.]

4. suppaṭicchanno⁵ antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā
15 karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 186,8f.]

susamvutasikkhāpadaṃ

5. susamvuto antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin
IV 186,19f.]

6. susamvuto antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin
20 IV 186,19f.]

¹Sc adds: chabbīsati sārūppa

²Sc so; other sources omit

³Title from Kkh, not in Pāt Bc

⁴Vin Ec, Nā: -p-

⁵Vin Ec, Nā: -p-

I. The rules of training

Now, venerable sirs, these rules of training come up for recitation.

a. The section about even all around

The rule about even all around

1. I shall wear [the under robe] even all round; [this is] a training to be done.

The second rule about even all around

2. I shall put on [the upper robe] even all round; [this is] a training to be done.

The rules about well covered

3. I shall go well covered among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

4. I shall sit well covered among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rules about being well restrained

5. I shall go well restrained among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

6. I shall sit well restrained among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

okkhittacakkhusikkhāpadam

7. okkhittacakkhu antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
[Vin IV 186.29f.]

8. okkhittacakkhu antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
5 [Vin IV 186.29f.]

ukkhittakasikkhāpadam

9. na ukkhittakāya antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
[Vin IV 187.4f.]

10. na ukkhittakāya antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā
10 karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 187.4f.]

parimaṇḍalavaggo paṭhamo¹b. ujjagghikavaggo²

ujjagghikasikkhāpadam

11. na ujjagghikāya³ antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā
15 karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 187.16f.]

12. na ujjagghikāya⁴ antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā
karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 187.16f.]

uccasaddasikkhāpadam

13. appasaddo antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
20 [Vin IV 187.27f.]

14. appasaddo antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
[Vin IV 187.27f.]

¹Ñā omits

²Se so; other sources omit

³Vin E^c: ujjhaggi-

⁴Vin E^c: -ujjhaggi-

The rules about downcast eyes

7. I shall go with downcast eyes among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done
8. I shall sit with downcast eyes among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rules about [robes] hitched up

9. I shall not go with [robes] hitched up among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.
10. I shall not sit with [robes] hitched up among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The section about even all round; the first

b. The section about a loud laugh

The rules about a loud laugh

11. I shall not go with a loud laugh [= laughing loudly] among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.
12. I shall not sit with a loud laugh [= laughing loudly] among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rules about a loud sound

13. I shall go with little noise [= speaking quietly] among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.
14. I shall sit with little noise [= speaking quietly] among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

kāyappacālakādisikkhāpadam

15. na kāyappacālakaṃ antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā
karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 188.4f.]

16. na kāyappacālakaṃ antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā
5 karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 188.4f.]

bāhuppacālakasikkhāpadam

17. na bāhuppacālakaṃ antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā
karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 188.17f.]

18. na bāhuppacālakaṃ antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā
10 karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 188.17f.]

sīsappacālakasikkhāpadam

19. na sīsappacālakaṃ antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā
karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 188.28f.]

20. na sīsappacālakaṃ antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā
15 karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 188.28f.]

ujjagghikavaggo dutiyo¹**c. khambhakatavaggo²****khambhakatasikkhāpadam**

21. na khambhakato antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā
20 karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 188.35f.]

22. na khambhakato antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā
karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 188.35f.]

ogunṭhitasikkhāpadam

23. na ogunṭhito antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
25 [Vin IV 189.9f.]

¹Nā omits

²Se so; other sources omit

The rules about swaying the body, etc.

15. I shall not go swaying my body among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

16. I shall not sit swaying my body among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rules about swinging the arms

17. I shall not go swinging my arms among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

18. I shall not sit swinging my arms among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rules about shaking the head

19. I shall not go shaking my head among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

20. I shall not sit shaking my head among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The section about a loud laugh; the second

c. The section about with arms akimbo

The rules about with arms akimbo

21. I shall not go with arms akimbo among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

22. I shall not sit with arms akimbo among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rules about with head covered

23. I shall not go with my head covered among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

24. na oguṇṭhito antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
[Vin IV 189,9f.]

ukkuṭikasikkhāpadam

25. na ukkuṭikāya antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
5 [Vin IV 189,19f.]

pallatthikasikkhāpadam

26. na pallatthikāya antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā
karaṇīyā.¹ [Vin IV 189,27f.]

sakkaccapaṭiggahaṇasikkhāpadam

10 27. sakkaccam piṇḍapātam paṭiggahessāmī ti sikkhā
karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 190,3f.]

pattasaññīpaṭiggahaṇasikkhāpadam

28. pattasaññī piṇḍapātam paṭiggahessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
[Vin IV 190,13f.]

15 samasūpakapaṭiggahaṇasikkhāpadam

29. samasūpakam piṇḍapātam paṭiggahessāmī ti sikkhā
karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 190,23f.]

samatittikasikkhāpadam

30. samatittikam² piṇḍapātam paṭiggahessāmī ti sikkhā
20 karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 190,34f.]

khambhakatavaggo tatiyo³

d. sakkaccavaggo⁴

sakkaccabhuñjanasikkhāpadam

31. sakkaccam piṇḍapātam bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
25 [Vin IV 191,9f.]

¹Nā adds: chabbīsati sārubbā

²Vin E^c so; B^c, Nā^c, S^c: samatitti-

³Nā omits

⁴S^c so; other sources omit

24. I shall not sit with my head covered among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about walking on toes or heels

25. I shall not go walking on toes or heels among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about lolling

26. I shall not sit lolling [= holding on to my knees ?] among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about accepting appreciatively

27. I shall accept alms food appreciatively; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about accepting with attention to the bowl

28. I shall accept alms food with attention to the bowl; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about accepting curry in proportion

29. I shall accept alms food with curry in proportion; [this is] a training to be done.

The rules about level with the edge

30. I shall accept alms food level with the edge [of the bowl]; [this is] a training to be done.

The section on arms akimbo; the third

d. The section about appreciatively

The rule about eating appreciatively

31. I shall eat alms food appreciatively; [this is] a training to be done.

pattasaññībhūñjanasikkhāpadam

32. pattasaññī piṇḍapātaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
[Vin IV 191.19f.]

sapaḍānasikkhāpadam

5 33. sapaḍānaṃ piṇḍapātaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
[Vin IV 191.28f.]

samasūpakasikkhāpadam

34. samasūpaṃ piṇḍapātaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā
karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 192.4f.]

10

nathūpakatasikkhāpadam

35. ña thūpakato¹ omadditvā piṇḍapātaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti
sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 192.15f.]

odanappaticchāḍanasikkhāpadam

36. na sūpaṃ vā byañjanaṃ vā odanena patīcchādessāmi
15 bhiyyokamyataṃ upādāyā ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV
192.27ff.]

sūpodanaviññattisikkhāpadam

37. na sūpaṃ vā odanaṃ vā agilāno attano atthāya
viññāpetvā bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 193.30f.]

20

ujjhānasaññīsikkhāpadam

38. na ujjhānasaññī paresaṃ pattam olokessāmī ti sikkhā
karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 194.4f.]

kabaḷasikkhāpadam

39. nātimahantaṃ kabaḷaṃ² karissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
25 [Vin IV 194.15f.]

¹Vin E^c, Ñā, S^c: -pato

²Ñā: kava-

The rule about eating with attention on the bowl

32. I shall eat alms food with attention on the bowl; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about methodically

33. I shall eat alms food methodically; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about curry in proportion

34. I shall eat alms food with curry in proportion; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about not from the top

35. I shall not eat alms food from the top, [but] having pressed it down; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about hiding food

36. I shall not hide curry or condiment with rice because of desire to get more; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about asking for curry and rice

37. I shall not, when not sick, having asked for curry or rice for myself, eat it; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about finding fault

38. I shall not, finding fault, look at the bowl of others; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about mouthfuls

39. I shall not make up too large a mouthful; [this is] a training to be done.

ālopasikkhāpadaṃ

40. parimaṇḍalaṃ ālopaṃ karissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 194,25f.]

*sakkaccavaggo catuttho*¹

5

*e. kavalavaggo*²*anāhaṭasikkhāpadaṃ*

41. na anāhaṭe kabaḷe mukhadvāraṃ vivarissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 195.1f.]

bhuñjamānasikkhāpadaṃ

10 42. na bhuñjamāno sabbhaṃ hatthaṃ mukhe pakkhipissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 195.10f.]

sakabaḷasikkhāpadaṃ

43. na sakabaḷena³ mukhena byāharissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 195.19f.]

15

piṇḍukkhepakasikkhāpadaṃ

44. na piṇḍukkhepakaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 195.27f.]

kabaḷāvacchedakasikkhāpadaṃ

20 45. na kabaḷāvacchedakaṃ⁴ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 196.1f.]

avagaṇḍakāraṇasikkhāpadaṃ

46. na avagaṇḍakāraṇaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 196.11f.]

¹Ñā omits

²S^c so: other sources omit

³Ñā. S^c: -kava-

⁴Ñā. S^c: kava-

The rule about a piece [of food]

40. I shall make a piece [of food] into a round [ball]; [this is] a training to be done.

The section about appreciatively; the fourth

e. The section about mouthfuls

The rule about not brought

41. I shall not open my mouth when the mouthful is not brought to it [= until the mouthful is brought]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about eating

42. I shall not put the whole hand into my mouth when eating; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about full [with food]

43. I shall not speak with my mouth full; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about tossing up a lump

44. I shall not eat tossing up a lump of food [into my mouth]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about breaking up a mouthful

45. I shall not eat breaking up a mouthful; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about stuffing out [the cheeks]

46. I shall not eat stuffing out my cheeks; [this is] a training to be done.

hatthaniddhunakasikkhāpadaṃ

47. na hatthaniddhunakaṃ¹ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
[Vin IV 196.21f.]

sittāvakāraśikkhāpadaṃ

5 48. na sittāvakāraśaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin
IV 196.31f.]

jivhānicchāraśikkhāpadaṃ

49. na jivhānicchāraśaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin
IV 197.6f.]

10 capucapukāraśikkhāpadaṃ

50. na capucapukāraśaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
[Vin IV 197.13f.]

kabaḷavaggo pañcamo²f. surusuruvaggo³

15 surusurukāraśikkhāpadaṃ

51. na surusurukāraśaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin
IV 197.34f.]

hatthanillehakādisikkhāpadaṃ

52. na hatthanillehakaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin
20 IV 198.5f.]

pattanillehakasikkhāpadaṃ

53. na pattanillehakaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin
IV 198.11f.]

¹Nā, S^c: -ddhū-

²Nā omits

³S^c reads: -vaggo; other titles have: -vagga (except for next *vagga* title.
p. 104); other sources omit

The rule about shaking the hand about

47. I shall not eat shaking my hand about; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about scattering rice about

48. I shall not eat scattering rice about; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about putting the tongue out

49. I shall not eat putting my tongue out; [this is] a training to be done. .

The rule about making a chomping
noise [= smacking my lips]

50. I shall not eat making a chomping noise [= smacking my lips]; [this is] a training to be done.

The section about mouthfuls; the fifth

f. The section on making a sucking noise

The rule about making a sucking sound

51. I shall not eat making a sucking sound; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about licking the hand

52. I shall not eat licking my hand; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about licking the bowl

53. I shall not eat licking the bowl; [this is] a training to be done.

oṭṭhanillehakasikkhāpadam

54. na oṭṭhanillehakam bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 198.17]

sāmisasikkhāpadam

5 55. na sāmisena hatthena pāṇiyathālakam paṭiggahessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 198.34f.]

sasitthakasikkhāpadam

56. na sasitthakam pattadhovanaṃ antaraghare chaḍḍessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.¹ [Vin IV 199.15f.]

10 chattapāṇisikkhāpadam

57. na chattapāṇissa agilānassa dhammam desessāmī² ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 200.9f.]

daṇḍapāṇisikkhāpadam

15 58. na daṇḍapāṇissa agilānassa dhammam desessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 200.25f.]

satthapāṇisikkhāpadam

59. na satthapāṇissa agilānassa dhammam desessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 200.36f.]

āvudhapāṇisikkhāpadam

20 60. na āvudhapāṇissa agilānassa dhammam desessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 201.6]

surusuruvaggo chaṭṭho³

¹Nā adds: samatimsa bhojanapaṭisaṃyuttā

²Nā throughout: desissāmī

³Nā omits

The rule about licking the lips

54. I shall not eat licking my lips; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about soiled by food

55. I shall not accept a drinking pot with a hand soiled by food; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about with rice grains

56. I shall not among the houses [= in a village] throw away bowl-washing [water] with rice grains in it; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about one with an umbrella in hand

57. I shall not teach Dhamma to one having an umbrella in his hand [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about one with a staff in hand

58. I shall not teach the Dhamma to one with a staff in his hand [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about one with a knife in hand

59. I shall not teach the Dhamma to one with a knife in his hand [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about one with a weapon in hand

60. I shall not teach the Dhamma to one with a weapon in his hand [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The section on making a sucking noise; the sixth

g. pādukavaggo¹

pādukasikkhāpadaṃ

61. na pādukārūḥassa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti
sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 201,14f.]

5 upāhanasikkhāpadaṃ

62. na upāhanārūḥassa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti
sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 201,21]

yānasikkhāpadaṃ

63. na yānagatassa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti sikkhā
10 karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 201,25f.]

sayanasikkhāpadaṃ

64. na sayanagatassa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti
sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 202,3f.]

pallatthikasikkhāpadaṃ

15 65. na pallatthikāya nisinnassa agilānassa dhammaṃ
desessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 202,12f.]

veṭṭhisikkhāpadaṃ

66. na veṭṭhisāsassa² agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti
sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 202,22f.]

20 oḡuṇṭhisikkhāpadaṃ

67. na oḡuṇṭhisāsassa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti
sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 202,34f.]

chamāsikkhāpadaṃ

25 68. na chamāya³ nisīditvā āsane nisinnassa agilānassa
dhammaṃ desessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 203,11f.]

¹S^c so (reading *pādukavaggo* for *pādukāvaggo*); other sources omit

²Vin E^c, Nā, S^c: -ṭṭh-

³Nā, S^c: -yam

g. The section on shoes

The rule about shoes

61. I shall not teach the Dhamma to one wearing shoes [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about sandals

62. I shall not teach the Dhamma to one wearing sandals [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about vehicles

63. I shall not teach the Dhamma to one in a vehicle [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about couches

64. I shall not teach the Dhamma to one on a couch [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about lolling

65. I shall not teach the Dhamma to one who sits lolling [= holding on to his knees ?] [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about wrapped round

66. I shall not teach the Dhamma to one with his head wrapped around [with a turban] [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about covered up

67. I shall not teach the Dhamma to one with his head covered up [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about on the ground

68. I shall not while sitting on the ground teach the Dhamma to one sitting on a seat [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

nīcāsanasikkhāpadaṃ

69. na nīce āsane nisīditvā ucce āsane nisinnassa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 203,22f.]

ṭhitasikkhāpadaṃ

5 70. na ṭhito nisinnassa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 204,33f.]

pacchatogamanasikkhāpadaṃ

71. na pacchato gacchanto purato gacchantassa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 205,4f.]

10 uppathenagamanasikkhāpadaṃ

72. na uppathena gacchanto pathena gacchantassa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.¹ [Vin IV 205,10f.]

²ṭhito-uccārasikkhāpadaṃ

15 73. na ṭhito agilāno uccāraṃ vā passāvaṃ vā karissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 205,16f.]

harite-uccārasikkhāpadaṃ

74. na harite agilāno uccāraṃ vā passāvaṃ vā kheḷaṃ vā karissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 205,25f.]

udake-uccārasikkhāpadaṃ

20 75. na udake agilāno uccāraṃ vā passāvaṃ vā kheḷaṃ vā karissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. [Vin IV 206,22f.]

pādukavaggo sattamo³

uddiṭṭhā kho āyasmanto sekhiyā dhammā.

tatth' āyasmante pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā?

25 dutiyam pi pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? tatiyam pi

¹Nā adds: soḷasa dhammadesanāpaṭisaṃyuttā

²Sc adds: tayo pakiṇṇakā ("the three miscellaneous rules")

³Nā (for p.s.): tayo pakiṇṇakā

The rule about low seats

69. I shall not while sitting on a low seat teach the Dhamma to one sitting on a high seat [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about standing

70. I shall not while standing teach the Dhamma to one sitting [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about going behind

71. I shall not while going behind teach the Dhamma to one going in front [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about going beside a path

72. I shall not while going beside a path teach the Dhamma to one going on the path [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about defæcating while standing

73. I shall not, [when] not sick, defæcate or urinate while standing up; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about defæcating on green plants

74. I shall not, [when] not sick, defæcate or urinate or spit on green plants; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about defæcating in water

75. I shall not, [when] not sick, defæcate or urinate or spit into water; [this is] a training to be done.

The section about shoes; the seventh

Recited, venerable sirs, are the rules of training.

Herein I ask the venerable ones: Are you pure in this? A second time I ask: Are you pure in this? A third time I ask:

pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? parisuddh' etth' āyasmanto, tasmā tuṇhī. evam etaṃ dhārayāmī ti. [Vin IV 206,31-35]

sekhiyā¹ niṭṭhitā.

5

J. adhikaraṇasamatha

²ime kho pan' āyasmanto satta³ adhikaraṇasamathā dhammā uddesaṃ āgacchanti.

uppannuppannānaṃ adhikaraṇānaṃ samathāya vūpa-samāya

- 10 sammukhāvinayo dātabbo,
sativinayo dātabbo,
amūlḥavinayo dātabbo,
paṭiññāya kāretabbam,⁴
yebhuyyasikā,
15 tassapāpiyasikā,⁵
tiṇavatthārako ti.

uddiṭṭhā kho āyasmanto satta⁶ adhikaraṇasamathā dhammā.

- tatt' āyasmante pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā?
20 dutiyam pi pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? tatiyam pi
pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? parisuddh' etth' āyasmanto, tasmā tuṇhī. evam etaṃ dhārayāmī ti.⁷

uddiṭṭhaṃ kho āyasmanto nidānaṃ,
uddiṭṭhā cattāro pārājikā dhammā,

¹S^c adds: dhammā

²S^c adds: adhikaraṇasamatha

³Ñā: sattādhi-

⁴Ñā (for p.k.): paṭiññātakaraṇaṃ; S^c v.l.: paṭiññātakāra

⁵Vin E^c: -piyya-

⁶Ñā: sattādhi-

⁷Ñā adds: sattādhikaraṇasamathā niṭṭhitā; S^c adds: adhikaraṇasamathā dhammā niṭṭhitā

Are you pure in this? The venerable ones are pure in this; therefore they are silent. Thus I record it.

The rules of training are finished.

J. The settlement of legal processes

Now, venerable sirs, these seven matters for the settlement of legal processes come up for recitation.

For the settlement, for the stilling of legal processes whenever they may arise:

1. A verdict "in the presence of" may be given;
2. A verdict of mindfulness may be given;
3. A verdict of insanity may be given;
4. It may be carried out according to what is admitted;
5. The decision of the majority;
6. By [giving a penalty] to one for further evil;
7. The covering up [as] with grass.

Recited, venerable sirs, are the seven matters for the settlement of legal processes.

Herein I ask the venerable ones: Are you pure in this? A second time I ask: Are you pure in this? A third time I ask: Are you pure in this? The venerable ones are pure in this; therefore they are silent. Thus I record it.

The settlement of legal processes is finished.

Recited, venerable sirs, is the introduction, recited are the four matters entailing defeat,

uddiṭṭhā terasa saṅghādisesā dhammā,
 uddiṭṭhā dve aniyatā dhammā,
 uddiṭṭhā tiṃsa nissaggiyā pācittiya dhammā,
 uddiṭṭhā dvenāvuti pācittiya dhammā,
 uddiṭṭhā cattāro pāṭidesaniyā dhammā,
 uddiṭṭhā sekhiyā dhammā,
 uddiṭṭhā satta¹ adhikaraṇasamathā dhammā.

ettakaṃ tassa Bhagavato suttāgataṃ suttapariyāpannaṃ
 anvaddhamāsaṃ² uddesaṃ āgacchati. tattha sabbeḥ' eva
 samaggehi sammodamānehi avivadamānehi³ sikkhitabban ti.
 [Vin IV 207.1-19]

vitthāruddeso pañcamo⁴

Bhikkhupātimokkhaṃ⁵ niṭṭhitam.

¹ Nā: sattādhi-

² Nā, S^c: -dḍh-

³ Nā: -vā-

⁴ B^c so; other editions omit

⁵ Nā: -pāti-

recited are the thirteen matters entailing a formal meeting
of the saṅgha,
recited are the two indefinite matters,
recited are the thirty matters entailing expiation with
forfeiture,
recited are the ninety-two matters entailing expiation,
recited are the four matters to be confessed,
recited are the rules of training,
recited are the seven matters for the settlement of legal
processes.

So much, come down in the sutta of the Bhagavant,
contained in the sutta, comes up for recitation every half
month. Herein all are to train — united, in agreement, not
disputing.

The recitation of the enumeration; the fifth

The Bhikkhu Pātimokkha is finished.

II. Bhikkhunīpātimokkhapāli

namo tassa Bhagavato arahato sammāsambuddhassa.

A. [pubbakiccaṃ]

1. pubbakaraṇaṃ (4)

- 5 sammañjanī padīpo ca udakaṃ āsanena ca.
 uposathassa etāni pubbakaraṇaṃ ti vuccati.

[Sp V 1063.3f.]

2. pubbakiccaṃ (5)

- 10 chanda-pārisuddhi-utukkhānaṃ bhikkhunīgaṇaṇā ca
 ovādo.
 uposathassa etāni pubbakiccan ti vuccati.

[Cf. Sp V 1063.6f.]

3. pattakalla-aṅgā (4)

- 15 uposatho, yāvatikā ca bhikkhunī¹ kammappattā.
 sabhāgāpattiyo ca na vijjanti.
 vajjanīyā ca puggalā tasmim na honti,
 pattakallan ti vuccati.

[Cf. Sp V 1063.10-13]

- 20 pubbakaraṇapubbakiccāni samāpetvā desitāpattikassa
 samaggassa bhikkhunīsaṅghassa anumatiyā pātimokkhaṃ
 uddisituṃ ārādhanāṃ karoma.²

¹Wij: -niyo

²Wij: -mi

II. The Text of the Bhikkhunī Pātimokkha

*Homage to the Bhagavant, the arahat,
the fully and perfectly awakened one.*

A. [The preliminary duty]¹

1. The preliminary function

[Sweeping the place for the uposatha with] a broom and [lighting] a lamp, and [preparing] water [for drinking and for washing] together with seat[s]; these are called the preliminary functions of the uposatha day.

2. The preliminary duties

[The declaration of] purity [on behalf of absent bhikkhunīs], [bringing] consent [to the recitation on behalf of bhikkhunīs who are ill], announcing the time [to recite the Pātimokkha], counting the [participating] bhikkhunīs, and the exhortation [of the bhikkhunīs], these are called the preliminary duties of the uposatha day.

3. The appropriate time

[It is the day for the] uposatha; and as many bhikkhunīs [as are required] have arrived for the formal proceeding; and there are none [of the bhikkhunīs who are guilty of] the same offences; and there are no individuals who are to be avoided. This is called the appropriate time.

Having finished the preliminary works and duties, with the permission of the united bhikkhunī saṅgha, which has

¹For this section, see the notes with the Bhikkhu Pātimokkha, p. 3.

B. nidānuddeso¹

suṇātu me ayye saṅgho, ajj' uposatho pannaraso. yadi saṅghassa pattakallaṃ, saṅgho uposathaṃ kareyya, pāti-mokkhaṃ uddiseyya.

- 5 kiṃ saṅghassa pubbakiccaṃ? pārisuddhiṃ ayyāyo ārocetha. pātimokkhaṃ uddisissāmi, taṃ sabbā va santā sādhukaṃ suṇoma manasikaroma.

yassā siyā āpatti, sā āvikareyya. asantiyā āpattiyā tuṇhī bhavitabbaṃ.

- 10 tuṇhībhāvena kho paṇāyyāyo, parisuddhā ti vedissāmi.

yathā kho pana paccekapuṭṭhassa² veyyākaraṇaṃ hoti, evaṃ evaṃ³ evarūpāya parisāya yāvatatīyaṃ anusāvitam⁴ hoti.

- yā pana bhikkhunī yāvatatīyaṃ anusāviyamāne⁵ saramānā
15 santiṃ āpattiṃ n' āvikareyya, sampajānamusāvād' assā hoti. sampajānamusāvādo kho paṇāyyāyo antarāyiko dhammo vutto Bhagavatā.

tasmā saramānāya bhikkhuniyā āpannāya visuddhā-pekkhāya santi āpatti āvikātabbā, āvikatā hi 'ssā phāsu hoti.

- 20 (Cf. Vin II 102,33-103,11)

uddiṭṭhaṃ kho ayyāyo nidānaṃ.

tatthāyyāyo pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? dutiyam pi pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? tatiyam pi pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? parisuddh' etthāyyāyo, tasmā tuṇhī, evaṃ

- 25 etaṃ dhārāyāmī ti.

nidānaṃ niṭṭhitaṃ.⁶

¹Wij omits opening titles

²Wij: -cche--tthāya

³Wij: eva

⁴Vin E^c: -ss-

⁵Vin E^c: -ss-

⁶Wij, Phye: nidānuddeso paṭhamo.

confessed its offences, I shall make an undertaking to recite the Pātimokkha.

B. The recitation of the introduction

Noble lady, let the saṅgha hear me. Today is the uposatha of the fifteenth day. If the proper time has come for the saṅgha, the saṅgha should carry out the uposatha, it should recite the Pātimokkha.

What is the preliminary duty for the saṅgha? Noble ladies, announce [any declaration of] purity [given by absent bhikkhunīs]. I shall recite the Pātimokkha.

Let all of us being [present] listen and attend carefully. For whom there may be an offence, she should reveal it.

There being no offence, silence should be kept. I shall know by their silence that the noble ladies are pure.

As there is an answer for one questioned individually, so it is proclaimed up to the third time in such an assembly [as this].

If any bhikkhunī, when it is being proclaimed up to the third time, on remembering it, should not reveal an offence which exists, it is a conscious lie for her. Noble ladies, a conscious lie has been pronounced by the Bhagavant to be an obstructing matter.

Therefore any offence which exists is to be revealed by a bhikkhunī, who having committed an offence, remembers it and looks for purification. When revealed, it is good for her.

Recited, noble ladies, is the introduction.

Herein I ask the noble ladies: Are you pure in this? A second time I ask: Are you pure in this? A third time I ask: Are you pure in this? The noble ladies are pure in this; therefore they are silent. Thus I record it.

The introduction is finished.

C. pārājikuddeso

tatr' ime aṭṭha pārājikā dhammā uddesaṃ āgacchanti.

methunadhammasikkhāpadaṃ

1. yā pana bhikkhunī chandaso methunaṃ dhammaṃ paṭi-
5 seveyya antamaso tiracchānagatena pi, pārājikā hoti
asaṃvāsā. (Cf. BhPār no. 1, Vin III 23.33-36)

adinnādānasikkhāpadaṃ

2. yā pana bhikkhunī gāmā vā araṇṇā vā adinnaṃ theyya-
saṅkhātāṃ ādiyeyya yathārūpe adinnādāne rājāno coraṃ
10 gahetvā haneyyumaṃ vā bandheyumaṃ vā pabbājeyyumaṃ vā corā
'si bālā 'si mūlā 'si thenā 'sī ti, tathārūpaṃ bhikkhunī
adinnaṃ ādiyamānā ayam pi pārājikā hoti asaṃvāsā. (Cf.
BhPār no. 2, Vin III 46.16-20)

manussaviggahasikkhāpadaṃ

- 15 3. yā pana bhikkhunī saṅcicca manussaviggahaṃ jīvītā
voropeyya satthahāraṃ vā 'ssa pariyeseyya maraṇavaṇṇaṃ
vā saṃvaṇṇeyya maraṇāya vā samādapeyya ambho purisa
kiṃ tuyh' iminā pāpakena dujjīvitena? matan te jīvītā¹ seyyo
ti, iti cittamanā cittasaṅkappā anekapariyāyena maraṇa-
20 vaṇṇaṃ vā saṃvaṇṇeyya maraṇāya vā samādapeyya, ayam
pi pārājikā hoti asaṃvāsā. (Cf. BhPār no. 3, Vin III 73.10-16)

¹Wij: ji-

C. The recitation of the [rules entailing] defeat

Herein these eight matters entailing defeat come up for recitation.

The rule about sexual intercourse

1. [= Bh 1] Whatever bhikkhunī should willingly engage in sexual intercourse even with a male animal, she becomes defeated, not in communion.

The rule about taking what is not given

2. [= Bh 2] Whatever bhikkhunī should take away from a village or from a forest what is not given in a way which is called theft, in such manner of taking what is not given that kings, having arrested the robber, would beat or would bind or would expel her, [saying], "You are a robber, you are a fool, you are stupid, you are a thief," the bhikkhunī taking anything not given of such a nature, she too becomes defeated, not in communion.

The rule about a human being

3. [= Bh 3] Whatever bhikkhunī should intentionally deprive a human being of life, or seek out a [life-]taking weapon for him, or should utter praise of death, or should urge him towards death, [saying], "Good man, what [good] to you is this miserable life? Death is better for you than life," having such thoughts in mind and such intentions in mind, in many ways should utter praise of death, or should urge him towards death, she too becomes defeated, not in communion.

uttarimanussadhammasikkhāpadam

4. yā pana bhikkhunī anabhijānaṃ uttarimanussadhammaṃ
attupanāyikaṃ alamariyāñānadassanaṃ samudācareyya iti
jānāmi, iti passāmī ti, tato aparena samayena samanuggā-
5 hīyamānā¹ vā asamanuggāhīyamānā² vā āpannā visuddhā-
pekkhā evaṃ vadeyya ajānaṃ evaṃ ayye avacaṃ jānāmi,
apassaṃ passāmi, tucchaṃ musā vilapin ti, aññatra adhi-
mānā, ayam pi pārājikā hoti asaṃvāsā. (Cf. BhPār no. 4, Vin
III 133,12-16)

10 ubbhajāṇumaṇḍalikāsikkhāpadam

5. yā pana bhikkhunī avassutā avassutassa purisapuggalassa
adhakkhakam³ ubbhajāṇumaṇḍalaṃ āmasanaṃ vā parāma-
sanaṃ⁴ vā gahaṇaṃ vā chupanaṃ vā paṭipīlanaṃ⁵ vā sādī-
yeyya, ayam pi pārājikā hoti asaṃvāsā ubbhajāṇumaṇḍalikā.
15 (Vin IV 213,34-38 [BhīPār no. 1 in Vin])

vajjapaṭicchādikāsikkhāpadam

6. yā pana bhikkhunī jānaṃ pārājikaṃ dhammaṃ ajjhā-
pannaṃ bhikkhuniṃ n' ev' attanā paṭicodeyya na gaṇassa
āroceyya, yadā ca sā ṭhitā vā assa cutā vā nāsītā vā avassaṭṭā⁶
20 vā sā pacchā evaṃ vadeyya pubb' evāhaṃ ayye aññasiṃ
etaṃ bhikkhuniṃ evarūpā ca evarūpā ca sā bhaginī ti, no ca
kho attanā paṭicodessaṃ⁷ na gaṇassa ārocessaṃ⁸ ti; ayam pi
pārājikā hoti asaṃvāsā vajjapaṭicchādikā.⁹ (Vin IV 216,31-
17,2 [BhīPār no. 2 in Vin])

¹Se, Wij: -hi-

²Se, Wij: -hi-

³Wij: adhakkham

⁴Wij: prā- [sic]

⁵Vin E^c: pati-

⁶Vin E^c, Se: -s-

⁷Vin E^c: -deyyaṃ

⁸Vin E^c: -ceyyan

⁹Se: -pp-

The rule about a superhuman state

4. [= Bh 4] Whatever bhikkhunī should, while not knowing, boast a superhuman state, knowledge and insight deserving the name “noble”, as being present in herself, [saying], “I know thus, I see thus”, then afterwards on another occasion should, whether being examined or not being examined, having committed the offence and looking for purification, say thus, “Noble lady, not knowing, I said, ‘I know’; not seeing, I said, ‘I see’; I spoke falsely, lying,” other than from an overestimation [of herself], she too becomes defeated, not in communion.

The rule about one touching above the circle of the knees

5. Whatever bhikkhunī, overflowing with desire, should consent to the rubbing or rubbing up against or taking hold of or touching or pressing against, below the collarbone, above the circle of the knees, of a male person who is overflowing with desire, she too becomes defeated, not in communion, [being] one who touches above the circle of the knees.

The rule about the concealer of a fault

6. Whatever bhikkhunī, knowing that a bhikkhunī has committed a matter entailing defeat, should neither herself reprove her, nor speak to a group, but when she may be remaining [as a bhikkhunī] or deceased or expelled or withdrawn, should afterwards speak thus, “Noble ladies, before I knew this bhikkhunī, she was a sister like this and that, [but I thought,] ‘I will neither myself reprove her nor speak to a group’,” she too becomes defeated, not in communion, [being] one who conceals a fault.

ukkhittānuvattikāsikkhāpadaṃ

7. yā pana bhikkhunī samaggena saṅghena ukkhittaṃ
bhikkhuṃ dhammena vinayena satthusāsanena anādaraṃ
appaṭikāraṃ¹ akatasahāyaṃ tam anuvatteyya, sā bhikkhunī
5 bhikkhunīhi evaṃ assa vacanīyā eso kho ayye bhikkhu
samaggena saṅghena ukkhitto dhammena vinayena satthu-
sāsanena anādaroappaṭikāro² akatasahāyo, māyye etaṃ
bhikkhuṃ anuvattī ti. evañ ca sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi
vuccamānā tath' eva paggaṇheyya, sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi
10 yāvattiyaṃ samanubhāsitaṭṭhā tassa paṭinissaggāya. yāva-
tatiyaṃ ce samanubhāsiyamānā taṃ paṭinissajjeyya, icc etaṃ
kusalaṃ. no ce paṭinissajjeyya, ayam pi pārājikā hoti
asaṃvāsā ukkhittānuvattikā. (Vin IV 218,14-25 [BhīPār no. 3
in Vin])

15

aṭṭhavatthukāsikkhāpadaṃ

8. yā pana bhikkhunī avassutā avassutassa purisapuggalassa
hatthaggaṇaṃ³ vā sādiyeyya saṅghāṭikaṇṇaggahaṇaṃ⁴ vā
sādiyeyya santitṭheyya vā, sallapeyya vā saṅketam vā
gaccheyya purisassa vā abbhāgamanam sādiyeyya channaṃ
20 vā anupaviseyya kāyaṃ vā tadatthāya upasaṃhareyya etassa
asaddhammassa paṭisevanatthāya, ayam pi pārājikā hoti
asaṃvāsā aṭṭhavatthukā. (Vin IV 220,33-21,4 [BhīPār no. 4 in
Vin])

¹Vin E^c: apa-²Vin E^c: apa-³Vin E^c: -g-⁴Vin E^c: -g-

The rule about the follower of one who is suspended

7. Whatever bhikkhunī should imitate him, a bhikkhu suspended by a united saṅgha, one who is disrespectful towards, who does not make amends towards, one who is unfriendly towards the rule, the discipline, the teacher's instruction, that bhikkhunī should be spoken to by the bhikkhunīs thus, "Noble lady, this bhikkhu, suspended by a united sangha, is disrespectful towards, does not make amends towards, is unfriendly towards the rule, the discipline, the teacher's instruction. Do not imitate this bhikkhu, noble lady." And should that bhikkhunī, being spoken to thus by the bhikkhunīs, persist in the same way [as before], that bhikkhunī should be admonished by the bhikkhunīs up to the third time to give up that [course of action]. If, being admonished up to the third time, she should give it up, that is good. But if she should not give it up, she too becomes defeated, not in communion, [being] the follower of one who is suspended.

The rule about the doer of the eight things

8. Whatever bhikkhunī, overflowing with desire, for the sake of following what is verily not the rule, should consent to the holding of the hand by a male person who is overflowing with desire or should consent to the holding of the edge of [her] outer cloak or should stand or should talk or should go to a rendezvous or should consent to a man's approaching [her] or should enter into a covered place or should dispose the body for such a purpose, she too becomes defeated, not in communion, [being] a doer of the eight things.

uddiṭṭhā kho ayyāyo aṭṭha pārājikā dhammā. yesaṃ bhikkhunī aññataraṃ vā aññataraṃ vā āpajjitvā na labhati bhikkhunīhi saddhiṃ saṃvāsaṃ, yathā pure tathā pacchā, pārājikā hoti asaṃvāsā.

- 5 tatthāyyāyo¹ pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? dutiyam pi pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? tatiyam pi pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? parisuddh' etthāyyāyo,² tasmā tuṇhī, evaṃ etaṃ dhārayāmi ti. (Vin IV 222,9-15)

pārājikaṃ³ niṭṭhitam.⁴

¹Vin E^c: tatth' ayyāyo

²Vin E^c: etth' ayyāyo

³Sc adds: dhammā

⁴Sc: -tā: Wij., Phye (for p.n.): pārājikuddeso dutiyo

Recited, noble ladies, are the eight matters entailing defeat. If a bhikkhunī has committed one or other of these offences. she is no longer allowed to [live in] communion with bhikkhunīs; as [she was] before [ordination] so [she is] after [the confession of the offence]; she becomes defeated, not in communion.

Herein I ask the noble ladies: Are you pure in this? A second time I ask: Are you pure in this? A third time I ask: Are you pure in this? The noble ladies are pure in this; therefore they are silent. Thus I record it.

The defeat section is finished.

D. saṅghādisesuddeso

ime kho panāyyāyo¹ sattarasa saṅghādisesā dhammā
uddesaṃ āgacchanti. (Vin IV 223.1f.)

ussayavādikāsikkhāpadaṃ

- 5 1. yā pana bhikkhunī ussayavādikā² vihareyya gahapatinā vā
gahapatiputtana vā dāsena vā kammakārena³ vā antamaso
saṃaṇaparibbājakenāpi, ayam pi⁴ bhikkhunī paṭhamā-
pattikaṃ dhammaṃ āpannā nissāraṇīyaṃ saṅghādisesaṃ.
(Vin IV 224.25–28)

10 corīvutthāpikāsikkhāpadaṃ⁵

2. yā pana bhikkhunī jānaṃ coriṃ vajjhaṃ⁶ viditaṃ anapa-
loketvā rājānaṃ vā saṅghaṃ vā gaṇaṃ vā pūgaṃ vā seṇiṃ
vā aññatra kappā vutthāpeyya, ayam pi bhikkhunī paṭhamā-
pattikaṃ dhammaṃ āpannā nissāraṇīyaṃ saṅghādisesaṃ.
15 (Vin IV 226.18–22)

ekagāmantaragamanasikkhāpadaṃ

3. yā pana bhikkhunī ekā vā gāmantaraṃ gaccheyya ekā vā
nadīpāraṃ gaccheyya ekā vā rattiṃ vipavaseyya ekā vā
gaṇamhā ohiyeyya, ayam pi bhikkhunī paṭhamāpattikaṃ
20 dhammaṃ āpannā nissāraṇīyaṃ saṅghādisesaṃ. (Vin IV
229.35–30.1)

¹Vin E^c: pan' a-

²S^c: usuyya- (but the title of the rule is as B^c)

³Wij 1./.: -ka-

⁴Vin E^c, Wij omit

⁵S^c: -pī-

⁶S^c: -jjha-vi-

D. The recitation of the saṅghādisesa [rules]

Now, noble ladies, these seventeen matters entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha come up for recitation.

The rule about speaking in envy

1. Whatever bhikkhunī should be one speaking in envy about a householder or a householder's son or a slave or a workman or even about a wanderer who is a recluse, that bhikkhunī too has committed a matter that is an offence at once, entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha involving [temporary] exclusion.

The rule about one sponsoring a woman thief

2. Whatever bhikkhunī should knowingly sponsor a woman thief found to deserve death, without having obtained permission from a king or a saṅgha or a group or a guild or a company, unless she is allowable, that bhikkhunī too has committed a matter that is an offence at once, entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha involving [temporary] exclusion.

The rule about going to the [next] village alone

3. Whatever bhikkhunī should go to the [next] village alone or should go to the other bank of a river alone or should be away for a night alone or should stay behind a group alone, that bhikkhunī too has committed a matter that is an offence at once, entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha involving [temporary] exclusion.

ukkhittaka-osāraṇasikkhāpadaṃ

4. yā pana bhikkhunī samaggena saṅghena ukkhittaṃ
bhikkhunīṃ dhammena vinayena satthusāsanena anapa-
loketvā kāraka-saṅghaṃ anaññāya gaṇassa chandaṃ osā-
5 reyya, ayam pi bhikkhunī paṭhamāpattikaṃ dhammaṃ
āpannā nissāraṇīyaṃ saṅghādisesaṃ. (Vin IV 231,30-34)

bhojanapaṭiggahaṇapaṭhamasikkhāpadaṃ¹

5. yā pana bhikkhunī avassutā avassutassa purisapuggalassa
hatthato khādanīyaṃ² vā bhojanīyaṃ³ vā sahatthā paṭigga-
10 hetvā khādeyya vā bhuñjeyya vā, ayam pi bhikkhunī
paṭhamāpattikaṃ dhammaṃ āpannā nissāraṇīyaṃ saṅghā-
disesaṃ. (Vin IV 233,8-12)

bhojanapaṭiggahaṇadutiyasikkhāpadaṃ⁴

6. yā pana bhikkhunī evaṃ vadeyya kin te ayye eso purisa-
15 puggalo karissati avassuto vā anavassuto vā yato tvaṃ
anavassutā, iṅgh'⁵ ayye yan te eso purisapuggalo deti khāda-
nīyaṃ⁶ vā bhojanīyaṃ⁷ vā taṃ tvaṃ sahatthā paṭiggahetvā
khāda vā bhuñja vā ti, ayam pi bhikkhunī paṭhamāpattikaṃ
dhammaṃ āpannā nissāraṇīyaṃ saṅghādisesaṃ. (Vin IV
20 234,24-30)

¹Kkh B^c: bhojanappa-²Vin E^c: -ni-³Vin E^c: -ni-⁴Kkh B^c: bhojanappa-⁵Wij: -gha⁶Vin E^c: -ni-⁷Vin E^c: -ni-

The rule about the restoration of one suspended

4. Whatever bhikkhunī, without having obtained permission from the saṅgha which carried out the proceedings in accordance with the rule, the discipline, the teacher's instruction, not having learnt the group's desire, should restore a bhikkhunī suspended by a united saṅgha, that bhikkhunī too has committed a matter that is an offence at once, entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha involving [temporary] exclusion.

- The first rule about accepting food

5. Whatever bhikkhunī, overflowing with desire, having accepted with her own hand solid food or soft food from the hand of a man overflowing with desire, should eat it or partake of it, that bhikkhunī too has committed a matter that is an offence at once, entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha involving [temporary] exclusion.

The second rule about accepting food

6. Whatever bhikkhunī should speak thus, "What can this man, whether he is overflowing with desire or not overflowing with desire, do to you, noble lady, since you are not overflowing with desire? Please, noble lady, whatever solid food or soft food this man is giving to you, eat or partake of it, having accepted it with your own hand," that bhikkhunī too has committed a matter that is an offence at once, entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha involving [temporary] exclusion.

sañcarittadisikkhāpadaṃ¹

7. yā pana bhikkhunī sañcarittaṃ saṃāpajjeyya itthiyā vā purisamatim, purisassa vā itthimatim, jāyattane vā jārattane vā antamaso taṅkhaṇikāya pi, ayam pi bhikkhunī paṭhamā-
 5 pattikaṃ dhammaṃ āpannā nissāraṇīyaṃ saṅghādisesaṃ.
 (Cf. BhSaṅgh no. 5, Vin III 139.7ff.)

duṭṭhadosasikkhāpadaṃ

8. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniṃ duṭṭhā dosā appatītā amūlakena pārājikena dhammena anuddhamseyya² app eva
 10 nāma naṃ imamhā brahmacariyā cāveyyan ti, tato aparena samayena samanuggāhīyamānā vā asamanuggāhīyamānā³ vā amūlakaṃ c' eva taṃ adhikaraṇaṃ hoti, bhikkhunī ca dosaṃ patitṭhāti, ayam pi bhikkhunī paṭhamāpattikaṃ dhammaṃ āpannā nissāraṇīyaṃ saṅghādisesaṃ. (Cf. BhSaṅgh no. 8,
 15 Vin III 163.21-26)

aññabhāgiyasikkhāpadaṃ

9. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniṃ duṭṭhā dosā appatītā aññabhāgiyassa adhikaraṇassa kiñci desaṃ lesamattaṃ upādāya pārājikena dhammena anuddhamseyya app eva
 20 nāma naṃ imamhā brahmacariyā cāveyyan ti, tato aparena samayena samanuggāhīyamānā⁴ vā asamanuggāhīyamānā⁵ vā aññabhāgiyaṃ c' eva taṃ adhikaraṇaṃ hoti, koci deso lesamatto upādinno, bhikkhunī ca dosaṃ patitṭhāti, ayam pi bhikkhunī paṭhamāpattikaṃ dhammaṃ āpannā nissāraṇīyaṃ saṅghādisesaṃ. (Cf. BhSaṅgh no. 9, Vin III 167.38-68.6)

¹Kkh B^c: -ttā-²Wij: annudham- [sic]³S^c, Wij: -hi-⁴S^c, Wij: -hi-⁵S^c, Wij: -hi-

The rule about acting as a go-between, etc.

7. Whatever bhikkhunī should act as a go-between [conveying] either a man's intentions to a woman or a woman's intentions to a man in respect of being a wife or being a paramour [or] even being a temporary [wife], that bhikkhunī too has committed a matter that is an offence at once, entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha involving [temporary] exclusion.

The rule about being corrupted and corrupting

8. Whatever bhikkhunī should, being corrupted, corrupting, displeased, accuse a bhikkhunī of an unfounded matter entailing defeat. [thinking], "Perhaps I may make her fall from this holy life," [and] then on another occasion, being questioned or not being questioned, that legal process turns out to be unfounded, and the bhikkhunī admits to corruption, that bhikkhunī too has committed a matter that is an offence at once, entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha involving [temporary] exclusion.

The rule about belonging to another class

9. Whatever bhikkhunī should, being corrupted, corrupting, displeased, accuse a bhikkhunī of a matter entailing defeat, taking merely as a pretext some point of a legal process connected with another class, [thinking], "Perhaps I may make her fall from this holy life," [and] then on another occasion, being questioned or not being questioned, that legal process turns out to be connected with another class, [and] some point has been used merely as a pretext, and the bhikkhunī admits to corruption, that bhikkhunī too has committed a matter that is an offence at once, entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha involving [temporary] exclusion.

sikkhaṃpaccācikkhaṇasikkhāpadam

10. yā pana bhikkhunī kupitā anattamanā evaṃ vadeyya
 Buddhaṃ paccācikkhāmi¹ ²dhammaṃ paccācikkhāmi
 saṅghaṃ paccācikkhāmi² sikkhaṃ paccācikkhāmi, kin nu
 5 'mā va samaṇiyo yā samaṇiyo Sakyadhītarō, sant' aññā pi
 samaṇiyo lajjiniyo kukkuccikā sikkhākāmā, tāsāhaṃ santike
 brahmacariyaṃ carissāmī ti, sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi evaṃ
 assa vacanīyā māyye kupitā anattamanā evaṃ avaca
 Buddhaṃ ³paccācikkhāmi dhammaṃ paccācikkhāmi
 10 saṅghaṃ paccācikkhāmi sikkhaṃ paccācikkhāmi, kin nu 'mā
 va 'samaṇiyo⁴ yā samaṇiyo⁵ Sakyadhītarō, sant' aññā pi
 samaṇiyo lajjiniyo kukkuccikā sikkhākāmā, tāsāhaṃ santike
 brahmacariyaṃ³ carissāmī ti. abhiraṃmāyye,⁶ svākkhāto
 dhammo, cara brahmacariyaṃ sammā dukkhassa anta-
 15 kiriyāyā ti. evañ ca sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā
 tath' eva paggaṇheyya, sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi yāva-
 tatiyaṃ samanubhāsitabbā tassa paṭinissaggāya. yāvatiyaṃ
 ce samanubhāsiyamānā taṃ paṭinissajjeyya, icc etaṃ
 kusalaṃ. no ce paṭinissajjeyya, ayam pi bhikkhunī yāvati-
 20 yakam dhammaṃ āpannā nissāraṇīyaṃ⁷ saṅghādisesaṃ.
 (BhīSaṅgh no. 7 in Vin; Vin IV 236.3-16)

¹Wij v.l.: paccakkhāmi

²⁻²Vin E^c: — pa —

³⁻³Vin E^c: ...

⁴Wij: -ni-

⁵Wij: -ni-; but -ṇi- three words later

⁶Vin E^c: -ram' ayye

⁷Wij: -nissārā- [sic]

The rule about repudiating the training

10. Whatever bhikkhunī, angry, displeased, should speak thus, “I repudiate the Buddha, I repudiate the Dhamma, I repudiate the saṅgha, I repudiate the training. What indeed are these recluses who are recluses, daughters of the Sakyans? For there are other recluses, conscientious, scrupulous, desirous of training; I will lead the holy life among these,” that bhikkhunī is to be spoken to by the bhikkhunīs thus, “Do not, noble lady, angry, displeased, speak thus, ‘I repudiate the Dhamma, I repudiate the saṅgha. I repudiate the training. What indeed are these recluses who are recluses, daughters of the Sakyans? For there are other recluses, conscientious, scrupulous, desirous of training; I will lead the holy life among these.’ Be satisfied, noble lady, the Dhamma is well preached; lead the holy life for the utter ending of ill.” And should that bhikkhunī, being spoken to thus by the bhikkhunīs, persist in the same way [as before], that bhikkhunī is to be admonished by the bhikkhunīs up to the third time to give up that [course of action]. If, being admonished up to the third time, she should give it up, that is good. If she should not give it up, that bhikkhunī too has committed a matter that is an offence after the third [admonition], entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha involving [temporary] exclusion.

adhikaraṇakupitasikkhāpadam¹

11. yā pana bhikkhunī kismiñcid eva adhikaraṇe paccākatā
kupitā anattamanā evaṃ vadeyya chandagāminiyo ca
bhikkhuniyo ²dosagāminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo mohagāminiyo
5 ca bhikkhuniyo² bhayagāminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo ti, sā
bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi evaṃ assa vacanīyā māyye kismiñcid
eva adhikaraṇe paccākatā kupitā anattamanā evaṃ avaca
chandagāminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo ³dosagāminiyo ca bhikkhu-
niyo mohagāminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo³ bhayagāminiyo ca
10 bhikkhuniyo ti. ayyā kho chandā pi gaccheyya dosā pi
gaccheyya mohā pi gaccheyya bhayā pi gaccheyyā ti. evañ ca
sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā tath' eva paggaṇheyya,
sā⁴ bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi yāvatatiyaṃ samanubhāsitabbā
tassa paṭinissaggāya. yāvatatiyañ ce samanubhāsiyamānā taṃ
15 paṭinissajjeyya, icc etaṃ kusalaṃ. no ce paṭinissajjeyya,
ayam pi bhikkhunī yāvatatiyakam dhammaṃ āpannā
nissāraṇiyaṃ saṅghādisesaṃ. (BhīSaṅgh no. 8 in Vin; Vin IV
238.11-24)

pāpasamācārapaṭhamasikkhāpadam

- 20 12. bhikkhuniyo pan' eva saṃsatthā viharanti pāpācārā pāpa-
saddā pāpasilokā bhikkhunīsaṅghassa vihesikā añña-
maññissā⁵ vajjappaṭicchādikā.⁴ tā bhikkhuniyo bhikkhunīhi evaṃ assu
vacanīyā bhaginiyo kho saṃsatthā viharanti ⁵pāpācārā pāpa-
saddā pāpasilokā bhikkhunīsaṅghassa vihesikā añña-
25 maññissā⁵ vajjappaṭicchādikā.⁶ viviccathāyye,⁷ vivekañ ñeva
bhaginīnaṃ saṅgho vaṇṇeti ti. evañ ca tā bhikkhuniyo
bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā tath' eva paggaṇheyyuṃ, tā

¹Sc: -pīta-²⁻²Vin Ec: — pa —³⁻³Vin Ec: — pa —⁴Vin Ec: -p-⁵⁻⁵Vin Ec: ...⁶Vin Ec: -p-⁷Vin Ec: -th' ayye

The rule about angry about some legal question

11. Whatever bhikkhunī, overthrown in some legal question, angry, displeased, should speak thus, "The bhikkhunīs are going [wrong] from desire, and the bhikkhunīs are going [wrong] from hatred, and the bhikkhunīs are going [wrong] from stupidity, and the bhikkhunīs are going [wrong] from fear," that bhikkhunī is to be spoken to by the bhikkhunīs thus, "Do not, noble lady, overthrown in some legal question, angry, displeased, speak thus, 'The bhikkhunīs are going [wrong] from desire, and the bhikkhunīs are going [wrong] from hatred, and the bhikkhunīs are going [wrong] from stupidity, and the bhikkhunīs are going [wrong] from fear.' The noble lady herself may go [wrong] from desire, and she may go [wrong] from hatred, and she may go [wrong] from stupidity, and she may go [wrong] from fear." And should that bhikkhunī, being spoken to thus by the bhikkhunīs, persist in the same way [as before], that bhikkhunī is to be admonished by the bhikkhunīs up to the third time to give up that [course of action]. If, being admonished up to the third time, she should give it up, that is good. If she should not give it up, that bhikkhunī too has committed a matter that is an offence after the third [admonition], entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha involving [temporary] exclusion.

The first rule about evil conduct

12. [It may be that] bhikkhunīs are living in company, of evil habits, of evil repute, of evil ways of living, vexing the bhikkhunī saṅgha, concealing one another's faults. Those bhikkhunīs are to be spoken to by the bhikkhunīs thus, "Sisters are living in company, of evil habits, of evil repute, of evil ways of living, vexing the bhikkhunī saṅgha, concealing one another's faults. Live apart, noble ladies; the saṅgha praises only the detachment of sisters." And should those bhikkhunīs, being spoken to thus by the bhikkhunīs, persist in the same way [as before], those bhikkhunīs are to

- bhikkhuniyo bhikkhunīhi yāvatatiyaṃ samanubhāsitaḥḥā tassa paṭinissaggāya. yāvatatiyaṃ ce samanubhāsīyamānā taṃ paṭinissajjeyyūṃ, icc etaṃ kusalaṃ. no ce paṭinissajjeyyūṃ, imā pi bhikkhuniyo yāvatatiyakāṃ dhammaṃ āpannā
- 5 nissāraṇīyaṃ saṅghādisesaṃ. (BhīSaṅgh no. 9 Vin IV 239,17-28)

pāpasamācārādutiyasikkhāpadaṃ

13. yā pana bhikkhunī evaṃ vadeyya¹ saṃsaṭṭhā va ayye tumhe viharatha, mā tumhe nānā viharittha, santi saṅghe
- 10 aññā pi bhikkhuniyo evācārā evaṃsaddā evaṃsilokā bhikkhunīsaṅghassa vihesikā aññamaññissā vajjappaṭicchādikā,² tā saṅgho na kiñci āha, tumhañ ñeva saṅgho uññāya paribhavana akkhantiyā vebhassiyā dubbalyā evaṃ āha bhaginiyo kho saṃsaṭṭhā viharanti pāpācārā pāpasaddā
- 15 pāpasilokā bhikkhunīsaṅghassa vihesikā aññamaññissā vajjappaṭicchādikā.³ viviccathāyye,⁴ vivekañ ñeva bhaginīnaṃ saṅgho vaṇṇetī ti, sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi evaṃ assa vacanīyā māyye evaṃ avaca saṃsaṭṭhā va⁵ ayye tumhe viharatha, mā tumhe nānā viharittha, santi saṅghe aññā pi
- 20 bhikkhuniyo evācārā evaṃsaddā evaṃsilokā bhikkhunīsaṅghassa vihesikā aññamaññissā vajjappaṭicchādikā,⁶ tā saṅgho na kiñci āha, tumhañ ñeva saṅgho uññāya paribhavana akkhantiyā vebhassiyā dubbalyā evaṃ āha bhaginiyo kho saṃsaṭṭhā viharanti pāpācārā pāpasaddā
- 25 pāpasilokā bhikkhunīsaṅghassa vihesikā aññamaññissā vajjappaṭicchādikā.⁷ viviccathāyye, vivekañ ñeva bhaginīnaṃ saṅgho⁵ vaṇṇetī ti. evaṃ ca sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi vucca-

¹Wij: -dd-

²Vin E^c, Wij: -p-

³Vin E^c, Wij: -p-

⁴Vin E^c: -th' ayye

⁵⁻⁵Vin E^c: ...

⁶Wij: -p-

⁷Wij: -p-

be admonished by the bhikkhunīs up to the third time to give up that [course of action]. If, being admonished up to the third time, they should give it up, that is good. If they should not give it up, those bhikkhunīs too have committed a matter that is an offence after the third [admonition], entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha involving [temporary] exclusion.

The second rule about evil conduct

13. Whatever bhikkhunī should speak thus, “Noble ladies, live as though in company, do not live apart. For there are in the saṅgha other bhikkhunīs of such habits, of such repute, of such ways of living, vexing the bhikkhunī saṅgha, concealing one another’s faults; the saṅgha does not say anything to them. It is only to you that the saṅgha, out of disrespect, out of contempt, out of impatience, in gossiping, on poor evidence, says this. ‘Sisters are living in company, of evil habits, of evil repute, of evil ways of living, vexing the bhikkhunī saṅgha, concealing one another’s faults. Live apart, noble ladies; the saṅgha praises only the detachment of sisters’,” that bhikkhunī is to be spoken to by the bhikkhunīs thus: “Do not, noble lady, speak thus, ‘Noble ladies, live as though in company, do not live apart. For there are in the saṅgha other bhikkhunīs of such habits, of such repute, of such ways of living, vexing the bhikkhunī saṅgha, concealing one another’s faults; the saṅgha does not say anything to them. It is only to you that the saṅgha, out of disrespect, out of contempt, out of impatience, in gossiping, on poor evidence, says this. ‘Sisters are living in company, of evil habits, of evil repute, of evil ways of living, vexing the bhikkhunī saṅgha, concealing one another’s faults. Live apart, noble ladies; the saṅgha praises only the detachment of sisters.’”” And should that bhikkhunī, being spoken to thus by the bhikkhunīs, persist in the same way [as before], that bhikkhunī is to be admonished by the

mānā tath' eva paggaṇheyya, sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi yāvatatiyaṃ samanubhāsitabbā tassa paṭinissaggāya. yāvatatiyañ ce samanubhāsiyamānā taṃ paṭinissajjeyya, icc etaṃ kusalaṃ. no ce paṭinissajjeyya, ayam pi bhikkhunī yāvatatiyakam dhammaṃ āpannā nissāraṇīyaṃ saṅghādisesaṃ. (BhīSaṅgh no. 10 in Vin: Vin IV 241.17-33)

saṅghabhedakādisikkhāpadaṃ

14. yā pana bhikkhunī samaggassa saṅghassa bhedāya parakkameyya, bhedanasamvattanikaṃ vā adhikaraṇaṃ samādāya paggayha tiṭṭheyya. sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi evam assa vacanīyā māyyā¹ samaggassa saṅghassa bhedāya parakkami, bhedanasamvattanikaṃ vā adhikaraṇaṃ² samādāya paggayha atṭhāsi. sametāyyā saṅghena, samaggo hi saṅgho sammodamāno avivadamāno ekuddeso phāsu viharatī ti. evañ ca sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā tath' eva paggaṇheyya, sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi yāvatatiyaṃ samanubhāsitabbā tassa paṭinissaggāya. yāvatatiyañ³ ce samanubhāsiyamānā taṃ paṭinissajjeyya, icc etaṃ kusalaṃ. no ce paṭinissajjeyya, ayam pi bhikkhunī yāvatatiyakam dhammaṃ āpannā nissāraṇīyaṃ saṅghādisesaṃ. (Cf. BhSaṅgh no. 10, Vin III 172.31-73.4)

bhedānuvattakasikkhāpadaṃ

15. tassā yeva kho pana bhikkhuniyā bhikkhuniyo honti anuvattikā vaggavādikā ekā vā dve vā tisso vā, tā evaṃ vadeyyuṃ māyyāyo etaṃ bhikkhuniṃ kiñci avacuttha, dhammavādinī⁴ c' esā bhikkhunī, vinayavādinī c' esā bhikkhunī, amhākañ c' esā bhikkhunī chandañ ca ruciñ ca ādāya voharati, jānāti, no bhāsati, amhākaṃ p' etaṃ khamatī ti. tā bhikkhuniyo bhikkhunīhi evam assu vacanīyā māyyāyo

¹Se: mā ayyā; Wij: māyye

²Se: -ṇa-sa-

³Wij: ya- [sic]

⁴Wij: -va-

bhikkhunīs up to the third time to give up that [course of action]. If, being admonished up to the third time, she should give it up, that is good. If she should not give it up, that bhikkhunī too has committed a matter that is an offence after the third [admonition], entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha involving [temporary] exclusion.

The rules about schism in the saṅgha, etc.

14. Should any bhikkhunī attempt to cause schism in a united saṅgha or should she persist having undertaken and having taken up a legal process conducive to schism, that bhikkhunī is to be spoken to by the bhikkhunīs thus, “Do not, noble lady, attempt to cause schism in a united saṅgha; do not persist having undertaken and having taken up a legal process conducive to schism. Let the noble lady be at peace with the saṅgha; for the saṅgha, united, in agreement, not disputing, having a united recitation [of the Pātimokkha, etc.], lives comfortably.” And should that bhikkhunī, being spoken to thus by the bhikkhunīs, persist in the same way [as before], that bhikkhunī is to be admonished by the bhikkhunīs up to the third time to give up that [course of action]. If, being admonished up to the third time, she should give it up, that is good. If she should not give it up, that bhikkhunī too has committed a matter that is an offence after the third [admonition], entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha involving [temporary] exclusion.

The rule about siding with schism

15. [It may be that] there are bhikkhunīs who are followers of that same bhikkhunī, who take her part, one or two or three. They may say thus, “Do not, noble ladies, say anything to that bhikkhunī; that bhikkhunī is a speaker of Dhamma, and that bhikkhunī is a speaker of Vinaya, and that bhikkhunī speaks in accordance with our desire and choice, she knows and speaks [with us], and that suits us.” Those bhikkhunīs are to be spoken to by the bhikkhunīs thus, “Do not, noble ladies,

- evaṃ avacuttha, na c' esā bhikkhunī dhammavādinī, na c' esā bhikkhunī vinayavādinī, māyyānam pi saṅghabhedo ruccittha, sametāyyānam saṅghena, samaggo hi saṅgho sammodamāno avivadamāno ekuddeso phāsu viharatī ti.
- 5 evaṃ ca tā bhikkhuniyo bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā tath' eva paggaṇheyyum, tā bhikkhuniyo bhikkhunīhi yāvatatiyaṃ samanubhāsītābbaṃ tassa paṭinissaggāya. yāvatatiyaṃ ce samanubhāsīyamānā taṃ paṭinissajjeyyum, icc etaṃ kusalam. no ce paṭinissajjeyyum, imā pi bhikkhuniyo yāvatatiyakam dhammaṃ āpannā nissāraṇīyaṃ saṅghādisesaṃ. (Cf. BhSaṅgh no. 11, Vin III 175.14-28)

dubbacasikkhāpadam

16. bhikkhunī pan' eva dubbacajātikā hoti, uddesapariyāpannesu sikkhāpadesu bhikkhunīhi sahadhammikaṃ vuccamānā attānaṃ avacanīyaṃ karoti mā maṃ ayyāyo kiñci
- 15 avacuttha kalyāṇaṃ vā pāpakaṃ vā, aham pāyyāyo na kiñci vakkhāmi kalyāṇaṃ vā pāpakaṃ vā, viramathāyyāyo mama vacanāyā ti. sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi evaṃ assa vacanīyā māyyā¹ attānaṃ avacanīyaṃ akāsi, vacanīyaṃ eva ayyā
- 20 attānaṃ karotu, ayyā pi bhikkhuniyo vadatu saha dhammena, bhikkhuniyo pi ayyaṃ vakkhanti saha dhammena, evaṃ saṃvaddhā hi² tassa Bhagavato parisā yad idaṃ añña-maññavacanena aññamaññavutthāpanenā ti. evaṃ ca sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā tath' eva paggaṇheyya, sā
- 25 bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi yāvatatiyaṃ samanubhāsītābbaṃ tassa paṭinissaggāya. yāvatatiyaṃ ce samanubhāsīyamānā taṃ paṭinissajjeyya, icc etaṃ kusalam. no ce paṭinissajjeyya, ayam pi bhikkhunī yāvatatiyakam dhammaṃ āpannā nissāraṇīyaṃ saṅghādisesaṃ. (Cf. BhSaṅgh no. 12, Vin III
- 30 178.3-18)

¹S^c: mā ayye

²Po: -vaddhā[hi ?]

speak thus; for that bhikkhunī is neither a speaker of Dhamma nor a speaker of Vinaya. May schism in the saṅgha not seem good to the noble ladies too. Let the noble ladies be at peace with the saṅgha; for the saṅgha, united, in agreement, not disputing, having a united recitation [of the Pātimokkha, etc.], lives comfortably.” And should those bhikkhunīs, being spoken to thus by the bhikkhunīs, persist in the same way [as before], then those bhikkhunīs are to be admonished by the bhikkhunīs up to the third time to give up that [course of action]. If, being admonished up to the third time, they should give it up, that is good. If they should not give it up, those bhikkhunīs too have committed a matter that is an offence after the third [admonition], entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha involving [temporary] exclusion.

The rule about being difficult to speak to

16. [It may be that] a bhikkhunī is naturally difficult to speak to, and when spoken to in accordance with the law by bhikkhunīs in respect of the rules of training included in the recitation, she makes herself unadmonishable, [saying], “Do not, noble ladies, say anything at all to me, either good or bad; and I too shall not say anything at all to the noble ladies, either good or bad. Refrain, noble ladies, from speaking to me.” That bhikkhunī is to be spoken to by the bhikkhunīs thus, “Noble lady, do not make yourself unadmonishable; rather let the noble lady make herself admonishable. Let the noble one speak in accordance with the law to the bhikkhunīs, and the bhikkhunīs will speak in accordance with the law to the noble lady; for the Bhagavant’s assembly has come to growth thus, that is to say by speaking to one another [and] by urging one another to abstain [from wrong doing].” And should that bhikkhunī, being spoken to thus by the bhikkhunīs, persist in the same way [as before], that bhikkhunī is to be admonished by the bhikkhunīs up to the third time to give up that [course of action]. If, being admonished up to the third time, she

kuladūsakasikkhāpadam

17. bhikkhunī pan' eva aññataram gāmaṃ vā nigamaṃ vā
 upanissāya viharati kuladūsikā pāpasamācārā,¹ tassā kho
 pāpakā samācārā dissanti c' eva suyyanti ca, kulāni ca tāya
 5 duṭṭhāni dissanti c' eva suyyanti ca. sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunī-
 hi evaṃ assa vacanīyā ayyā kho kuladūsikā pāpasamācārā.
 ayyāya kho pāpakā samācārā dissanti c' eva suyyanti ca,
 kulāni cāyyāya duṭṭhāni dissanti c' eva suyyanti ca, pakka-
 matāyyā imamhā āvāsā, alaṃ te idhavāsenā ti. evañ ca sā
 10 bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā tā bhikkhuniyo evaṃ
 vadeyya chandagāminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo, dosagāminiyo ca
 bhikkhuniyo, mohagāminiyo ca bhikkhuniyo, bhayagāminiyo
 ca bhikkhuniyo, tādīsikāya āpattiya ekaccaṃ pabbājenti.
 ekaccaṃ na pabbājenti ti, sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi evaṃ
 15 assa vacanīyā māyyā² evaṃ avaca, na ca bhikkhuniyo
 chandagāminiyo, na ca bhikkhuniyo dosagāminiyo, na ca³
 bhikkhuniyo mohagāminiyo, na ca bhikkhuniyo bhayagā-
 miniyo, ayyā kho kuladūsikā pāpasamācārā, ayyāya kho
 pāpakā samācārā dissanti c' eva suyyanti ca, kulāni⁴
 20 cāyyāya⁵ duṭṭhāni dissanti c' eva suyyanti ca. pakkamatāyyā
 imamhā āvāsā alaṃ te idhavāsenā ti. evañ ca sā bhikkhunī
 bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā tath' eva paggaṇheyya, sā bhikkhunī
 bhikkhunīhi yāvatatiyaṃ samanubhāsitabbā tassa paṭi-
 nissaggāya. yāvatatiyañ ce samanubhāsiyamānā taṃ paṭi-
 25 nissajjeyya, icc etaṃ kusalaṃ. no ce paṭinissajjeyya, ayam pi
 bhikkhunī yāvatatiyakam dhammaṃ āpannā nissāraṇīyaṃ
 saṅghādisesaṃ. (Cf. BhSaṅgh no. 13, Vin III 184-9-32)

¹Wij: pāpakā sa-²Sc: mā ayye³Sc omits⁴Wij: -la-⁵Wij: c' ayyāya

should give it up, that is good. If she should not give it up, that bhikkhunī too has committed a matter that is an offence after the third [admonition], entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha involving [temporary] exclusion.

The rule about a corrupter of families

17. [It may be that] a bhikkhunī [who is] a corrupter of families [and] of bad behaviour lives in dependence on some village or town, her bad behaviour is seen and heard about, and families corrupted by her are seen and heard about. That bhikkhunī is to be spoken to by the bhikkhunīs thus, “The noble lady is a corrupter of families [and] of bad behaviour. The noble lady’s bad behaviour is seen and heard about, and families corrupted by the noble lady are seen and heard about. Let the noble lady depart from this abode. You have lived here long enough.” And should that bhikkhunī, being spoken to thus by the bhikkhunīs, say to those bhikkhunīs, “The bhikkhunīs are going [wrong] from desire, and the bhikkhunīs are going [wrong] from hatred, and the bhikkhunīs are going [wrong] from stupidity, and the bhikkhunīs are going [wrong] from fear. On account of the same offence they banish one and do not banish another,” that bhikkhunī is to be spoken to by the bhikkhunīs thus, “Do not, noble lady, speak thus. The bhikkhunīs are not going [wrong] from desire nor going [wrong] from hatred nor going [wrong] from stupidity nor going [wrong] from fear. The noble lady is a corrupter of families [and] of bad behaviour. The noble lady’s bad behaviour is seen and heard about, and families corrupted by the noble lady are seen and heard about. Let the noble lady depart from this abode. You have lived here long enough.” And should that bhikkhunī being spoken to thus by the bhikkhunīs, persist in the same way [as before], then that bhikkhunī is to be admonished by the bhikkhunīs up to the third time to give up that [course of action]. If, being admonished up to the third time, she

uddiṭṭhā kho ayyāyo sattarasa saṅghādisesā dhammā nava
 paṭhamāpattikā, aṭṭha yāvatatīyakā, yesaṃ bhikkhunī
 aññataraṃ vā aññataraṃ vā āpajjati,¹ tāya bhikkhuniyā
 ubhatosaṅhe pakkhamānattaṃ caritabbam. ciṇṇamānattā
 5 bhikkhunī yattha siyā vīsati gaṇo bhikkhunīsaṅgho, tattha sā
 bhikkhunī abbhettabbā. ekāya pi ce ūno² vīsati gaṇo
 bhikkhunīsaṅgho taṃ bhikkhuniṃ abbheyya, sā ca bhikkhunī
 anabbhitā, tā ca bhikkhuniyo gārayhā. ayaṃ tattha sāmīci.

tatthāyyāyo³ pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? dutiyam
 10 pi pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? tatiyam pi pucchāmi
 kaṇṇi 'ttha parisuddhā? parisuddh' etthāyyāyo,⁴ tasmā tuṇhī,
 evam etaṃ dhārayāmi ti. (Vin IV 242, 12-23)

saṅghādiseso⁵ niṭṭhito.⁶

¹ Vin E^c: -jjitvā

² Vin E^c: ūna-vī-

³ Vin E^c: tatth' a-

⁴ Vin E^c: etth' a-

⁵ S^c adds: dhammā

⁶ Phye: saṅghādisesuddeso tatiyo.

should give it up, that is good. If she should not give it up, that bhikkhunī too has committed a matter that is an offence after the third [admonition], entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha involving [temporary] exclusion.

Recited, noble ladies, are the seventeen matters entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha, nine being offences at once and eight after the third [admonition]. If a bhikkhunī has committed one or other of these offences, she must spend half a month on penance before both saṅghas. When the bhikkhunī has completed the penance, she is to be reinstated where there may be a bhikkhunī saṅgha comprising a group of twenty. If a bhikkhunī saṅgha comprising a group of even one less than twenty should reinstate that bhikkhunī, that bhikkhunī is not reinstated and those bhikkhunīs are censurable. This is the proper course here.

Herein I ask the noble ladies: Are you pure in this? A second time I ask: Are you pure in this? A third time I ask: Are you pure in this? The noble ladies are pure in this; therefore they are silent. Thus I record it.

The saṅghādisesa section is finished.

E. nissaggiyapācittiyā

ime kho panāyyāyo¹ tiṃsa nissaggiyā pācittiyā dhammā
uddesaṃ āgacchanti.² (Vin IV 243.1f.)

a. pattavaggo³

5 pattasannicayasikkhāpadaṃ

1. yā pana bhikkhunī pattasannicayaṃ kareyya, nissaggiyaṃ
pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 243.9f.)

akālacīvarasikkhāpadaṃ⁴

10 2. yā pana bhikkhunī akālacīvaraṃ kālacīvaraṃ ti adhi-
tṭhahitvā bhājāpeyya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV
246.6ff.)

cīvaraparivattanasikkhāpadaṃ

3. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā saddhiṃ cīvaraṃ pari-
vattetvā⁵ sā pacchā evaṃ vadeyya handāyye⁶ tuyhaṃ
15 cīvaraṃ, āhara m' etaṃ cīvaraṃ, yaṃ tuyhaṃ tuyhaṃ ev'
etaṃ, yaṃ mayhaṃ mayhāṃ ev' etaṃ, āhara m' etaṃ
cīvaraṃ,⁷ sakāṃ paccāharā ti acchindeyya vā acchindāpeyya
vā, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 247.17-22)

aññaviññāpanasikkhāpadaṃ

20 4. yā pana bhikkhunī aññaṃ viññāpetvā aññaṃ viññāpeyya,
nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 249.4f.)

¹Vin E^c: pan' a-

²Wij: -ccanti [sic]

³S^c so ; other sources omit

⁴S^c: -rahājanasi-

⁵S^c: -tṭ-

⁶Vin E^c: hand' a-

⁷Vin E^c omits

E. The expiation with forfeiture section

Now, noble ladies, these thirty matters entailing expiation with forfeiture come up for recitation.

a. The bowl section

The rule about a hoard of bowls

1. If any bhikkhunī should make a hoard of bowls, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about out-of-season robe material

2. If any bhikkhunī, having determined out-of-season robe material, [thinking that] it is in-season robe material, should have it distributed, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about exchanging a robe

3. If any bhikkhunī, having exchanged a robe with a bhikkhunī, should afterwards speak thus, "Come, noble lady, this is your robe, give this robe to me. That which is yours is yours, that which is mine is mine. Give this to me, take your own back," [and] should tear it away or have it torn away, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about asking for another thing

4. If any bhikkhunī, having asked for one thing, should ask for another, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

aññacetāpanasikkhāpadaṃ

5. yā pana bhikkhunī aññaṃ cetāpetvā aññaṃ cetāpeyya,
nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 250,17f.)

paṭhamasaṅghikacetāpanasikkhāpadaṃ

- 5 6. yā pana bhikkhunī aññadatthikena parikkhārena aññuddis-
ikena saṅghikena aññaṃ cetāpeyya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ.
(Vin IV 251,6ff.)

dutiyasaṅghikacetāpanasikkhāpadaṃ

7. yā pana bhikkhunī aññadatthikena parikkhārena aññuddis-
10 ikena saṅghikena saññācikenā¹ aññaṃ cetāpeyya, nissaggi-
yaṃ pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 252,12ff.)

paṭhamagaṇikacetāpanasikkhāpadaṃ

8. yā pana bhikkhunī aññadatthikena parikkhārena aññuddis-
ikena mahājanikena aññaṃ cetāpeyya, nissaggiyaṃ
15 pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 253,4ff.)

dutiyagaṇikacetāpanasikkhāpadaṃ

9. yā pana bhikkhunī aññadatthikena parikkhārena aññuddis-
ikena mahājanikena saññācikenā² aññaṃ cetāpeyya,
nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 253,22ff.)

¹Vin E^c: saṃyā-

²Vin E^c, Wij: saṃyāci-

The rule about getting another thing in exchange

5. If any bhikkhunī, having got one thing in exchange, should get another thing in exchange, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The first rule about exchanging something
belonging to the saṅgha

6. If any bhikkhunī should get something in exchange for a requisite [which is] appointed for another thing, destined for another thing, [and] belonging to a saṅgha, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The second rule about exchanging something
belonging to the saṅgha

7. If any bhikkhunī should get something in exchange for a requisite [which is] appointed for another thing, destined for another thing, [and] belonging to the saṅgha, which she herself asked for, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The first rule about exchanging something
belonging to a group

8. If any bhikkhunī should get something in exchange for a requisite [which is] appointed for another thing, destined for another thing, [and] belonging to a large company, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The second rule about exchanging something
belonging to a group

9. If any bhikkhunī should get something in exchange for a requisite [which is] appointed for another thing, destined for another thing, [and] belonging to a large company, which she herself asked for, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

puggalikacetāpanasikkhāpadam

10. yā pana bhikkhunī aññadatthikena parikkhārena
aññuddisikena puggalikenā saññācikenā¹ aññam cetāpeyya,
nissaggiyam pācittiyam. (Vin IV 254,2ff.)

5 pattavaggo paṭhamo

b. cīvaravaggo²

garupāvuraṇasikkhāpadam³

11. garupāvuraṇam⁴ pana bhikkhuniyā cetāpentiya catu-
kkaṃsaparamam cetāpetabbam. tato ce uttari cetāpeyya,
10 nissaggiyam pācittiyam. (Vin IV 255,29ff.)

lahupāvuraṇasikkhāpadam⁵

12. lahupāvuraṇam⁶ pana bhikkhuniyā cetāpentiya addha-
teyyakkaṃsaparamam cetāpetabbam. tato ce uttari cetāpeyya,
nissaggiyam pācittiyam. (Vin IV 256,26ff.)

15 kathīnasikkhāpadam

13. niṭṭhitacīvarasmim bhikkhuniyā ubbhata-smim kaṭhine
dasāhaparamam atirekacīvaram dhāretabbam. tam atikkā-
mentiyā nissaggiyam pācittiyam. (Cf. BhNiss no. 1, Vin III
196,9ff.)

20 udositasikkhāpadam

14. niṭṭhitacīvarasmim bhikkhuniyā ubbhata-smim kaṭhine
ekarattam pi ce bhikkhunī ticīvarena⁷ vippavaseyya, aññatra

¹Vin E^c, Wij: saṃyāci-

²Sc^e so ; other sources omit

³Sc^e: -pāpura-

⁴Sc^e: -pāpura-

⁵Sc^e: -pāpura-

⁶Sc^e; -pāpura-

⁷Wij: pañcahi cī-

The rule about exchanging something
belonging to an individual

10. If any bhikkhunī should get something in exchange for a requisite appointed for another thing, destined for another thing, [and] belonging to an individual [and] that she herself asked for, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The bowl section: the first

b. The robe section

The rule about heavy cloth

11. If any bhikkhunī is bargaining for a heavy cloth, one [worth] at most four *kāṃsas* is to be bargained for. If she should bargain for one [worth] more than that, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about light cloth

12. If any bhikkhunī is bargaining for a light cloth, one [worth] at most two and a half *kāṃsas* is to be bargained for. If she should bargain for one [worth] more than that, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about the kaṭhina frame

13. [= Bh 1] The robe material having been used up, the kaṭhina frame having been removed by a bhikkhunī, an extra robe may be worn for ten days at the most. For one exceeding that, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The “storehouse” rule

14. [= Bh 2] The robe material having been used up, the kaṭhina frame having been removed by a bhikkhunī, if any bhikkhunī should live apart from the three robes, even for one night, other than with the agreement of the bhikkhunīs, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

bhikkhunīsammutiya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhNiss no. 2, Vin III 199,24ff.)

akālacīvarasikkhāpadaṃ

15. niṭṭhitacīvarasmim bhikkhuniyā ubbhatasmim kaṭhine
bhikkhuniyā pan' eva akālacīvaraṃ uppajjeyya, ākaṅkha-
mānāya bhikkhuniyā¹ paṭiggahetabbam, paṭiggahetvā khi-
ppam eva kāretabbam. no c' assa pāripūri, māsaparamam
tāya bhikkhuniyā taṃ cīvaraṃ nikkhipitabbam ūnassa
pāripūriyā satiya paccāsāya. tato ce uttari² nikkhipeyya satiya
10 pi paccāsāya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhNiss no. 3, Vin
III 203,32-38.)

aññātakaviññattisikkhāpadaṃ

16. yā pana bhikkhunī aññātakam gahapatiṃ vā gahapatāniṃ
vā cīvaraṃ viññāpeyya aññatra samayā, nissaggiyaṃ
15 pācittiyaṃ. tatthāyaṃ samayo: acchinnacīvarā vā hoti
bhikkhunī, natthacīvarā vā. ayaṃ tattha samayo. (Cf. BhNiss
no. 6, Vin III 212,28-31)

tatuttarisikkhāpadaṃ³

17. tañ ce aññātakam gahapati vā gahapatānī vā bahūhi
20 cīvarehi⁴ abhihaṭṭhum pavāreyya, santaruttaraparamam tāya
bhikkhuniyā tato cīvaraṃ sādītabbam. tato ce uttari
sādiyeyya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhNiss no. 7, Vin
III 214,19-22)

¹Wij adds: taṃ

²Sc, Wij: -rim

³Sc: -tatuttha-

⁴Wij: -rethi [sic]

The rule about out-of-season robe material

15. [= Bh 3] The robe material having been used up, the kathina frame having been removed by a bhikkhunī, should out-of-season robe material accrue to a bhikkhunī, it is to be accepted by the bhikkhunī if she wishes. Having accepted it, it is to be made up quickly. But should it not be sufficient for her, that robe material is to be deposited by that bhikkhunī for a month at most, there being expectation that the deficiency may be supplied. If she should deposit it for longer than that, even with there being expectation, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about asking a non-relative

16. [= Bh 6] If any bhikkhunī should ask for robe material from a householder or householder's wife, not related [to her], other than on the proper occasion, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture. Herein this is the proper occasion: the bhikkhunī has had a robe stolen or has lost a robe. This is the proper occasion here.

The rule about more than that

17. [= Bh 7] If a householder or householder's wife, not related [to the bhikkhunī], should bring and invite her with many pieces of robe material, [only] robe material for at most an under robe and an upper robe is to be accepted therefrom by that bhikkhunī. If she should accept more than that, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

bhikkhunīsammutiya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhNiss no. 2, Vin III 199,24ff.)

paṭhama-upakkhaṭasikkhāpadaṃ

18. bhikkhunīṃ pan' eva uddissa aññātakassa gahapatissa vā
 5 gahapatāniyā vā cīvaracetāpanaṃ¹ upakkhaṭaṃ hoti iminā
 cīvaracetāpanena¹ cīvaraṃ cetāpetvā itthannāmaṃ bhikkhu-
 niṃ cīvareṇa acchādessāmī ti. tatra² ce sā³ bhikkhunī pubbe
 appavāritā upasaṅkamitvā cīvare vikappaṃ⁴ āpajjeyya sādhu
 vata maṃ āyasmā iminā cīvaracetāpanena¹ evarūpaṃ vā eva-
 10 rūpaṃ vā cīvaraṃ cetāpetvā acchādehī ti, kalyāṇakamyataṃ
 upādāya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhNiss no. 8, Vin III
 216.11-18)

dutiya-upakkhaṭasikkhāpadaṃ

19. bhikkhunīṃ pan' eva uddissa ubhinnaṃ aññātakānaṃ
 15 gahapatīnaṃ vā gahapatānīnaṃ vā paccekacīvaracetāpanāni¹
 upakkhaṭāni honti imehi mayaṃ paccekacīvaracetāpanehi¹
 paccekacīvarāni cetāpetvā itthannāmaṃ bhikkhunīṃ cīvarehi
 acchādessāmā ti. tatra⁵ ce sā⁶ bhikkhunī pubbe appavāritā
 upasaṅkamitvā cīvare vikappaṃ āpajjeyya sādhu vata maṃ
 20 āyasmanto imehi paccekacīvaracetāpanehi⁷ evarūpaṃ vā
 evarūpaṃ vā cīvaraṃ cetāpetvā acchādeṭṭha ubho va santā
 ekenā ti, kalyāṇakamyataṃ upādāya, nissaggiyaṃ pācitti-
 yaṃ. (Cf. BhNiss no. 9, Vin III 218,30-38)

¹BhNiss nos. 8 and 9 so: B^c, Wij: -nn-

²Wij: tatra [sic]

³Wij: sa [sic]

⁴Wij: -ppm [sic]

⁵Wij: tatra [sic]

⁶Wij: sa [sic]

⁷BhNiss no. 8 so: B^c: -nn-; Wij: -tapanne-

The first rule about laid by

18. [= Bh 8] [It may be that] by a householder or householder's wife, not related [to the bhikkhunī], a robe fund has been laid by specifically for a bhikkhunī, [thinking], "Having purchased a robe with this robe fund, I will dress the bhikkhunī named so-and-so with a robe." If that bhikkhunī should, having gone there without being previously invited, suggest an alternative in respect of the robe, [saying], "[It would be] truly good. Venerable one, having purchased this or that kind of robe with this robe fund, dress me [with that]," because of desire for a fine [robe], there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The second rule about laid by

19. [= Bh 9] [It may be that] by two householders or householders' wives, not related [to the bhikkhunī], individual robe funds have been laid by specifically for a bhikkhunī, [thinking], "Having purchased individual robes with these individual robe funds, we will dress the bhikkhunī named so-and-so with robes." If that bhikkhunī should, having gone there without being previously invited, suggest an alternative in respect of the robe, [saying], "[It would be] truly good. Venerable sirs, having purchased this or that kind of robe with these individual robe funds, dress me, [the] two [of you] being [together], with one [robe]," because of desire for a fine [robe], there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

rājasikkhāpadam

20. bhikkhunim pan' eva uddissa rājā vā rājabhoggo vā brāhmaṇo vā gahapatiko vā dūtena cīvaracetāpanam¹ pahineyya iminā cīvaracetāpanena¹ cīvaram cetāpetvā itthannāmaṃ
- 5 bhikkhunim cīvarena acchādehī ti. so ce dūto taṃ bhikkhunim upasaṅkamitvā evaṃ vadeyya idaṃ kho ayye ayyaṃ uddissa cīvaracetāpanam¹ ābhatam, paṭiggaṇhātāyyā² cīvaracetāpanam¹ ti, tāya bhikkhuniyā so dūto evaṃ assa vacanīyo na kho mayam āvuso cīvaracetāpanam¹ paṭiggaṇhāma,
- 10 cīvaraṇ ca kho mayam paṭiggaṇhāma kālena kappiyan ti. so ce dūto taṃ bhikkhunim evaṃ vadeyya atthi panāyyāya koci³ veyyāvaccakaro⁴ ti cīvaratthikāya bhikkhave bhikkhuniyā veyyāvaccakaro⁴ niddisitaṃ⁵ āramiko⁶ vā upāsako⁷ vā eso⁸ kho āvuso bhikkhunīnam veyyāvaccakaro⁴ ti. so ce dūto
- 15 taṃ veyyāvaccakaram⁹ saññāpetvā taṃ bhikkhunim upasaṅkamitvā evaṃ vadeyya yaṃ kho ayye ayyā veyyāvaccakaram niddisi, saññatto¹⁰ so¹¹ mayā, upasaṅkamtāyyā¹² kālena, cīvarena taṃ acchādessatī ti. cīvaratthikāya bhikkhave bhikkhuniyā veyyāvaccakaro⁴ upasaṅkamitvā
- 20 dvattikkhattum codetaṃ¹³ sāretaṃ¹⁴ attho me āvuso

¹BhNiss no. 10 so; B^c, Wij: -nn-

²Wij: -hātu ayyā

³Wij: kāci

⁴Wij: -karā

⁵Wij: -bbā

⁶Wij: -kā

⁷Wij: -kā

⁸Wij: esā

⁹Wij: -kram [sic]

¹⁰Wij: -ttā

¹¹Wij: sā

¹²Wij: -mat' ayyā

¹³Wij: -bbā

¹⁴Wij: -bbā

The rule about kings

20. [= Bh 10] A king or a king's officer or a brahman or a householder may send specifically for a bhikkhunī a robe fund by a messenger [saying], "Having purchased a robe with this robe fund, dress the bhikkhunī named so-and-so with a robe." If that messenger, having approached that bhikkhunī, should speak thus, "Noble lady, this robe fund has been brought-specifically for the noble lady; let the noble lady accept the robe fund," then that messenger is to be spoken to thus by that bhikkhunī, "Friend, we do not accept the robe fund, but we accept a robe at the [proper] time, [if it is] allowable." If that messenger should say to that bhikkhunī thus, "Has the noble lady a steward?," bhikkhus, a monastery attendant or a lay follower is to be indicated as a steward by the bhikkhunī if she needs a robe, [saying], "Friend, this one is the bhikkhunīs' steward." If that messenger, having instructed the steward, having approached that bhikkhunī should say thus, "Noble lady, the steward whom the noble lady indicated has been instructed by me; let the noble lady approach him at the right time; he will dress you with a robe," then, bhikkhus, the steward may be prompted and reminded two or three times by the bhikkhunī, having approached him, if she needs a robe, [saying],

cīvarenā ti. dvattikkhattuṃ codayamānā¹ sārāyamānā taṃ
 cīvaraṃ abhinipphādeyya, icc etaṃ kusalaṃ. no ce
 abhinipphādeyya,² catukkhattuṃ pañcakkhattuṃ chakkhattu-
 paramaṃ tuṇhībhūtāya uddissa tḥātabbaṃ,² catukkhattuṃ
 5 pañcakkhattuṃ chakkhattuparamaṃ tuṇhībhūtā uddissa
 tiṭṭhamānā taṃ cīvaraṃ abhinipphādeyya, icc etaṃ kusalaṃ.
 tato ce uttari vāyamamānā taṃ cīvaraṃ abhinipphādeyya,
 nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. no ce abhinipphādeyya, yat' assā
 cīvaracetāpanaṃ³ ābhaṭaṃ, tattha sāmaṃ vā gantabbaṃ, dūto
 10 vā pāhetabbo yaṃ kho tumhe āyasmanto bhikkhuniṃ uddissa
 cīvaracetāpanaṃ⁴ pahiṇittha, na taṃ tassā bhikkhuniyā kiñci
 atthaṃ anubhoti, yuñjant' āyasmanto sakāṃ, mā vo sakāṃ
 vinassā ti. ayaṇi tattha sāmīci. (Cf. BhNiss no. 10, Vin III
 221.15–22.8)

15 cīvaravaggo dutiyo

c. [jātarūpavaggo]⁵

rūpiyasikkhāpadaṃ

21. yā pana bhikkhunī jātarūparajataṃ uggaṇḥeyya vā
 uggaṇḥāpeyya vā upanikkhittaṃ vā sādiyeyya, nissaggiyaṃ
 20 pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhNiss no. 18, Vin III 237.36ff.)

rūpiyasaṃvohārasikkhāpadaṃ⁶

22. yā pana bhikkhunī nānappakāraṃ rūpiyasaṃvohāraṃ
 samāpajjeyya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhNiss no. 19,
 Vin III 239.28f.)

¹Wij: codi-

²⁻²Wij omits

³BhNiss no. 10 so; B^c, Wij: -nn-

⁴BhNiss no. 10 so; B^c, Wij: -nn-

⁵S^c adds (inappropriately): pattavagga

⁶S^c: rūpi- (but *rūpi-* in the text)

“Friend, I have need of a robe.” If prompting and reminding two or three times she should succeed in obtaining that robe, that is good. If she should not succeed in obtaining it, she is to stand in silence for that purpose four times, five times, or six times at most. If on standing for that purpose four times, five times, or six times at most she should succeed in obtaining that robe, that is good. [If she should not succeed in obtaining it in that way, but] if on making further efforts, she should succeed in obtaining that robe, then there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture. If she should not succeed in obtaining it, she is to go herself or send a messenger to the place from which the robe fund was brought to her [to say], “That robe fund that you, venerable sirs, sent specifically for a bhikkhunī has provided no benefit at all for that bhikkhunī. Let the venerable ones obtain what is theirs. May what is yours not be lost.” This is the proper course here.

The robe section; the second

c. [The section about money]

The rule about money

21. [= Bh 18] If any bhikkhunī should either receive gold or silver or have it received, or accept it when deposited [for her], there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about money transactions

22. [= Bh 19] If any bhikkhunī should engage in various kinds of money transactions, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

kayavikkayasikkhāpadaṃ

23. yā pana bhikkhunī nānappakāraṃ kayavikkayaṃ samā-pajjeyya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhNiss no. 20, Vin III 241.27f.)

5 **ūnapañcabandhanasikkhāpadaṃ**

24. yā pana bhikkhunī ūnapañcabandhanena pattena aññaṃ navaṃ pattaṃ cetāpeyya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. tāya bhikkhuniyā so patto bhikkhunīparisāya nissajjitabbo, yo ca tassā bhikkhunīparisāya pattapariyanto, so tassā bhikkhuniyā
10 padātabbo ayaṃ te bhikkhuni¹ patto yāva bhedanāya dhāretabbo ti. ayaṃ tattha sāmīci. (Cf. BhNiss no. 22, Vin III 246.10-15)

bhesajjasikkhāpadaṃ

25. yāni kho pana tāni gilānaṃ bhikkhunīnaṃ paṭisāya-
15 nīyāni bhesajjāni, seyyath² idaṃ: sappi navanītaṃ telaṃ madhu phāṇitaṃ, tāni paṭiggahetvā sattāhaparamaṃ sanni-dhikāraṃ paribhuñjitabbāni. taṃ atikkāmentiyā nissaggi-yaṃ pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhNiss no. 23, Vin III 251.14-18)

cīvara-acchindanasikkhāpadaṃ

20 26. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā sāmaṃ cīvaraṃ datvā kupitā anattamanā acchindeyya vā acchindāpeyya vā, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhNiss no. 25, Vin III 255.2ff.)

suttaviññattisikkhāpadaṃ

27. yā pana bhikkhunī sāmaṃ suttaṃ viññāpetvā tantavāyehi
25 cīvaraṃ vāyāpeyya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhNiss no. 26, Vin III 256.27f.)

¹Wij: -nī

²Sc, Wij: -thīdaṃ

The rule about buying and selling

23. [= Bh 20] If any bhikkhunī should engage in various kinds of buying and selling, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about less than five mends

24. [= Bh 22] If any bhikkhunī should exchange a bowl with less than five mends for another new bowl, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture. The [new] bowl is to be forfeited by that bhikkhunī in the assembly of bhikkhunīs. And whichever is the last of the bowls of that assembly of bhikkhunīs is to be given to that bhikkhunī [with the words], “Bhikkhunī, this is your bowl; [it] is to be kept until it is broken.” This is the proper course here.

The rule about medicines

25. [= Bh 23] There are medicines to be eaten by sick bhikkhunīs, namely, ghee, fresh butter, oil, honey, molasses. Having accepted them, they are to be used, storing them up for seven days at most. For one exceeding that, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about taking a robe away

26. [= Bh 25] If any bhikkhunī should, having herself given a robe to a bhikkhunī, [afterwards] being angry and displeased, take it away or have it taken away [from her], there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about asking for yarn

27. [= Bh 26] If any bhikkhunī should, having herself asked for yarn, have it woven into robe material by weavers, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

mahāpesakārasikkhāpadam

28. bhikkhunim pan' eva uddissa¹ aññātako gahapati vā²
 gahapatānī vā tantavāyehi cīvaram vāyāpeyya. tatra³ ce sā
 bhikkhunī pubbe appavāritā tantavāye upasaṅkamitvā cīvare
 5 vikappam āpajjeyya idaṃ kho āvuso cīvaram maṃ uddissa
 viyyati,⁴ āyataṃ ca karoṭha, vitthataṃ ca, appitaṃ ca, suvītaṃ
 ca, supavāyitaṃ ca, suvilekhitaṃ ca, suvitacchitaṃ ca
 karoṭha, app eva nāma mayam pi āyasmantānaṃ kiñcimattaṃ
 anupadajjeyyāma ti. evaṃ ca sā bhikkhunī vatvā kiñcimattaṃ
 10 anupadajjeyya antamaso piṇḍapātāmatam pi, nissaggiyaṃ
 pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhNiss no. 27, Vin III 259,5-14)

acceka cīvarasikkhāpadam

29. dasāhānāgataṃ⁵ kattikatemāsikapuṇṇamaṃ bhikkhuniyā
 pan' eva accekacīvaram uppajjeyya, accekaṃ maññaṃ mānāya
 15 bhikkhuniyā paṭiggahetabbam, paṭiggahetvā yāva cīvara-
 kālasamayam nikkhipitabbam. tato ce uttari⁶ nikkhipeyya,
 nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhNiss no. 28, Vin III 261,20-
 24)

pariṇatasikkhāpadam

- 20 30. yā pana bhikkhunī jānaṃ saṅghikaṃ lābham pariṇataṃ
 attano pariṇāmeyya, nissaggiyaṃ pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhNiss no.
 30, Vin III 265,31f.)

jātarūpavaggo⁷ tatiyo

¹Wij: -s-

²Wij: ā [sic]

³Wij: tatra [sic]

⁴Wij: vī-

⁵Wij: -hana-

⁶Sc: -rim

⁷Wij so: B^c: pattavaggo

The longer rule about weavers

28. [= Bh 27] A householder or a householder's wife, not related [to the bhikkhunī], may have robe material woven by weavers specifically for a bhikkhunī. If that bhikkhunī, without being previously invited, having gone there to the weavers, should suggest an alternative, [saying], "Friends, this robe material is being woven specifically for me. Make it long and wide and firm and well woven and evenly woven and well scraped and well combed: then perhaps we might give you venerable ones a little something," and if after having spoken thus she should give a little something, even merely [the contents of] an alms bowl, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about special robes

29. [= Bh 28] Should a special robe become available for a bhikkhunī when the Kattika full moon [which comes at the end of the] three months [of the rainy season] has not come by ten days, it is to be received by that bhikkhunī, thinking that it is special. Having received it, it is to be deposited until the robe-time occasion. If she should deposit it for longer than that, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The rule about apportioned

30. [= Bh 30] If any bhikkhunī should knowingly have apportioned to herself an apportioned possession belonging to the saṅgha, there is an offence entailing expiation with forfeiture.

The section about money; the third

- uddiṭṭhā kho ayyāyo tiṃsa nissaggiyā pācittiyā dhammā.
 tatthāyyāyo¹ pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? dutiyam
 pi pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? tatiyam pi pucchāmi
 kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? parisuddh' etth' ayyāyo, tasmā tuṇhī,
 5 evam etaṃ dhārayāmi ti. (Vin IV 257,5-9)
- nissaggiyapācittiyā² niṭṭhitā.³

¹ Vin E^c: tatth' a-

² S^c, Wij: -yā pā-; S^c adds: dhammā

³ Phye: samattā.

Recited, noble ladies, are the thirty matters entailing expiation with forfeiture.

Herein I ask the noble ladies: Are you pure in this? A second time I ask: Are you pure in this? A third time I ask: Are you pure in this? The noble ladies are pure in this; therefore they are silent. Thus I record it.

The expiation with forfeiture section is finished

F. suddhapācittiyā

ime kho panāyyāyo¹ chasaṭṭhisatā pācittiyā dhammā
uddesaṃ āgacchanti. (Vin IV 258,1f.)

a. lasuṇavaggo²

5 lasuṇasikkhāpadaṃ

1. yā pana bhikkhunī lasuṇaṃ khādeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV
259,15)

sambādhalomasikkhāpadaṃ

2. yā pana bhikkhunī sambādhe lomaṃ saṃharāpeyya,
10 pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 260,12f.)

talaghātakasikkhāpadaṃ

3. talaghātake pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 260,34)

jatumaṭṭhakasikkhāpadaṃ

4. jatumaṭṭhake³ pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 261,24)

15 udakasuddhikasikkhāpadaṃ

5. udakasuddhikaṃ pana bhikkhuniyā ādiyamānāya dvañ-
gulapabbaparamaṃ ādātabbaṃ. taṃ atikkāmentiyā pācitti-
yaṃ. (Vin IV 262,24ff.)

upatitṭhanasikkhāpadaṃ

20 6. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhussa bhuñjantassa pānīyena⁴ vā
vidhūpanena vā upatitṭheyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 263,25f.)

¹Vin E^c: pan' a-

²S^c so; other sources omit

³Wij v.l.: -ṭṭ-

⁴Vin E^c, Wij: -nī-

F. The section on matters entailing simple expiation

Now, noble ladies, these hundred and sixty-six matters entailing expiation come up for recitation.

a. The garlic section

The rule about garlic

1. If any bhikkhunī should eat garlic, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about hair on the [private parts of the] body

2. If any bhikkhunī should let the hair of the [private parts of the] body grow, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about slapping with the palms of the hand

3. In slapping with the palms of the hands, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about a smeared [stick made] with lac

4. In a smeared [stick made] with lac, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about an ablution with water

5. If any bhikkhunī is taking an ablution with water, she may take at most [a measure of] two finger-joints. For one exceeding this, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about standing close

6. If any bhikkhunī should stand with drinking water or with a fan near a bhikkhu while he is eating, there is an offence entailing expiation.

āmakadhaññasikkhāpadaṃ

7. yā pana bhikkhunī āmakadhaññaṃ viññatvā¹ vā viññāpetvā² vā bhajjitvā vā bhajjāpetvā vā koṭṭetvā³ vā koṭṭāpetvā vā pacitvā vā pacāpetvā vā bhuñjeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 264.25ff.)

paṭhama-uccārachaddānasikkhāpadaṃ

8. yā pana bhikkhunī uccāraṃ vā passāvaṃ vā saṅkāraṃ vā vighāsaṃ vā tirokuḍḍe vā tiropākāre vā chaḍḍeyya vā chaḍḍāpeyya vā, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 265.32ff.)

- 10 dutiya-uccārachaddānasikkhāpadaṃ

9. yā pana bhikkhunī uccāraṃ vā passāvaṃ vā saṅkāraṃ vā vighāsaṃ vā harite chaḍḍeyya vā chaḍḍāpeyya vā, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 266.30ff.)

naccagītasikkhāpadaṃ

- 15 10. yā pana bhikkhunī naccaṃ vā gītaṃ vā vāditā vā dassanāya gaccheyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 267.29f.)

lasuṇavaggo paṭhamo

b. rattandhakāvaggo⁴

rattandhakārasikkhāpadaṃ

- 20 11. yā pana bhikkhunī rattandhakāre appadīpe purisena saddhiṃ eken' ekā santitṭheyya vā sallapeyya vā, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 268.28ff.)

paṭicchannokāsasikkhāpadaṃ

- 25 12. yā pana bhikkhunī paṭicchanne okāse purisena saddhiṃ eken' ekā santitṭheyya vā sallapeyya vā, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 269.25ff.)

¹Vin E^c: -ññi-; Wij: -ññā-; S^c: viññāpetvā

²S^c: viññāpāpetvā

³Vin E^c: -ṭṭi-

⁴S^c so; other sources omit

The rule about raw grain

7. If any bhikkhunī, having asked for raw grain or having had it asked for or having roasted it or having had it roasted or having pounded it or having had it pounded or having cooked it or having had it cooked, should eat it, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The first rule about throwing out excrement

8. If any bhikkhunī should throw or should have [someone] throw faeces or urine or rubbish or remains of food over a wall or over a fence, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The second rule about throwing out excrement

9. If any bhikkhunī should throw or should have [someone] throw faeces or urine or rubbish or remains of food on to crops, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about dancing and singing

10. If any bhikkhunī should go to see dancing or singing or music, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The garlic section; the first

b. The dark of the night section

The rule about the dark of the night

11. If any bhikkhunī should stand together with or should talk with a man, one woman with one man, in the dark of the night when there is no light, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about a screened place

12. If any bhikkhunī should stand together with or should talk with a man, one woman with one man, in a screened place, there is an offence entailing expiation.

ajjhokāsasallapanasikkhāpadam

13. yā pana bhikkhunī ajjhokāse purisena saddhiṃ eken' ekā santitṭheyya vā sallapeyya vā, pācittiyam. (Vin IV 270,12f.)

dutiya-uyyojanasikkhāpadam

- 5 14. yā pana bhikkhunī rathikāya¹ vā byūhe² vā siṅghātake vā purisena saddhiṃ eken' ekā santitṭheyya vā sallapeyya vā nikaṇṇikam vā jappeyya³ dutiyikam vā bhikkhunim uyyojeyya, pācittiyam. (Vin IV 271,1-4)

anāpucchāpakkamanasikkhāpadam

- 10 15. yā pana bhikkhunī purebhattam kulāni upasaṅkamitvā āsane nisīditvā sāmike anāpucchā pakkameyya, pācittiyam. (Vin IV 272,15ff.)

anāpucchā-abhiniśīdanasikkhāpadam

16. yā pana bhikkhunī pacchābhattam kulāni upasaṅkamitvā
15 sāmike anāpucchā āsane abhiniśīdeyya vā abhinipajjeyya vā, pācittiyam. (Vin IV 273,19ff.)

anāpucchāsantharāṇasikkhāpadam

17. yā pana bhikkhunī vikāle kulāni upasaṅkamitvā sāmike
20 anāpucchā seyyam santharitvā vā santharāpetvā vā abhi-
niśīdeyya vā abhinipajjeyya vā, pācittiyam. (Vin IV 274,25ff.)

para-ujjhāpanakasikkhāpadam

18. yā pana bhikkhunī duggahitena dūpadhāritena param ujjhāpeyya, pācittiyam. (Vin IV 275,28f.)

¹ Vin E^c: -thiyāya

² Wij: byu-

³ Wij: chappe-

The rule about talking together in an open place

13. If any bhikkhunī should stand together with or should talk with a man, one woman with one man, in an open place, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about dismissing a companion

14. If any bhikkhunī should stand together with or should talk with a man, one woman with one man, on a carriage road or in a cul-de-sac or at a crossroads or should whisper in his ear or should dismiss the bhikkhunī who is her companion, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about departing without asking permission

15. If any bhikkhunī, having approached families before a meal, having sat down on a seat, should depart without asking the owners [for permission], there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about sitting down without asking permission

16. If any bhikkhunī, having approached families after a meal, should sit down on a seat or should lie down without asking the owners [for permission], there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about spreading without asking permission

17. If any bhikkhunī, having approached families at the wrong time, having spread or having had a bed spread without asking the owners [for permission], should sit down or should lie down [on it], there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about looking down on another

18. If any bhikkhunī, because of a misapprehension, because of a misunderstanding, should look down upon another, there is an offence entailing expiation.

para-abhisapanasikkhāpadam

19. yā pana bhikkhunī attānaṃ vā paraṃ vā nirayena vā brahmacariyena vā abhisapeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 276.28f.)

rodanasikkhāpadam

- 5 20. yā pana bhikkhunī attānaṃ vadhitvā vadhitvā rodeyya. pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 277.23f.)

rattandhākāravaggo¹ dutiyoc. naggavaggo²

naggasikkhāpadam

- 10 21. yā pana bhikkhunī naggā nahāyeyya,³ pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 278.20)

udakasāṭikasikkhāpadam

22. udakasāṭikaṃ pana bhikkhuniyā kārayamānāya pamāṇi-
kā⁴ kāretabbā. tatr' idaṃ pamāṇaṃ: dīghaso catasso
15 vidatthiyo sugatavidatthiyā, tiriyaṃ dve vidatthiyo. taṃ
atikkāmentiyā chedanakaṃ⁵ pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 279.10-13)

cīvarasibbanasikkhāpadam

23. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā cīvaraṃ visibbetvā vā
visibbāpetvā vā sā pacchā anantarāyikīnī n' eva sabbeyya na
20 sabbāpanāya ussukkaṃ⁶ kareyya aññatra catūhapañcāhā,
pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 280.17-20)

¹Sc: -dha-; Wij: andhakāra-

²Sc so; other sources omit

³Vin E^c: nhā-

⁴Vin E^c: pā-

⁵Wij: bheda- [sic]

⁶Wij: -s-

The rule about cursing another

19. If any bhikkhunī should curse herself or another with hell, or with regard to the holy life, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about weeping

20. If any bhikkhunī should weep, having struck herself again and again, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The dark of the night section; the second

c. The section about naked

The rule about naked

21. If any bhikkhunī should bathe naked, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about a bathing robe

22. When a bhikkhunī is having a bathing robe made, it must be made according to the [prescribed] measurements. Herein these are the measurements: in length, four spans of the sugata span; in width, two spans. For one exceeding that, there is an offence entailing expiation with cutting down.

The rule about unsewing a robe

23. If any bhikkhunī, having unsewn a bhikkhunī's robe or had it unsewn, [yet] if she is not afterwards prevented should neither sew nor make an effort to get it sewn, other than on the fourth and fifth days, there is an offence entailing expiation.

saṅghāticārasikkhāpadaṃ

24. yā pana bhikkhunī pañcāhikaṃ saṅghāticāraṃ¹ atikkāmeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 281,26f.)

cīvarasaṅkamanīyasikkhāpadaṃ

5 25. yā pana bhikkhunī cīvarasaṅkamanīyaṃ dhāreyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 282,25f.)

gaṇacīvarasikkhāpadaṃ

26. yā pana bhikkhunī gaṇassa cīvaralābhaṃ antarāyaṃ kareyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 283,28f.)

10 paṭibāhanasikkhāpadaṃ

27. yā pana bhikkhunī dhāmmikaṃ cīvaravibhaṅgaṃ paṭibāheyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 284,28f.)

cīvaradānasikkhāpadaṃ

15 28. yā pana bhikkhunī agārikassa vā paribbājakassa vā paribbājikāya vā samaṇacīvaraṃ dadeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 285,26f.)

kāla-atikkamanasikkhāpadaṃ

29. yā pana bhikkhunī dubbalacīvarapaccāsāya cīvarakāla-samayaṃ atikkāmeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 286,28f.)

20 kaṭhinuddhārasikkhāpadaṃ

30. yā pana bhikkhunī dhammikaṃ kaṭhinuddhāraṃ paṭibāheyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 288,10f.)

naggavaggo tatiyo

¹Se v.l. (citing Vin S*), Wij v.l.: -tīvāraṃ

The rule about wearing an upper robe

24. If any bhikkhunī should miss wearing an upper robe for five days, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about a robe that is to be handed back

25. If any bhikkhunī should wear a robe which is to be handed back, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about the robes of a group

26. If any bhikkhunī should make an obstacle to a group's receiving robes, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about holding back

27. If any bhikkhunī should hold back a legally valid division of robe material, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about giving robes

28. If any bhikkhunī should give recluses' robe material to a householder or to a male wanderer or to a female wanderer, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about letting the season pass

29. If any bhikkhunī, when an expectation of robe material is not sure, should let the robe season pass, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about removal of the kāṭhina [privileges]

30. If any bhikkhunī should hold back a legally valid removal of the kāṭhina [privileges], there is an offence entailing expiation.

The section about naked; the third

d. tuvaṭṭavaggo¹

ekamañcatuvaṭṭanasikkhāpadaṃ

31. yā pana bhikkhuniyo dve ekamañce tuvaṭṭeyyuṃ, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 289,1f.)

5 ekattharaṇatuvaṭṭanasikkhāpadaṃ

32. yā pana bhikkhuniyo dve ekattharaṇapāvuraṇā tuvaṭṭe-
yyuṃ, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 289,17f.)

aphāsukaraṇasikkhāpadaṃ

33. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā sañcicca aphāsuṃ
10 kareyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 290,23f.)

na-upaṭṭhāpanasikkhāpadaṃ

34. yā pana bhikkhunī dukkhitā sahaṇīvinī n' eva upaṭṭha-
heyya² na upaṭṭhāpanāya ussukkaṃ³ kareyya, pācittiyaṃ.
(Vin IV 291,22ff.)

15 nikkaddhanasikkhāpadaṃ

35. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā upassayaṃ datvā kupitā
anattamanā nikkaddheyya vā nikkaddhāpeyya vā, pācittiyaṃ.
(Vin IV 292,24ff.)

saṃsaṭṭhasikkhāpadaṃ

20 36. yā pana bhikkhunī saṃsaṭṭhā vihareyya gahapatinā vā
gahapatiputtana vā, sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi evaṃ assa
vacanīyā māyye saṃsaṭṭhā vihari gahapatinā pi gaha-
patiputtanāpi.⁴ viviccāyye,⁵ vivekañ ñeva bhaginiyā saṅgho
vaṇṇeti ti. evaṃ ca⁶ sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā

¹So; other sources omit

²Vin E^c, Wij: -ṭṭheyya

³Wij: -k-

⁴Vin E^c: -na pi

⁵Vin E^c: vivicca' a-

⁶Vin E^c, Wij add: pana

d. The lying down section

The rule about lying down on one couch

31. If any two bhikkhunīs should lie down on one couch, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about lying down with one carpet

32. If any two bhikkhunīs should lie down having one carpet and cover, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about causing discomfort

33. If any bhikkhunī should intentionally cause discomfort to a bhikkhunī, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about not having attended

34. If any bhikkhunī should neither attend to an ailing [woman] who lives with her nor make an effort to have her attended to, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about throwing out

35. If any bhikkhunī having given quarters to a bhikkhunī, should, angry, displeased, throw her out or have her thrown out, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about keeping company

36. Whatever bhikkhunī should keep company with a householder or with a householder's son, that bhikkhunī is to be spoken to by the bhikkhunīs thus, "Do not, noble lady, keep company with a householder [or] with a householder's son. Live separate, noble lady, the saṅgha praises only separation for a sister." But if that bhikkhunī, being spoken to thus by the bhikkhunīs, should persist in the same way [as before],

tath' eva paggaṇheyya. sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi yāvatatiyaṃ samanubhāsitabbā tassa paṇissaggāya. yāvatatiyaṃ ce samanubhāsiyamānā taṃ paṇissajjeyya, icc etaṃ kusalaṃ. no ce paṇissajjeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 294.3-11)

5 antoraṭṭhasikkhāpadaṃ

37. yā pana bhikkhunī antoraṭṭhe sāsāṅkasammate sappātibhaye asatthikā cārikaṃ careyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 295.21f.)

tiroraṭṭhasikkhāpadaṃ

10 38. yā pana bhikkhunī tiroraṭṭhe sāsāṅkasammate sappātibhaye asatthikā cārikaṃ careyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 296.8f.)

antovassasikkhāpadaṃ

39. yā pana bhikkhunī antovassaṃ cārikaṃ careyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 296.29f.)

15 cārikanapakkamanasikkhāpadaṃ

40. yā pana bhikkhunī vassaṃ vutthā¹ cārikaṃ na pakka-meyya antamaso chappaṇcayojanāni pi, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 297.22f.)

tuvaṭṭavaggo catuttho

20 e. cittāgāravaggo²

rājāgārasikkhāpadaṃ

41. yā pana bhikkhunī rājāgāraṃ vā cittāgāraṃ vā ārāmaṃ vā uyyānaṃ vā pokkharaniṃ vā dassanāya gaccheyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 298.18ff.)

25 āsandiparibhuñjanasikkhāpadaṃ

42. yā pana bhikkhunī āsandiṃ vā pallaṅkaṃ vā paribhuñjeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 299.18f.)

¹Wij v.l.: -tth-

²Sc so: other sources omit

that bhikkhunī is to be admonished by the bhikkhunīs up to the third time for giving up that [course of action]. If, being admonished up to the third time, she should give it up, that is good. If she should not give it up, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about within a region

37. If any bhikkhunī should walk without a caravan on an alms tour within [her own] region [which is] agreed to be dangerous, frightening, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about outside a region

38. If any bhikkhunī should walk without a caravan outside [her own] region [which is] agreed to be dangerous, frightening, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about during the rains

39. If any bhikkhunī should walk on an alms tour during the rains, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about not setting out on an alms tour

40. If any bhikkhunī, having kept the rains, should not set out on alms tour, even for [a distance of] five or six yojanas, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The lying down section; the fourth

e. The picture-gallery section

The rule about a king's house

41. If any bhikkhunī should go to see a king's house or a picture gallery or a park or a pleasure grove or a lotus pond, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about making use of a sofa

42. If any bhikkhunī should make use of a sofa or of a divan, there is an offence entailing expiation.

suttakantanasikkhāpadaṃ

43. yā pana bhikkhunī suttaṃ kanteyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 300.11)

gihiveyyāvaccasikkhāpadaṃ

5 44. yā pana bhikkhunī gihiveyyāvaccam kareyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 300.30f.)

adhikaraṇasikkhāpadaṃ

45. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā ehāyye¹ imaṃ adhi-
karaṇam vūpasamehī ti vuccamānā sādhu ti paṭissuṇitvā² sā
10 pacchā anantarāyikinī n' eva vūpasameyya na vūpasamāya
ussukkam kareyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 301.19-22)

bhojanadānasikkhāpadaṃ

46. yā pana bhikkhunī agārikassa vā paribbājakassa vā pari-
bbājikāya vā sahatthā khādanīyaṃ³ vā bhojanīyaṃ⁴ vā
15 dadeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 302.24ff.)

āvasathacīvarasikkhāpadaṃ

47. yā pana bhikkhunī āvasathacīvaram anissajjetvā⁵ pari-
bhuñjeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 303.17f.)

āvasathavihārasikkhāpadaṃ

20 48. yā pana bhikkhunī āvasatham anissajjitvā cārikam
pakkameyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 304.21f.)

tiracchānavijjāpariyāpuṇanasikkhāpadaṃ

49. yā pana bhikkhunī tiracchānavijjam pariyāpuṇeyya,
pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 305.19f.)

¹Vin E^c: Wij: ch' a-

²Vin E^c: -s-

³Vin E^c: -ni-

⁴Vin E^c: -ni-

⁵Vin E^c: -jji-

The rule about spinning yarn

43. If any bhikkhunī should spin yarn, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about householders' work

44. If any bhikkhunī should do householders' work, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about legal questions

45. If any bhikkhunī, being spoken to by a bhikkhunī, [saying]. "Come, noble lady, settle this legal question," and having answered, "Very good," [yet] if she is not afterwards prevented, should neither settle it nor make an effort to get it settled, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about giving food

46. If any bhikkhunī should give with her own hand solid food or soft food to a householder or to a male wanderer or to a female wanderer, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about a household robe

47. If any bhikkhunī, not having given up a household robe, should make use of it, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about dwellings

48. If any bhikkhunī, not having given up her dwelling, should set out on an alms tour, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about attaining worldly knowledge

49. If any bhikkhunī should attain worldly knowledge, there is an offence entailing expiation.

tiracchānavijjāvācanasikkhāpadaṃ

50. yā pana bhikkhunī tiracchānavijjaṃ vāceyya, pācittiyaṃ.
(Vin IV 306.5f.)

cittāgāravaggo pañcama

5

f. ārāmaṃvaggo¹

ārāmapavisanasikkhāpadaṃ

51. yā pana bhikkhunī jānaṃ sabhikkhukaṃ ārāmaṃ anā-
pucchā paviseyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 307.22f.)

bhikkhu-akkosanasikkhāpadaṃ

10 52. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuṃ akkoseyya vā paribhāseyya
vā, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 309.7f.)

gaṇaparibhāsanāsikkhāpadaṃ

53. yā pana bhikkhunī caṇḍikatā² gaṇaṃ paribhāseyya,
pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 310.20f.)

15

pavāritasikkhāpadaṃ

54. yā pana bhikkhunī nimantitā vā pavāritā vā khādanīyaṃ³
vā bhojanīyaṃ⁴ vā khādeyya vā bhuñjeyya vā, pācittiyaṃ.
(Vin IV 311.19ff.)

kulamaccharinīsikkhāpadaṃ

20 55. yā pana bhikkhunī kulamaccharinī assa, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin
IV 312.23)

abhikkhukāvāsasikkhāpadaṃ

56. yā pana bhikkhunī abhikkhuke āvāse vassaṃ vaseyya,
pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 313.14f.)

¹Se so: other sources omit

²Vin E^c: -di-

³Vin E^c: -ni-; Wij: -nīṃ [sic]

⁴Vin E^c: -ni-

The rule about teaching worldly knowledge

50. If any bhikkhunī should teach worldly knowledge, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The picture-gallery section; the fifth

f. The monastery section

The rule about entering a monastery

51. If any bhikkhunī should knowingly enter a park with bhikkhus in it without asking [for permission], there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about reviling a bhikkhu

52. If any bhikkhunī should revile or abuse a bhikkhu, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about abusing a group

53. If any bhikkhunī, being quick tempered, should abuse a group, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about being invited

54. If any bhikkhunī, being invited or being invited [again], should eat or partake of solid food or soft food, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about being grudging to a family

55. If any bhikkhunī should be grudging to a family, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about a residence where there is no bhikkhu

56. If any bhikkhunī should spend the rains in a residence where there is no bhikkhu, there is an offence entailing expiation.

apavāraṇāsikkhāpadaṃ

57. yā pana bhikkhunī vassaṃ vutthā ubhatosaṅghe tīhi
 ṭhānehi na pavāreyya¹ diṭṭhena vā sutena vā parisankāya vā,
 pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 314.9ff.)

5 ovādasikkhāpadaṃ

58. yā pana bhikkhunī ovādāya vā saṃvāsāya vā na
 gaccheyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 315.3f.)

ovādūpasāṅkamanasikkhāpadaṃ

59. anvaddhamāsaṃ bhikkhuniyā bhikkhusaṅghato dve
 10 dhammā paccāsīsitaḥ² uposathapucchakaṇ ca ovādūpa-
 saṅkamanāṇ ca. taṃ atikkāmentiyā pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV
 315.24ff.)

pasākhejātasikkhāpadaṃ

60. yā pana bhikkhunī pasākhe jātaṃ gaṇḍaṃ vā rudhitaṃ³
 15 vā anapaloketvā saṅghaṃ vā gaṇaṃ vā purisena saddhiṃ
 eken' ekā bhedāpeyya vā phālāpeyya vā dhovāpeyya vā
 ālīpāpeyya vā bandhāpeyya vā mocāpeyya vā, pācittiyaṃ.
 (Vin IV 316.16-19)

ārāmaṃvaggo chaṭṭho

20 g. gabbhinivaggo⁴

gabbhinīsikkhāpadaṃ

61. yā pana bhikkhunī gabbhinaṃ vuṭṭhāpeyya, pācittiyaṃ.
 (Vin IV 317.21f.)

pāyantīsikkhāpadaṃ

25 62. yā pana bhikkhunī pāyantiṃ vuṭṭhāpeyya, pācittiyaṃ.
 (Vin IV 318.14)

¹Sc: ppa-

²Vin Ec: -simsi-

³Vin Ec: rūhitaṃ; Wij: rucitaṃ

⁴Sc so; other sources omit

The rule about not inviting

57. If any bhikkhunī, having kept the rains, should not invite both saṅghas in respect of three matters, [i.e.] what is seen or heard or suspected, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about exhortation

58. If any bhikkhunī should not go for exhortation or for communion, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about approaching for exhortation

59. Every half month two things are to be sought by a bhikkhunī from the bhikkhu saṅgha: the asking about [the date of] the uposatha and the approaching for exhortation. For one transgressing this, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about the lower part of the body

60. If any bhikkhunī, without having obtained permission from a saṅgha or from a group, should together with a man, the one woman with the one man, make a boil or a scab that has formed on the lower part of her body burst or break or have it be washed or smeared or bound up or unbound, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The monastery section; the sixth

g. The pregnant woman section

The rule about a pregnant woman

61. If any bhikkhunī should sponsor a pregnant woman [for ordination], there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about a woman giving suck

62. If any bhikkhunī should sponsor a woman giving suck [for ordination], there is an offence entailing expiation.

dutiyaśahajīvinīsikkhāpadaṃ

70. yā pana bhikkhunī śahajīvinīṃ vuṭṭhāpetvā n' eva
vūpakāseyya na vūpakāśāpeyya antamaso chappañcayojanāni
pi, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 326.27ff.)

5

gabbhinivaggo¹ sattamoh. kumāribhūtavaggo²

paṭhamakumāribhūtasikkhāpadaṃ

71. yā pana bhikkhunī ūnavīsativassaṃ kumāribhūtaṃ
vuṭṭhāpeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 327.17f.)

10

dutiya-kumāribhūtasikkhāpadaṃ

72. yā pana bhikkhunī paripuṇṇavīsativassaṃ kumāribhūtaṃ
dve vassāni chasu dhammesu asikkhitasikkhaṃ vuṭṭhāpeyya,
pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 328.9ff.)

tatiya-kumāribhūtasikkhāpadaṃ

15

73. yā pana bhikkhunī paripuṇṇavīsativassaṃ kumāribhūtaṃ
dve vassāni chasu dhammesu sikkhitasikkhaṃ saṅghena
asammatāṃ vuṭṭhāpeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 328.31ff.)

ūnavādāsavassasikkhāpadaṃ

20

74. yā pana bhikkhunī ūnavādāsavassā vuṭṭhāpeyya,
pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 329.24f.)

paripuṇṇadvādāsavassasikkhāpadaṃ

75. yā pana bhikkhunī paripuṇṇadvādāsavassā saṅghena
asammatā vuṭṭhāpeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 330.30f.)

¹Wij: -nī-

²Sc so; other sources omit

The second rule about one living with

70. If any bhikkhunī, having sponsored [the woman] living with her [for ordination], should neither withdraw her nor have her withdrawn even to [a distance of] five or six yojanas, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The pregnant woman section; the seventh

h. The maiden section

The first rule about a maiden

71. If any bhikkhunī should sponsor a maiden under twenty years of age [for ordination], there is an offence entailing expiation.

The second rule about a maiden

72. If any bhikkhunī should sponsor [for ordination] a maiden who is fully twenty years of age [but] who has not trained for two years in the six rules, there is an offence entailing expiation

The third rule about a maiden

73. If any bhikkhunī should sponsor [for ordination] a maiden who is fully twenty years of age and who has trained for two years in the six rules [but] who is not approved by the saṅgha, there is an offence entailing expiation

The rule about less than twelve years

74. If any bhikkhunī should sponsor [for ordination] when she is less than twelve years [of standing], there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about fully twelve years

75. If any bhikkhunī who is fully twelve years [of standing but] who is not approved by the saṅgha should be sponsored [for ordination], there is an offence entailing expiation.

khiyyanadhammasikkhāpadam

76. yā pana bhikkhunī alam tāva te ayye vuṭṭhāpitenā ti vuccamānā sādhū ti paṭissuṇitvā¹ sā² pacchā khiyyana-dhammaṃ³ āpajjeyya, pācittiyam. (Vin IV 331.24ff.)

5 pathamasikkhamānanavutṭhāpanasikkhāpadam

77. yā pana bhikkhunī sikkhamānam sace me tvaṃ ayye cīvaram dassasi evāhan taṃ vuṭṭhāpessāmī ti vatvā sā pacchā anantarāyikinī n' eva vuṭṭhāpeyya na vuṭṭhāpanāya ussu-kkam⁴ kareyya, pācittiyam. (Vin IV 332.17-20)

10 dutiyasikkhamānanavutṭhāpanasikkhāpadam

78. yā pana bhikkhunī sikkhamānam sace maṃ tvaṃ ayye dve vassāni anubandhissasi evāhan taṃ vuṭṭhāpessāmī ti vatvā sā pacchā anantarāyikinī n' eva vuṭṭhāpeyya na vuṭṭhāpanāya ussukkam⁵ kareyya, pācittiyam. (Vin IV 333.9-12)

15 sokāvāsasikkhāpadam

79. yā pana bhikkhunī purisasamsatṭham kumāraka-samsatṭham caṇḍim sokāvāsam sikkhamānam vuṭṭhāpeyya, pācittiyam. (Vin IV 334.3ff.)

ananuññātasikkhāpadam

20 80. yā pana bhikkhunī mātāpitūhi vā sāmikena vā ananuññā-taṃ sikkhamānam vuṭṭhāpeyya, pācittiyam. (Vin IV 335.1f.)

pārivāsikasikkhāpadam

81. yā pana bhikkhunī pārivāsikachandadānena sikkhamānam vuṭṭhāpeyya, pācittiyam. (Vin IV 335.30f.)

¹ Vin E^c: -s-

² Vin E^c, Wij omiṭ

³ Vin E^c: khīyadha-; Wij: khīyya-

⁴ Wij: -k-

⁵ Wij: -k-

The rule about a critical nature

76. If any bhikkhunī, on being told, “You have sponsored [for ordination] sufficiently, noble lady, for the time being,” and having answered, “Very good,” should afterwards adopt a critical nature, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The first rule about not sponsoring a trainee

77. If any bhikkhunī, having said to a trainee. “If you, noble lady, will give me a robe, then I will sponsor you [for ordination].” [yet] if she is not afterwards prevented, should neither ordain her nor make an effort to get her ordained, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The second rule about not sponsoring a trainee

78. If any bhikkhunī, having said to a trainee, “If you, noble lady, will wait upon me for two years, then I will sponsor you [for ordination],” [yet] if she is not afterwards prevented, should neither ordain her nor make an effort to get her ordained, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about a dwelling place of grief

79. If any bhikkhunī should ordain [for ordination] a trainee who keeps company with men, who keeps company with youths, who is violent, a dwelling place of grief, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about not permitted

80. If any bhikkhunī should sponsor [for ordination] a trainee not permitted by the mother and father nor by the husband, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about postponed overnight

81. If any bhikkhunī should sponsor a trainee by a giving of consent postponed overnight, there is an offence entailing expiation.

anuvassasikkhāpadam

82. yā pana bhikkhunī anuvassam vuṭṭhāpeyya, pācittiyam.
(Vin IV 336.9f.)

ekavassasikkhāpadam

5 83. yā pana bhikkhunī ekam vassam¹ dve vuṭṭhāpeyya,
pācittiyam. (Vin IV 337.6f.)

kumaribhūtavaggo aṭṭhamo

i. chattupāhanavaggo²

chattupāhanasikkhāpadam

10 84. yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā³ chattupāhanam dhāreyya,
pācittiyam. (Vin IV 338.5f.)

yānasikkhāpadam

85. yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā⁴ yānena yāyeyya, pācittiyam.
(Vin IV 339.8f.)

15 saṅghāṇisikkhāpadam

86. yā pana bhikkhunī saṅghāṇim dhāreyya, pācittiyam. (Vin
IV 340.6f.)

itthālaṅkārasikkhāpadam

87. yā pana bhikkhunī itthālaṅkāram dhāreyya, pācittiyam.
20 (Vin IV 340.26f.)

gandhavaṇṇakasikkhāpadam

88. yā pana bhikkhunī gandhavaṇṇakena nahāyeyya,⁵
pācittiyam. (Vin IV 341.7f.)

¹Vin E^c: ekava-

²S^c so; other sources omit

³Wij: -la-

⁴Wij: -la-

⁵Vin E^c: nhā-

The rule about every year

82. If any bhikkhunī should sponsor [for ordination] every year, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about one year

83. If any bhikkhunī should sponsor two [trainees for ordination] in one year, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The maiden section; the eighth

i. The sunshade and sandals section

The rule about sunshade and sandals

84. If any bhikkhunī who is not sick should use a sunshade and sandals, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about vehicles

85. If any bhikkhunī who is not sick should travel in a vehicle, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about a petticoat

86. If any bhikkhunī should wear a petticoat, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about women's ornaments

87. If any bhikkhunī should wear women's ornaments, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about perfume and paint

88. If any bhikkhunī should bathe with perfume and paint, there is an offence entailing expiation.

vāsitakasikkhāpadaṃ

89. yā pana bhikkhunī vāsitakena piñṇākena nahāyeyya,¹
pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 341,22f.)

bhikkhunī-ummaddāpanasikkhāpadaṃ

5 90. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā ummaddāpeyya vā parimaddāpeyya vā, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 342,16f.)

sikkhamāna-ummaddāpanasikkhāpadaṃ

91. yā pana bhikkhunī sikkhamānāya ummaddāpeyya vā parimaddāpeyya vā, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 343,4f.)

10 sāmaṇerī-ummaddāpanasikkhāpadaṃ

92. yā pana bhikkhunī sāmaṇeriyā ummaddāpeyya vā parimaddāpeyya vā, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 343,4f.)

gihini-ummaddāpanasikkhāpadaṃ

93. yā pana bhikkhunī gihiniyā ummaddāpeyya vā parimaddāpeyya vā, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 343,4f.)

anāpucchāsikkhāpadaṃ

94. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhussa purato anāpucchā āsane nisīdeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 343,25f.)

pañhāpucchanasikkhāpadaṃ

20 95. yā pana bhikkhunī anokāsakatam bhikkhum pañham puccheyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 344,14f.)

¹ Vin E^c: nhā-

The rule about scented

89. If any bhikkhunī should bathe with scented ground sesamum, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about having oneself rubbed by a bhikkhunī

90. If any bhikkhunī should have herself rubbed [with ointment] or should have herself massaged by a bhikkhunī, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about having oneself rubbed by a trainee

91. If any bhikkhunī should have herself rubbed [with ointment] or should have herself massaged by a trainee, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about having oneself rubbed by a female novice

92. If any bhikkhunī should have herself rubbed [with ointment] or should have herself massaged by a female novice, there is an offence entailing expiation.

**The rule about having oneself rubbed
by a householder's wife**

93. If any bhikkhunī should have herself rubbed [with ointment] or should have herself massaged by a householder's wife, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about not asking

94. If any bhikkhunī should sit down on a seat in front of a bhikkhu without asking [for permission], there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about asking questions

95. If any bhikkhunī should ask a question of a bhikkhu who has not given leave, there is an offence entailing expiation.

asaṅkaccikasikkhāpadaṃ

96. yā pana bhikkhunī asaṅkacchikā gāmaṃ paviseyya,
pācittiyaṃ. (Vin IV 345,22f.)

chattupāhanavaggo navamo

5

j. musāvādavaggo¹

musāvādasikkhāpadaṃ

97. sampajānamusāvāde pācittiyaṃ. (= BhPāc no. 1, Vin IV
2.14)

omasavādasikkhāpadaṃ

10 98. omasavāde pācittiyaṃ. (= BhPāc no. 2, Vin IV 6,5)

pesuṇṇasikkhāpadaṃ

99. bhikkhunīpesuṇṇe pācittiyaṃ. (= BhPāc no. 3, Vin IV
12,23)

padasodhammasikkhāpadaṃ

15 100. yā pana bhikkhunī anupasampannaṃ padaso dhammaṃ
vāceyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 4, Vin IV 14,30f.)

paṭhamasahaseyyasikkhāpadaṃ

101. yā pana bhikkhunī anupasampannāya uttaridirattati-
rattaṃ sahaseyyaṃ kappeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 5,
20 Vin IV 16,31f.)

dutyasahaseyyasikkhāpadaṃ

102. yā pana bhikkhunī purisena sahaseyyaṃ kappeyya,
pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 6, Vin IV 19,31f.)

¹So; other sources omit

The rule about without a bodice

96. If any bhikkhunī should enter a village without a bodice, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The sunshade and sandals section; the ninth

j. The section about lying

The rule about lying

97. [BhPāc 1] In [uttering] a conscious lie there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about abusive speech

98. [BhPāc 2] In abusive speech there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about slander

99. [BhPāc 3] In slander of a bhikkhunī there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about Dhamma word by word

100. [BhPāc 4] If any bhikkhunī should make someone who is not ordained recite the Dhamma word by word, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The first rule about a bed together

101. [BhPāc 5] If any bhikkhunī should make her bed for more than two or three nights together with [a woman] who is not ordained, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The second rule about a bed together

102. [BhPāc 6]. If any bhikkhunī should make her bed together with a man, there is an offence entailing expiation.

dhammadesanāsikkhāpadaṃ

103. yā pana bhikkhunī purisassa uttarichappañcavācāhi dhammaṃ deseyya aññatra viññunā itthiviggahena, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 7, Vin IV 22,17ff.)

5

bhūtārocanasikkhāpadaṃ

104. yā pana bhikkhunī anupasampannāya uttarimanussa-dhammaṃ āroceyya, bhūtasmiṃ pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 8, Vin IV 25,22f.)

duṭṭhullārocanasikkhāpadaṃ

10 105. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā duṭṭhullaṃ āpattiṃ anu-pasampannāya āroceyya aññatra bhikkhunīsammutiyaṃ, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 9, Vin IV 31,12ff.)

pathavīkhaṇanasikkhāpadaṃ

106. yā pana bhikkhunī pathaviṃ khaṇeyya vā khaṇāpeyya
15 vā, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 10, Vin IV 33,4f.)

musāvādavaggo dasamo

k. bhūtagā mavaggo¹

bhūtagāmasikkhāpadaṃ

107. bhūtagāmapātabyatāya pācittiyaṃ. (= BhPāc no. 11, Vin
20 IV 34,34)

aññavādakasikkhāpadaṃ

108. aññavādake vihesake pācittiyaṃ. (= BhPāc no. 12, Vin IV 36,37)

ujjhāpanakasikkhāpadaṃ

25 109. ujjhāpanake khiyyanake pācittiyaṃ. (= BhPāc no. 13, Vin IV 38,30f.)

¹S^c so; other sources omit

The rule about teaching the Dhamma

103. [BhPāc 7] If any bhikkhunī should teach the Dhamma to a man in more than five or six sentences other than with a knowledgeable woman [being present], there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about announcing what is true

104. [BhPāc 8] If any bhikkhunī should announce [her own] superhuman state to one who is not ordained, if it is true, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about announcing a gross offence

105. [BhPāc 9] If any bhikkhunī should announce a bhikkhunī's gross offence to one who is not ordained, other than with the agreement of the bhikkhunīs, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about digging the earth

106. [BhPāc 10] If any bhikkhunī should dig the earth or have it dug, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The section about lying; the tenth

k. The section about plant beings

The rule about plant beings

107. [BhPāc 11] In causing damage to plant beings there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about one replying evasively

108. [BhPāc 12] In respect of one replying evasively [and] causing trouble there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about one disparaging

109. [BhPāc 13] In respect of one disparaging [and] decrying there is an offence entailing expiation.

pathamasenāsanasikkhāpadam

110. yā pana bhikkhunī saṅghikaṃ mañcaṃ vā pīṭhaṃ vā
bhisim vā kocchaṃ vā ajjhokāse santharitvā vā santharāpetvā
vā taṃ pakkamantī n' eva uddhareyya na uddharāpeyya
5 anāpuccham vā gaccheyya, pācittiyam. (Cf. BhPāc no. 14,
Vin IV 39.25-28)

dutiyaśenāsanasikkhāpadam

111. yā pana bhikkhunī saṅghike vihāre seyyam santharitvā
vā santharāpetvā vā taṃ pakkamantī n' eva uddhareyya, na
10 uddharāpeyya, anāpuccham vā gaccheyya, pācittiyam. (Cf.
BhPāc no. 15, Vin IV 41.21-24)

anupakhajjasikkhāpadam

112. yā pana bhikkhunī saṅghike vihāre jānam pubbupa-
gataṃ¹ bhikkhunim anupakhajja seyyam kappeyya yassā
15 sambādho bhavissati sā pakkamissati ti etad eva paccayam
karitvā anaññaṃ, pācittiyam. (Cf. BhPāc no. 16, Vin IV 43.7-
10)

nikkaḍḍhanasikkhāpadam

113. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhunim kupitā anattamanā
20 saṅghikā vihārā nikkāḍḍheyya vā nikkāḍḍhāpeyya vā,
pācittiyam. (Cf. BhPāc no. 17, Vin IV 44.31f.)

vehāsakuṭisikkhāpadam

114. yā pana bhikkhunī saṅghike vihāre uparivehāsakuṭiyā
āhaccapādaṃ mañcaṃ vā pīṭhaṃ vā abhinisīdeyya vā
25 abhinipajjeyya vā, pācittiyam. (Cf. BhPāc no. 18, Vin IV
46.16ff.)

¹Nā, S^c: -bbū-

The first rule about lodgings

110. [BhPāc 14] If any bhikkhunī, having spread out or having had spread out in the open a couch or a chair or a mattress or a stool belonging to the saṅgha, when departing should neither put it away nor have it put away or should go without asking leave, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The second rule about lodgings

111. [BhPāc 15] If any bhikkhunī, having spread out a bed or having had it spread out in a dwelling place belonging to the saṅgha, when departing should neither put it away nor have it put away or should go without asking leave, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about encroaching

112. [BhPāc 16] If any bhikkhunī in a dwelling place belonging to the saṅgha should knowingly make her bed encroaching on a bhikkhunī who arrived before her, [thinking], “She for whom it is too crowded will go away,” having done it for that reason and no other, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about driving out

113. [BhPāc 17] If any bhikkhunī should, being angry [and] displeased, drive a bhikkhunī out from a dwelling place belonging to the saṅgha or have her driven out, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about a lofty cell

114. [BhPāc 18] If any bhikkhunī should, in a dwelling place belonging to the saṅgha in a lofty cell with an upper platform, sit down or lie down [suddenly] on a bed or bench with detachable legs, there is an offence entailing expiation.

mahallakavihārasikkhāpadaṃ

115. mahallakaṃ pana bhikkhuniyā vihāraṃ kārayamānāya
yāva dvāraḥkosā aggaḷaṭṭhapanāya¹ ālokaśandhiparikammāya²
dvatticchadanassa pariyāyaṃ appaharite ṭhitāya adhiṭṭhā-
5 tabbaṃ. tato ce uttari appaharite pi ṭhitā adhiṭṭhaheyya,
pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 19, Vin IV 47.22–26)

sappāṇakasikkhāpadaṃ

116. yā pana bhikkhunī jānaṃ sappāṇakaṃ udakaṃ tiṇaṃ vā
mattikaṃ vā siñceyya vā siñcāpeyya vā, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf.
10 BhPāc no. 20, Vin IV 49.3f.)

bhūtagāmaṃvaggo ekādasamo

I. bhojanavaggo³āvasathapiṇḍasikkhāpadaṃ⁴

117. agilānāya bhikkhuniyā eko āvasathapiṇḍo bhuñjitaḥbo.
15 tato ce uttari⁵ bhuñjeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 31, Vin
IV 70.33f.)

gaṇabhojanasikkhāpadaṃ

118. gaṇabhojane aññatra⁶ samayā pācittiyaṃ. tatthāyaṃ
samayo: gilānasamayo, cīvaradānasamayo, cīvarakārāsama-
20 yo, addhānagamanaśamayo, nāvābhīruhanasamayo,⁷ mahā-
samayo, samaṇabhattasamayo. ayaṃ tattha samayo. (=
BhPāc no. 32, Vin IV 74.24–27)

¹S^c: -ṭṭhanāya; Wij: -la-

²Wij: alo-

³S^c so; other sources omit

⁴S^c: -piṇ- (but -piṇ- in the rule)

⁵Po: -riṃ

⁶Wij: aññattra [sic]

⁷Vin E^c, Wij: -rū-

The rule about a large dwelling place

115. [BhPāc 19] When a bhikkhunī is having a large dwelling place made, an area of two or three coverings [of plaster] is to be determined by her standing in a place without green crops, as far as the doorway for placing the door bolts, for making the window holes. If she should determine more than that, even if standing in a area without green crops, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about containing living things

116. [BhPāc 20] If any bhikkhunī should knowingly pour water containing living things on to grass or earth or have it poured, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The section about plant beings; the eleventh

I. The food section

The rule about meals in public rest houses

117. [BhPāc 31] One meal in a public rest house is to be eaten by a bhikkhunī who is not sick. If she should eat more than that, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about eating in groups

118. [BhPāc 32] In eating in groups, other than on the proper occasion, there is an offence entailing expiation. Herein this is the proper occasion: an occasion of sickness, an occasion of giving robe material, an occasion of making up robes, an occasion of going on a journey, an occasion of embarking on a boat, a special occasion, an occasion of a recluses' meal. This is the proper occasion here.

Kāṇamātusikkhāpadaṃ

119. bhikkhunim pan' eva kulam upagataṃ pūvehi vā
manthehi vā abhihaṭṭhum pavāreyya, ākaṅkhamānāya
bhikkhuniyā dvattipattapūrā paṭiggahetabbā. tato ce uttari¹
5 paṭiggaṇheyya, pācittiyam. dvattipattapūre paṭiggahetvā tato
nīharitvā bhikkhunīhi saddhim samvibhajitabbam. ayaṃ
tatha sāmīci. (Cf. BhPāc no. 34, Vin IV 80.26-31)

vikālabhojanasikkhāpadaṃ

120. yā pana bhikkhunī vikāle khādanīyaṃ vā bhojanīyaṃ vā
10 khādeyya vā bhuñjeyya vā, pācittiyam. (Cf. BhPāc no. 37,
Vin IV 85.33f.)

sannidhikāraśikkhāpadaṃ

121. yā pana bhikkhunī sannidhikāraśam khādanīyaṃ vā
bhojanīyaṃ vā khādeyya vā bhuñjeyya vā, pācittiyam. (Cf.
15 BhPāc no. 38, Vin IV 87.1f.)

dantaponaśikkhāpadaṃ

122. yā pana bhikkhunī adinnaṃ mukhadvāraṃ āhāraṃ
āhareyya aññatra udakadantaponā,² pācittiyam. (Cf. BhPāc
no. 40, Vin IV 90.9f.)

20 uyyojanasikkhāpadaṃ

123. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhunim³ ehāyye,⁴ gāmaṃ vā
nigamaṃ vā piṇḍāya pavississāmā ti tassā dāpetvā vā
adāpetvā vā uyyojeyya gacchāyye,⁵ na me tayā saddhim
kathā vā nisajjā vā phāsu hoti, ekikāya me kathā vā nisajjā vā
25 phāsu hoti ti etad eva paccayaṃ karitvā anaññaṃ, pācittiyam.
(Cf. BhPāc no. 42, Vin IV 93.14-18)

¹Po: -rim²Vin E^c: -ṇā³Po adds: c' evaṃ vadeyya; Wij v.l. adds: evaṃ vadeyya⁴Wij: eh' ayye⁵Wij: gacch' ayye

The “Kāṇā’s mother” rule

119. [BhPāc 34] Should a family bring and invite with cakes or biscuits a bhikkhunī who has arrived, two or three bowlfuls are to be accepted by the bhikkhunī if she wishes. If she should accept more than that, there is an offence entailing expiation. Having accepted two or three bowlfuls, having brought them back from there, they are to be shared with the bhikkhunīs. This is the proper course here.

The rule about eating at the wrong time

120. [BhPāc 37] If any bhikkhunī should chew or consume solid food or soft food at the wrong time, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about storing up

121. [BhPāc 38] If any bhikkhunī should chew or consume solid food or soft food, having stored it up, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about tooth sticks

122. [BhPāc 40] If any bhikkhunī should convey to the opening of her mouth food that has not been given, other than water and a tooth stick, there is an offence entailing expiation

The rule about dismissing

123. [BhPāc 42] If any bhikkhunī [should say thus] to a bhikkhunī, “Come, noble lady. let us go into the village or the town for alms food,” [and then] having had anything given to her or not, she should dismiss her, [saying], “Go, noble lady, talking or sitting with you is not pleasant for me; talking or sitting is pleasant for me all alone,” having done it for that reason and no other. there is an offence entailing expiation.

sabhojanasikkhāpadaṃ

124. yā pana bhikkhunī sabhojane¹ kule anupakhajja
nisajjaṃ kappeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 43, Vin IV
95.7f.)

5 rahopaticchannasikkhāpadaṃ

125. yā pana bhikkhunī purisena saddhiṃ raho paṭicchanne
āsane nisajjaṃ kappeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 44, Vin
IV 96.14f.)

rahonisajjasikkhāpadaṃ

10 126. yā pana bhikkhunī purisena saddhiṃ eken' ekā raho
nisajjaṃ kappeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 45, Vin IV
97.23f.)

m. cārittavaggo²

bhojanavaggo dvādasamo

15 cārittasikkhāpadaṃ

127. yā pana bhikkhunī nimantitā sabhattā samānā santiṃ
bhikkhuniṃ anāpucchā purebhattaṃ vā pacchābhattaṃ vā³
kulesu cārittaṃ āpajjeyya aññatra samayā, pācittiyaṃ.
tathāyaṃ samayo: cīvaradānasamayo, cīvarakārasamayo.
20 ayaṃ tattha samayo. (Cf. BhPāc no. 46, Vin IV 100.9-13)

¹Wij: -na-kule

²Se so; other sources omit

³Se omits p.v.

The rule about having food

124. [BhPāc 43] If any bhikkhunī should intrude upon and take a seat with a family having food,¹ there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about privately on a screened [seat]

125. [BhPāc 44] If any bhikkhunī should take a seat with a man privately on a screened seat, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about sitting down privately

126. [BhPāc 45] If any bhikkhunī should take a seat with a man privately, one woman with one man, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The food section; the twelfth

m. The section about visiting

The rule about conduct

127. [BhPāc 46] If any bhikkhunī being invited and being [provided] with a meal should go either before the meal or after the meal to visit [other] families without taking leave of a bhikkhunī if one is present, other than on the proper occasion, there is an offence entailing expiation. Herein this is the proper occasion: an occasion of giving robe material, an occasion of making up robes. This is the proper occasion here.

¹ *Sabhojana* could mean "having food" or "having sex."

Mahānāmasikkhāpadaṃ

128. agilānāya bhikkhuniyā catumāsappaccayapavāraṇā¹
sāditabbā aññatra² punapavāraṇāya, aññatra³ niccapavāraṇā-
ya. tato ce uttari sādiyeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 47,
5 Vin IV 102,38–103,2)

uyyuttasenāsikkhāpadaṃ

129. yā pana bhikkhunī uyyuttaṃ senaṃ dāssanāya gaccheyya aññatra⁴ tathārūpappaccayā,⁵ pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 48, Vin IV 105,12f.)

- 10 senāvāsasikkhāpadaṃ

130. siyā ca tassā bhikkhuniyā kocid eva paccayo senaṃ gamanāya, dirattatirattaṃ tāya bhikkhuniyā senāya vasi-
tabbaṃ. tato ce uttari vaseyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 49,
Vin IV 106,18ff.)

- 15 uyyodhikasikkhāpadaṃ

131. dirattatirattam ce bhikkhunī senāya vasamānā uyyodhi-
kaṃ vā balaggaṃ vā senābyūhaṃ⁶ vā anīkadassanaṃ vā
gaccheyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 50, Vin IV 107,26ff.)

surāpānasikkhāpadaṃ

- 20 132. surāmerayapāne pācittiyaṃ. (= BhPāc no. 51, Vin IV 110,13)

¹ Vin E^c: cā---pacca-

² Wij: aññattra [sic]

³ Wij: aññattra [sic]

⁴ Wij: aññattra [sic]

⁵ Sc^c: -rūpapa-

⁶ Wij: -byu-

The “Mahānāma” rule

128. [BhPāc. 47] When a bhikkhunī is not sick, an invitation [to accept] requisites for four months may be accepted by her, other than a repeated invitation, other than a permanent invitation. If she should accept for longer than that, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about an army in array

129. [BhPāc 48] If any bhikkhunī should go to see an army in array, other than for sufficient reason, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about staying with an army

130. [BhPāc 49] But there may be some reason for that bhikkhunī going to an army. [Then] that bhikkhunī is to stay with the army for two or three nights. If she should stay longer than that, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about a battlefield

131. [BhPāc 50] If while the bhikkhunī is staying two or three nights with an army, she should go to a battlefield or to the head of the army or to an army array or to an army review, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about drinking liquor

132. [BhPāc 51] In drinking fermented liquors and spirits there is an offence entailing expiation.

aṅgulipatodakasikkhāpadaṃ

133. aṅgulipatodake¹ pācittiyaṃ. (= BhPāc no. 52, Vin IV 111.7)

hāsadhammasikkhāpadaṃ

5 134. udake hāsadhamme² pācittiyaṃ. (= BhPāc no. 53, Vin IV 112.22)

anādariyasikkhāpadaṃ

135. anādariye pācittiyaṃ. (= BhPāc no. 54, Vin IV 113.27)

bhimsāpanasikkhāpadaṃ

10 136. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniṃ bhimsāpeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 55, Vin IV 114.17)

cārittavaggo terasamo

n. jotivaggo³

jotisikkhāpadaṃ

15 137. yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā visibbanāpekkhā jotim samādaheyya vā samādahāpeyya vā aññatra⁴ tathārūpa-ppaccayā, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 56, Vin IV 116.7ff.)

nahānasikkhāpadaṃ

20 138. yā pana bhikkhunī oren⁵ addhamāsaṃ nahāyeyya⁵ aññatra⁶ samayā, pācittiyaṃ. tatthāyaṃ samayo: diyaddho māso seso gimhānan ti vassānassa paṭhamo māso icc ete addhateyyamāsā unhasamayo, pariāhasamayo, gilānasamayo, kammamayo, addhānagamanasamayo, vātavutthisamayo. ayaṃ tattha samayo. (Cf. BhPāc no. 57, Vin IV 119.4-9)

¹Wij: -pā-

²B^c: hasa-; Wij: -ss-

³S^c so; other sources omit

⁴Wij: aññattra [sic]

⁵Vin E^c: nhā-

⁶Wij: aññattra [sic]

The rule about poking with the fingers

133. [BhPāc 52] In poking with the fingers there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about sporting

134. [BhPāc 53] In sporting in the water there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about disrespect

135. [BhPāc 54] In disrespect there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about frightening

136. [BhPāc 55] If any bhikkhunī should frighten a bhikkhunī, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The section about conduct; the thirteenth

n. The fire section

The rule about fires

137. [BhPāc 56] If any bhikkhunī [who is] not sick should light a fire or have one lit, looking to be warmed by it, other than for sufficient reason, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about bathing

138. [BhPāc 57] If any bhikkhunī should bathe at intervals of less than half a month, other than on the proper occasion, there is an offence entailing expiation. Herein, this is the proper occasion: the remaining month and a half of the hot season, the first month of the rainy season, thus these two and a half months are the occasion of hot weather; [the other occasions are] an occasion of fever, an occasion of sickness, an occasion of work, an occasion of going on a journey, an occasion of wind and rain. This is the proper occasion here.

dubbaṇṇakaraṇasikkhāpadaṃ

139. naṃ pana bhikkhuniyā cīvaralābhāya tiṇṇaṃ du-
bbaṇṇakaraṇānaṃ aññataraṃ dubbaṇṇakaraṇaṃ ādāttabbaṃ
nīlaṃ vā kaddamaṃ vā kālasāmaṃ vā. anādā ce bhikkhunī
5 tiṇṇaṃ dubbaṇṇakaraṇānaṃ¹ aññataraṃ dubbaṇṇakaraṇaṃ
naṃ cīvaraṃ paribhuñjeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no.
58, Vin IV 120.21-25)

vikappanasikkhāpadaṃ

140. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhussa vā bhikkhuniyā vā
10 sikkhamānāya vā sāmaṇerassa vā sāmaṇeriyā vā sāmā
cīvaraṃ vikappetvā apaccuddhāraṇaṃ paribhuñjeyya, pācitti-
yaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 59, Vin IV 121.30-33)

apanidhāpanasikkhāpadaṃ

141. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā pattaṃ vā cīvaraṃ vā
15 nisīdanaṃ vā sūciharaṃ vā kāyabandhanaṃ vā apanidheyya
vā apanidhāpeyya vā antamaso hasāpekkhā² pi, pācittiyaṃ.
(Cf. BhPāc no. 60, Vin IV 123.12ff.)

sañciccāsikkhāpadaṃ

142. yā pana bhikkhunī sañcicca pāṇaṃ jīvitaṃ voropeyya,
20 pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 61, Vin IV 124.26f.)

sappāṇakasikkhāpadaṃ

143. yā pana bhikkhunī jānaṃ sappāṇakaṃ udakaṃ pari-
bhuñjeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 62, Vin IV 125.20f.)

ukkoṭanasikkhāpadaṃ

- 25 144. yā pana bhikkhunī jānaṃ yathādhammaṃ nihaṭādhī-
karaṇaṃ punakammāya ukkoṭeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc
no. 63, Vin IV 126.15f.)

¹Wij: -karaṇā- [sic]

²Sc: -ss-; Wij: -kkho

The rule about disfigurement

139. [BhPāc 58] One or other disfigurement of the three disfigurements is to be applied by a bhikkhunī after acquiring a new robe: blue or mud[-colour] or dark brown. If a bhikkhunī should use a new robe without applying one or other disfigurement of the three disfigurements, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about assigning

140. [BhPāc 59] If any bhikkhunī, having herself assigned a robe to a bhikkhu or to a bhikkhunī or to a female trainee or to a male novice or to a female novice, should make use of it without a formal taking back [i.e. rescinding of the assignment], there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about causing to hide

141. [BhPāc 60] If any bhikkhunī should hide or have hidden a bhikkhunī's bowl or robe or sitting cloth or needle case or waistband, even if intending a joke, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about intentionally

142. [BhPāc 61] If any bhikkhunī should intentionally deprive a living being of life, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about containing living things

143. [BhPāc 62] If any bhikkhunī should knowingly use water containing living things, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about reopening

144. [BhPāc 63] If any bhikkhunī should knowingly reopen for renewed action a legal process which has been settled according to the law, there is an offence entailing expiation.

theyyasatthasikkhāpadam

145. yā pana bhikkhunī jānam theyyasatthena saddhim saṃ-
vidhāya ekaddhānamaggaṃ paṭipajjeyya antamaso gāman-
taram pi, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 66, Vin IV 131.21ff.)

5

Ariṭṭhasikkhāpadam

146. yā pana bhikkhunī evaṃ vadeyya tathāhaṃ Bhagavatā
dhammaṃ desitaṃ ājānāmi, yathā ye 'me antarāyikā
dhammā vuttā Bhagavatā, te paṭisevato nālaṃ antarāyāyā ti,
sā bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi evaṃ assa vacanīyā māyye evaṃ
10 avaca, mā Bhagavantam abbhācikkhi, na hi sādhu Bhagavato
abbhakkhānam, na hi Bhagavā evaṃ vadeyya. aneka-
pariyāyenāyye¹ antarāyikā dhammā antarāyikā² vuttā Bhaga-
vatā, alaṃ ca pana te paṭisevato antarāyāyā ti. evaṃ ca sā
bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi vuccamānā tath' eva paggaṇheyya, sā
15 bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi yāvatatiyaṃ samanubhāsitabbā³ tassa
paṭinissaggāya. yāvatatiyaṃ ce samanubhāsiyamānā taṃ
paṭinissajjeyya, icc etaṃ kusalaṃ. no ce paṭinissajjeyya,
pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 68, Vin IV 135.18-30)

jotivaggo cuddasamo

20

ditthivaggo⁴

ukkhittasambhogasikkhāpadam

147. yā pana bhikkhunī jānam tathāvādinīyā bhikkhuniyā
akaṭānudhammāya⁵ taṃ ditthiṃ appaṭinissatthāya saddhim

¹Wij: -yena ayye

²Sc omits

³Wij: -ṇu- [sic]

⁴Sc so; other sources omit

⁵Wij: -tā-

The rule about a caravan of thieves

145. [BhPāc 66] If any bhikkhunī should knowingly by arrangement set out on the same journey with a caravan of thieves, even to the [next] village, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The “Ariṭṭha” rule

146. [BhPāc 68] Whatever bhikkhunī should say thus, “In such a way I understand the Dhamma taught by the Bhagavant that those things said by the Bhagavant to be obstructive are not in fact an obstruction for one indulging in them,” then that bhikkhunī is to be spoken to by the bhikkhunīs thus, “Do not, noble lady, speak thus, do not misrepresent the Bhagavant; for misrepresentation of the Bhagavant is not good; the Bhagavant would not say thus. Obstructive things, noble lady, have been said by the Bhagavant in many ways to be obstructive and are enough of an obstruction for one indulging in them.” And should that bhikkhunī, being spoken to thus by the bhikkhunīs, persist in the same way [as before], then that bhikkhunī is to be admonished by the bhikkhunīs up to the third time to give up that [course of action]. If, being admonished up to the third time, she should give it up, that is good; if she should not give it up, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The fire section; the fourteenth

o. The section on views

The rule about eating together with one who is suspended

147. [BhPāc 69] If any bhikkhunī should knowingly eat together with or live together with or make her bed together with a bhikkhunī who says thus, who has not been dealt with

sambhuñjeyya vā, samvaseyya vā, saha vā seyyaṃ kappeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 69, Vin IV 137,17-20)

Kaṇṭakasikkhāpadaṃ

148. samaṇuddesā pi ce evaṃ vadeyya tathāhaṃ Bhagavatā
 5 dhammaṃ desitaṃ ājānāmi, yathā ye 'me antarāyikā
 dhammā¹ vuttā Bhagavatā, te paṭisevato nālaṃ antarāyāyā ti.
 sā samaṇuddesā bhikkhunīhi evaṃ assa vacanīyā māyye
 samaṇuddese evaṃ avaca, mā Bhagavantaṃ abbhācikkhi, na
 hi sādhu Bhagavato abbhakkhānaṃ, na hi Bhagavā evaṃ
 10 vadeyya. anekapariyāyenāyye² samaṇuddese antarāyikā
 dhāmmā antarāyikā vuttā Bhagavatā, alaṇ ca pana te
 paṭisevato antarāyāyā ti. evaṇ ca sā samaṇuddesā bhikkhu-
 nīhi vuccamānā tath' eva paggaṇheyya, sā samaṇuddesā
 bhikkhunīhi evaṃ assa vacanīyā ajjatagge te ayye samaṇu-
 15 ddese na c' eva so Bhagavā satthā apadisitabbo, yam pi c'
 aññā samaṇuddesā labhanti bhikkhunīhi saddhiṃ diratta-
 tirattaṃ³ sahaseyyaṃ, sāpi te n' atthi, cara pi re, vinassā ti.
 yā pana bhikkhunī jānaṃ tathānāsitaṃ samaṇuddesaṃ
 upalāpeyya vā, upatthāpeyya vā, sambhuñjeyya vā, saha vā
 20 seyyaṃ kappeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 70, Vin IV
 139,18-34)

sahadhammikasikkhāpadaṃ

149. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhunīhi sahadhammikaṃ vucca-
 mānā evaṃ vadeyya na tāvāhaṃ ayye etasmiṃ sikkhāpade
 25 sikkhissāmi yāva na aññaṃ bhikkhuniṃ byattaṃ⁴ vinaya-
 dharaṃ paripucchāmi ti, pācittiyaṃ. sikkhamānāya bhikkha-
 ve bhikkhuniyā aññātabbaṃ paripucchitabbaṃ paripaṇhi-
 tabbaṃ. ayaṃ tattha sāmīci. (Cf. BhPāc no. 71, Vin IV
 141,19-24)

¹Wij adds: antarāyikā

²Wij: -yena ayye

³Vin E^c: dvira-

⁴Wij v.l.: vya-

according to the law, and who has not given up that view, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The “Kaṇṭaka” rule

148. [BhPāc 70] If a novice should say thus, “In such a way I understand the Dhamma taught by the Bhagavant that those things said by the Bhagavant to be obstructive are not in fact an obstruction for one indulging in them,” then that novice is to be spoken to by the bhikkhunīs thus, “Do not, noble lady, novice, speak thus, do not misrepresent the Bhagavant; for misrepresentation of the Bhagavant is not good; the Bhagavant would not say thus. Obstructive things, noble lady, novice, have been said by the Bhagavant in many ways to be obstructive, and are enough of an obstruction for one indulging in them.” And should that novice, being spoken to thus by the bhikkhunīs, persist in the same way [as before], that novice is to be spoken to by the bhikkhunīs thus, “Noble lady, novice, from today the Bhagavant is not to be claimed by you as your teacher nor is yours [the privilege of] making your bed with bhikkhunīs for two or three nights which other novices have. Get away with you, be off!” If any bhikkhunī should knowingly speak to a novice thus expelled or cause her to be supported or eat together with her or make her bed with her, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule regarding accordance with the law

149. [BhPāc 71] If any bhikkhunī, being spoken to by bhikkhunīs in accordance with the law, should say thus, “Noble ladies, I shall not train myself in this training rule until I can ask some other bhikkhunī [who is] a learned expert in the Vinaya about it,” there is an offence entailing expiation. Bhikkhus, [a rule] is to be understood, to be asked [about], to be investigated by a bhikkhunī while [she is] in training. This is the proper course here.

vilekhanasikkhāpadam

150. yā pana bhikkhunī pātimokkhe uddissamāne evaṃ vadeyya kiṃ pan' imehi khuddānukhuddakehi sikkhāpadehi uddiṭṭhehi, yāvad eva kukkucāya vihesāya vilekhāya
 5 saṃvattantī ti, sikkhāpadavivaṇṇake pācittiyam. (Cf. BhPāc no. 72, Vin IV 143.16-19)

mohanasikkhāpadam

151. yā pana bhikkhunī anvaddhamāsaṃ pātimokkhe uddissamāne evaṃ vadeyya idān' eva kho ahaṃ ayye¹
 10 jānāmi, ayam pi kira dhammo suttāgato suttapariyāpanno anvaddhamāsaṃ² uddesaṃ āgacchatī ti. tañ ce bhikkhuniṃ aññā bhikkhuniyo jāneyyūṃ nisinnapubbaṃ imāya bhikkhuniyā dvattikkhattuṃ pātimokkhe uddissamāne, ko pana vādo bhiyyo.³ na ca tassā bhikkhuniyā aññāṇakena mutti atthi, yañ
 15 ca tattha āpattiṃ āpannā, tañ ca yathā dhammo kāretabbo, uttari c' assā moho āropetabbo tassā te ayye alābhā, tassā te dulladdham, yaṃ tvaṃ pātimokkhe uddissamāne na sādhu-kaṃ aṭṭhikavā⁴ manasikarosī ti. idaṃ tasmīṃ mohanake pācittiyam. (Cf. BhPāc no. 73, Vin IV 144.23-33)

20

pahārasikkhāpadam

152. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā kupitā anattamanā pahāraṃ dadeyya, pācittiyam. (Cf. BhPāc no. 74, Vin IV 146.13f.)

talasattikasikkhāpadam

- 25 153. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā kupitā anattamanā talasattikaṃ uggireyya, pācittiyam. (Cf. BhPāc no. 75, Vin IV 147.14f.)

¹Wij omits

²Sc: -ddh-

³Wij: bhī-

⁴Po, Wij so; Bc: aṭṭhiṃ ka-

The rule about confusion

150. [BhPāc 72] If any bhikkhunī should, when the Pātimokkha is being recited, say thus, “Why are these lesser and minor training rules recited? They are only conducive to worry, trouble and confusion,” in disparaging the training rules there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about negligence

151. [BhPāc 73] If any bhikkhunī should, when the Pātimokkha is being recited every half month, say thus, “Only now, noble ladies, do I understand; this matter, it seems, is handed down in the sutta, is contained in the sutta, and comes up for recitation every half month.” If the other bhikkhunīs should know of that bhikkhunī that she had already sat while the Pātimokkha was recited two or three times by that bhikkhunī, then why speak further? There is no release for that bhikkhunī because of her ignorance, and whatever fault she has committed, for that she is to be dealt with as one acting in accordance with the law, and furthermore negligence is to be imputed to her, [saying]. “It is no gain for you, noble lady, it is ill-gained by you, in that when the Pātimokkha is being recited you do not heed well and pay attention.” This is an offence entailing expiation in respect of that negligent person.

The rule about a blow

152. [BhPāc 74] If any bhikkhunī, being angry [and] displeased, should give a bhikkhunī a blow, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about the palm of the hand

153. [BhPāc 75] If any bhikkhunī, being angry [and] displeased, should raise the palm of her hand against a bhikkhunī, there is an offence entailing expiation.

amūlakasikkhāpadaṃ

154. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhunim amūlakena saṅghādisesena anuddhamseyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 76, Vin IV 148.5f.)

5

sañciccasikkhāpadaṃ

155. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhuniyā sañcicca kukkucçaṃ upadaheyya iti 'ssā muhuttam pi aphāsu bhavissatī ti etad eva paccayaṃ karitvā anaññaṃ, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 77, Vin IV 149.9ff.)

10

upassutisikkhāpadaṃ

156. yā pana bhikkhunī bhikkhunīnaṃ bhaṇḍanaajātānaṃ kalahajātānaṃ vivādāpannānaṃ upassutiṃ tiṭṭheyya yaṃ imā¹ bhaṇissanti, taṃ sossāmī ti etad eva paccayaṃ karitvā anaññaṃ, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 78, Vin IV 150.19-22)

15

ditṭhivaggo pannarasamo²p. dhammikavaggo³

kammappaṭibāhanasikkhāpadaṃ

157. yā pana bhikkhunī dhammikānaṃ kammānaṃ chandaṃ datvā pacchā khīyanadhammaṃ āpajjeyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf.

20 BhPāc no. 79, Vin IV 152.6f.)

chandaṃdatvāgamanasikkhāpadaṃ

158. yā pana bhikkhunī saṅghe vinicchayakathāya vattamānāya chandaṃ adatvā uṭṭhāy' āsanā pakkameyya, pācittiyaṃ. (Cf. BhPāc no. 80, Vin IV 153.8ff.)

¹Wij omits

²Se, Wij: -nn-

³Se so; other sources omit

The rule about unfounded

154. [BhPāc 76] If any bhikkhunī should accuse a bhikkhunī of an unfounded [matter] entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about intentionally

155. [BhPāc 77] If any bhikkhunī should intentionally provoke worry in a bhikkhunī, [thinking], “Thus it will be unpleasant for her for a while,” having done it for that reason and no other, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about eavesdropping

156. [BhPāc 78] If any bhikkhunī should stand eavesdropping upon bhikkhunīs who are quarrelling, disputing, engaged in contention, [thinking], “I shall hear what they are saying,” having done it for that reason and no other, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The section on views; the fifteenth

p. The section on lawful acts

The rule about objecting to formal acts

157. [BhPāc 79] If any bhikkhunī, having given her consent [= proxy vote] for lawful acts, should later engage in criticism, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about going not having given consent [= proxy vote]

158. [BhPāc 80] If any bhikkhunī, not having given her consent [= proxy vote], getting up from her seat, should depart while deliberation is still proceeding in the saṅgha, there is an offence entailing expiation.

dubbalasikkhāpadam

159. yā pana bhikkhunī samaggena saṅghena cīvaram datvā
pacchā khīyanadhamma¹ āpajjeyya yathāsanthutam
bhikkhuniyo saṅghikaṃ lābham pariṇāmentī ti, pācittiyam.

5 (Cf. BhPāc no. 81, Vin IV 154.19ff.)

pariṇāmanasikkhāpadam

160. yā pana bhikkhunī jānam saṅghikaṃ lābham pariṇatam
puggalassa pariṇāmeyya, pācittiyam. (Cf. BhPāc no. 82, Vin
IV 156.18f.)

10

ratanasikkhāpadam

161. yā pana bhikkhunī ratanam vā ratanasammataṃ vā
aññatra ajjhārāmā vā ajjhāvasathā vā uggaṇheyya vā
uggaṇhāpeyya vā, pācittiyam. ratanam vā pana bhikkhuniyā
ratanasammataṃ vā ajjhārāme vā ajjhāvasathe vā uggahetvā
15 vā uggahāpetvā vā nikkhipitabbaṃ yassa bhavissati, so
harissatī ti. ayam tattha sāmīci. (Cf. BhPāc no. 84, Vin IV
163.13-18)

sūciḡharasikkhāpadam

162. yā pana bhikkhunī atṭhimayaṃ vā dantamayaṃ vā
20 visāṇamayaṃ vā sūciḡharam kārāpeyya, bhedanakaṃ²
pācittiyam. (Cf. BhPāc no. 86, Vin IV 167.24ff.)

mañcapīṭhasikkhāpadam

163. navaṃ³ pana bhikkhuniyā mañcam vā pīṭham vā
kārayamānāya atṭhaṅgulapādaṃ karetabbaṃ sugataṅgu-
25 lena aññatra heṭṭhimāya aṭaniyā. taṃ atikkāmentiyā
chedanakaṃ pācittiyam. (Cf. BhPāc no. 87, Vin IV 168.24-
27)

¹Vin E^c: khīyadha-

²Wij: cheda-

³Wij: yā

The “worn thin [robe]” rule¹

159. [BhPāc 81] If any bhikkhunī should, after giving a robe [in company] with a united saṅgha, later engage in criticism, [saying], “Bhikkhunīs are apportioning the saṅgha’s property according to acquaintanceship,” there is an offence entailing expiation

The rule about apportioning

160. [BhPāc 82] If any bhikkhunī should knowingly apportion to an individual an apportioned property belonging to the saṅgha, there is an offence entailing expiation.

The rule about treasure

161. [BhPāc 84] If any bhikkhunī should pick up or have picked up a treasure or what is reckoned as a treasure, other than in her own monastery or in her own dwelling place, there is an offence entailing expiation. But having picked up or having had picked up a treasure or what is reckoned a treasure in her own monastery or in her own dwelling place it is to be deposited by a bhikkhunī, [thinking], “He to whom it belongs will take it.” This is the proper course here.

The rule about needle cases

162. [BhPāc 86] If any bhikkhunī should have a needle case made of bone or ivory or horn, there is an offence entailing expiation with breaking up.

The rule about beds and benches

163. [BhPāc 87] When a bhikkhunī is having a new bed or bench made, it is to be made with legs eight fingers of the sugata finger high, other than [= excluding] the frame below. For one exceeding that, there is an offence entailing expiation with cutting down.

¹Or: The “Dabba” rule.

tūlonaddhasikkhāpadam

164. yā pana bhikkhunī mañcam vā pīṭham vā tūlonaddham¹
kāraṇeṇya, uddālanakam pācittiyam. (Cf. BhPāc no. 88, Vin
IV 169.29f.)

5

kaṇḍuppaṭicchādīsikkhāpadam

165. kaṇḍuppaṭicchādī² pana bhikkhunīyā kārayamānāya
pamāṇikā kāreṭabbā. tatr' idam pamāṇam: dīghaso catasso
vidatthiyo sugatavidatthiyā, tiriyaṃ dve vidatthiyo. taṃ
atikkāmentiyā chedanakam pācittiyam. (Cf. BhPāc no. 90,
10 Vin IV 172.11-14)

Nandasikkhāpadam

166. yā pana bhikkhunī sugatacīvarappamāṇam cīvaram
kāraṇeṇya, atirekam vā, chedanakam pācittiyam. tatr' idam
sugatassa sugatacīvarappamāṇam: dīghaso nava vidatthiyo
15 sugatavidatthiyā, tiriyaṃ cha vidatthiyo, idam sugatassa
sugatacīvarappamāṇan ti. (Cf. BhPāc no. 92, Vin IV 173.22-
26)

dhammikavaggo soḷasamo

uddiṭṭhā kho ayyāyo chasatṭhisatā pācittiyā dhammā.
20 tatthāyyāyo³ pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? dutiyam
pi pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? tatiyam pi pucchāmi
kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? parisuddh' etthāyyāyo,⁴ tasmā tuṇhī,
evam etaṃ dhārayāmi ti. (Vin IV 345.24-28)

⁵pācittiyā⁶ niṭṭhitā⁷.

¹Wij: tu-

²Wij: -p-

³Vin E^c: tatth' a-

⁴Vin E^c: etth' a-

⁵Wij adds: chasatṭhisatā

⁶S^c adds: dhammā

⁷Phyc: samittā.

The rule about stuffed with cotton

164. [BhPāc 88] If any bhikkhunī should have a bed or bench stuffed with cotton, there is an offence entailing expiation with tearing off.

The rule about an itch-covering cloth

165. [BhPāc 90] When a bhikkhunī is having an itch-covering cloth made, it must be made according to the [prescribed] measurements. Herein these are the measurements: in length, four spans of the sugata span; in width, two spans. For one exceeding that, there is an offence entailing expiation with cutting down.

The “Nanda” rule

166. [BhPāc 92] If any bhikkhunī should have a robe made to the measurements of a sugata robe or larger, there is an offence entailing expiation with cutting down. Herein these are the measurements of the Sugata’s sugata robe: in length nine spans of the sugata span, in width six spans. These are the measurements of the Sugata’s sugata robe.

The section on lawful acts; the sixteenth

Recited, noble ladies, are the hundred and sixty-six matters entailing expiation.

Herein I ask the noble ladies: Are you pure in this? A second time I ask: Are you pure in this? For the third time I ask: Are you pure in this? The noble ladies are pure in this; therefore they are silent. Thus I record it.

The section on matters entailing
simple expiation is finished

G. pāṭidesanīyā

ime kho panāyyāyo¹ attha pāṭidesanīyā² dhammā udde-
saṃ āgacchanti. (Vin IV 346.1f.)

sappiviññāpanasikkhāpadaṃ

- 5 1. yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā sappiṃ viññāpetvā bhuñjeyya,
paṭidesetabbaṃ tāya bhikkhuniyā gārayhaṃ ayye dhammaṃ
āpajjīṃ asappāyaṃ pāṭidesanīyaṃ,³ taṃ paṭidesemī ti. (Vin
IV 347.3-6)

telaviññāpanasikkhāpadaṃ

- 10 2. yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā telaṃ viññāpetvā bhuñjeyya,
⁴paṭidesetabbaṃ tāya bhikkhuniyā gārayhaṃ ayye dhammaṃ
āpajjīṃ asappāyaṃ pāṭidesanīyaṃ,⁴ taṃ paṭidesemī ti. (Vin
IV 347.32-48.3)

madhuviññāpanasikkhāpadaṃ

- 15 3. yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā madhuṃ viññāpetvā bhuñjeyya,
paṭidesetabbaṃ tāya bhikkhuniyā gārayhaṃ ayye dhammaṃ
āpajjīṃ asappāyaṃ pāṭidesanīyaṃ, taṃ paṭidesemī ti. (Vin
IV 347.32-48.3)

phāṇitaviññāpanasikkhāpadaṃ

- 20 4. yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā phāṇitaṃ viññāpetvā bhuñ-
jeyya, paṭidesetabbaṃ tāya bhikkhuniyā gārayhaṃ ayye
dhammaṃ āpajjīṃ asappāyaṃ pāṭidesanīyaṃ, taṃ paṭi-
desemī ti. (Vin IV 347.32-48.3)

¹Vin E^c: pan' a-

²Vin E^c: -ni-

³Vin E^c: -ni-

⁴⁻⁴For rules 2-7. B^c: pa, S^c: pe

G. The matters to be confessed

Now, noble ladies, these eight matters to be confessed come up for recitation.

The rule about asking for ghee

1. If any bhikkhūnī [who is] not sick, having asked for ghee, should partake of it, it is to be confessed by that bhikkhūnī, [saying], “I have committed, noble ladies, a censurable offence, unbecoming, to be confessed. That I confess.”

The rule about asking for oil

2. If any bhikkhūnī [who is] not sick, having asked for oil, should partake of it, it is to be confessed by that bhikkhūnī, [saying], “I have committed, noble ladies, a censurable offence, unbecoming, to be confessed. That I confess.”

The rule about asking for honey

3. If any bhikkhūnī [who is] not sick, having asked for honey, should partake of it, it is to be confessed by that bhikkhūnī, [saying], “I have committed, noble ladies, a censurable offence, unbecoming, to be confessed. That I confess.”

The rule about asking for molasses

4. If any bhikkhūnī [who is] not sick, having asked for molasses, should partake of it, it is to be confessed by that bhikkhūnī, [saying], “I have committed, noble ladies, a censurable offence, unbecoming, to be confessed. That I confess.”

macchaviññāpanasikkhāpadam

5. yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā maccham viññāpetvā bhuñjeyya, paṭidesetabbam tāya bhikkhuniyā gārayham ayye dhammam āpajjīm asappāyam pāṭidesanīyam, tam paṭidesemī ti. (Vin IV 347.32-48.3)

maṃsaviññāpanasikkhāpadam

6. yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā maṃsam viññāpetvā bhuñjeyya, paṭidesetabbam tāya bhikkhuniyā gārayham ayye dhammam āpajjīm asappāyam pāṭidesanīyam, tam paṭidesemī ti. (Vin IV 347.32-48.3)

khīraviññāpanasikkhāpadam

7. yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā khīram viññāpetvā bhuñjeyya, paṭidesetabbam tāya bhikkhuniyā gārayham ayye dhammam āpajjīm asappāyam pāṭidesanīyam, tam paṭidesemī ti. (Vin IV 347.32-48.3)

dadhiviññāpanasikkhāpadam

8. yā pana bhikkhunī agilānā dadhiṃ viññāpetvā bhuñjeyya, paṭidesetabbam tāya bhikkhuniyā gārayham ayye dhammam āpajjīm asappāyam pāṭidesanīyam, tam paṭidesemī ti. (Vin IV 347.32-48.3)

uddiṭṭhā kho ayyāyo attha pāṭidesanīyā dhammā.

- tatthāyyāyo¹ pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? dutiyam pi pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? tatiyam pi pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? parisuddh' etthāyyāyo,² tasmā tuṇhī,
25 evam etaṃ dhārayāmi ti. (Vin IV 348.16-20)

pāṭidesanīyā nīṭṭhitā.

¹Vin E^c: tatth' a-

²Vin E^c: etth' a-

The rule about asking for fish

5. If any bhikkhunī [who is] not sick, having asked for fish, should partake of it, it is to be confessed by that bhikkhunī, [saying], “I have committed, noble ladies, a censurable offence, unbecoming, to be confessed. That I confess.”

The rule about asking for meat

6. If any bhikkhunī [who is] not sick, having asked for meat, should partake of it, it is to be confessed by that bhikkhunī, [saying], “I have committed, noble ladies, a censurable offence, unbecoming, to be confessed. That I confess.”

The rule about asking for milk

7. If any bhikkhunī [who is] not sick, having asked for milk, should partake of it, it is to be confessed by that bhikkhunī, [saying], “I have committed, noble ladies, a censurable offence, unbecoming, to be confessed. That I confess.”

The rule about asking for curds

8. If any bhikkhunī [who is] not sick, having asked for curds, should partake of it, it is to be confessed by that bhikkhunī, [saying]: “I have committed, noble ladies, a censurable offence, unbecoming, to be confessed. That I confess.”

Recited, noble ladies, are the eight matters to be confessed.

Herein I ask the noble ladies: Are you pure in this? A second time I ask: Are you pure in this? For the third time I ask: Are you pure in this? The noble ladies are pure in this; therefore they are silent. Thus I record it.

The matters to be confessed are finished

H. sekhiyā

ime kho panāyyāyo¹ sekhiyā dhammā uddesaṃ
āgacchanti. (Vin IV 349.1)

a. parimaṇḍalavaggo²

5 parimaṇḍalasikkhāpadaṃ

1. parimaṇḍalaṃ nivāseṣṣāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (Vin IV
349.15 = BhSekh no. 1, Vin IV 185.18)

2. parimaṇḍalaṃ pārupissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh
no. 2, Vin IV 185.27)

10 suppaṭicchannasikkhāpadaṃ

3. suppaṭicchannā antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
(= BhSekh no. 3, Vin IV 186.8f.)

4. suppaṭicchannā antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
(= BhSekh no. 4, Vin IV 186.8f.)

15 susaṃvutasikkhāpadaṃ

5. susaṃvutā antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh
no. 5, Vin IV 186.19f.)

6. susaṃvutā antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh
no. 6, Vin IV 186.19f.)

20 okkhittacakkhusikkhāpadaṃ

7. okkhittacakkhunī³ antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā
karaṇīyā. (Cf. BhSekh no. 7, Vin IV 186.29f.)

¹Vin E^c: pan' a-

²Se so: other sources omit

³Po: okhittacakkhu

H. The rules of training

Now, noble ladies, these rules of training come up for recitation.

a. The section about even all around

The rules about even all around

1. I shall wear [the under robe] even all round; [this is] a training to be done.
2. I shall put on [the upper robe] even all round; [this is] a training to be done]

The rules about well covered

3. I shall go well covered among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.
4. I shall sit well covered among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rules about being well restrained

5. I shall go well restrained among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.
6. I shall sit well restrained among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rules about downcast eyes

7. I shall go with downcast eyes among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done

8. okkhittacakkhunī¹ antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (Cf. BhSekh no. 8, Vin IV 186.29f.)

ukkhittakasikkhāpadam

9. na ukkhittakāya antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
5 (= BhSekh no. 9, Vin IV 187.4f.)

10. na ukkhittakāya antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 10, Vin IV 187.4f.)

parimaṇḍalavaggo paṭhamo

b. ujjagghikavaggo²

10 ujjagghikasikkhāpadam

11. na ujjagghikāya³ antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 11, Vin IV 187.16f.)

12. na ujjagghikāya⁴ antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 12, Vin IV 187.16f.)

15 uccasaddasikkhāpadam

13. appasaddā antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (Cf. BhSekh no. 13, Vin IV 187.27f.)

14. appasaddā antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (Cf. BhSekh no. 14, Vin IV 187.27f.)

20 kāyappacālakasikkhāpadam

15. na kāyappacālakam antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 15, Vin IV 188.4f.)

16. na kāyappacālakam antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 16, Vin IV 188.4f.)

¹Po: okhittacakkhu

²Sc so: other sources omit

³Vin Ec: -gg-

⁴Vin Ec: -gg-

8. I shall sit with downcast eyes among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rules about [robes] hitched up

9. I shall not go with [robes] hitched up among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

10. I shall not sit with [robes] hitched up among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The section about even all round; the first

b. The section about a loud laugh

The rules about a loud laugh

11. I shall not go with a loud laugh [= laughing loudly] among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

12. I shall not sit with a loud laugh [= laughing loudly] among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rules about a loud sound

13. I shall go with little noise [= speaking quietly] among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

14. I shall sit with little noise [= speaking quietly] among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rules about swaying the body, etc.

15. I shall not go swaying my body among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

16. I shall not sit swaying my body among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

bāhuppacālakasikkhāpadam

17. na bāhuppacālakaṃ antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā
karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 17, Vin IV 188,17f.)

18. na bāhuppacālakaṃ antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā
5 karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 18, Vin IV 188,17f.)

sīsappacālakasikkhāpadam

19. na sīsappacālakaṃ antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā
karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 19, Vin IV 188,28f.)

20. na sīsappacālakaṃ antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā
10 karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 20, Vin IV 188,28f.)

*ujjagghikavaggo dutiyo**c. khambhakatavaggo¹**khambhakatasikkhāpadam*

21. na khambhakatā antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā
15 karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 21, Vin IV 188,35f.)

22. na khambhakatā antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā
karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 22, Vin IV 188,35f.)

ogunṭhitasikkhāpadam

23. na ogunṭhitā antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (=
20 BhSekh no. 23, Vin IV 189,9f.)

24. na ogunṭhitā antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
(= BhSekh no. 24, Vin IV 189,9f.)

ukkuṭikasikkhāpadam

25. na ukkuṭikāya antaraghare gamissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
25 (= BhSekh no. 25, Vin IV 189,19f.)

¹So; other sources omit

The rules about swinging the arms

17. I shall not go swinging my arms among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

18. I shall not sit swinging my arms among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rules about shaking the head

19. I shall not go shaking my head among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

20. I shall not sit shaking my head among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The section about a loud laugh; the second

c. The section about with arms akimbo

The rules about with arms akimbo

21. I shall not go with arms akimbo among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

22. I shall not sit with arms akimbo among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rules about with head covered

23. I shall not go with head covered among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

24. I shall not sit with head covered among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about walking on toes or heels

25. I shall not go walking on toes or heels among the houses [= into a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

pallatthikasikkhāpadam

26. na pallatthikāya antaraghare nisīdissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 26, Vin IV 189.27f.)

sakkaccapaṭiggahaṇasikkhāpadam

5 27. sakkaccaṃ piṇḍapātaṃ paṭiggahessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 27, Vin IV 190.3f.)

pattasaññinīpaṭiggahaṇasikkhāpadam

28. pattasaññinī piṇḍapātaṃ paṭiggahessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 28, Vin IV 190.13f.)

10 samasūpakapaṭiggahaṇasikkhāpadam

29. samasūpakaṃ piṇḍapātaṃ paṭiggahessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 29, Vin IV 190.23f.)

samatitthikasikkhāpadam

30. samatitthikaṃ¹ piṇḍapātaṃ paṭiggahessāmī ti sikkhā
15 karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 30, Vin IV 190.34f.)

khambhakatavaggo tatiyo

d. sakkaccavaggo²

sakkaccabhuñjanasikkhāpadam

31. sakkaccaṃ piṇḍapātaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (=
20 BhSekh no. 31, Vin IV 191.9f.)

pattasaññinībhuñjanasikkhāpadam

32. pattasaññinī piṇḍapātaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
(= BhSekh no. 32, Vin IV 191.19f.)

sapaḍānasikkhāpadam

25 33. sapaḍānaṃ piṇḍapātaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā.
(= BhSekh no. 33, Vin IV 191.28f.)

¹ Vin E^c (in BhPāt). B^c v.l. S^c v.l. so; B^c, Wij: -ttikaṃ

² S^c so; other sources omit

The rule about lolling

26. I shall not sit lolling [= holding on to my knees ?] among the houses [= in a village]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about accepting appreciatively

27. I shall accept alms food appreciatively; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about accepting with attention to the bowl

28. I shall accept alms food with attention to the bowl; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about accepting curry in proportion

29. I shall accept alms food with curry in proportion; [this is] a training to be done.

The rules about level with the edge

30. I shall accept alms food level with the edge [of the bowl]; [this is] a training to be done.

The section on arms akimbo; the third

d. The section about appreciatively

The rule about eating appreciatively

31. I shall eat alms food appreciatively; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about eating with attention on the bowl

32. I shall eat alms food with attention on the bowl; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about methodically

33. I shall eat alms food methodically; [this is] a training to be done.

samasūpakasikkhāpadaṃ

34. samasūpakam piṇḍapātaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 34, Vin IV 192.4f.)

thūpakatasikkhāpadaṃ

5 35. na thūpakato¹ omadditvā piṇḍapātaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 35, Vin IV 192.15f.)

odanappaṭicchādanasikkhāpadaṃ

36. na sūpaṃ vā byañjanaṃ vā odanena paṭicchādessāmī
bhiyyokamyataṃ upādāyā ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no.
10 36, Vin IV 192.27ff.)

sūpodanaviññattisikkhāpadaṃ

37. na sūpaṃ vā odanaṃ vā agilānā attano atthāya
viññāpetvā bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 37,
Vin IV 193.30f.)

15 38. na ujjhānasaññinī² paresaṃ pattam olokessāmī ti sikkhā
karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 38, Vin IV 194.4f.)

kabalasikkhāpadaṃ

39. nātimahantaṃ kabaḷaṃ karissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (=
20 BhSekh no. 39, Vin IV 194.15f.)

ālopasikkhāpadaṃ

40. parimaṇḍalaṃ ālopaṃ karissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (=
BhSekh no. 40, Vin IV 194.25f.)

sakkaccavaggo catuttho

¹Vin E^c: -pato

²S^c: -ṇa-

³S^c: -ṇa-

The rule about curry in proportion

34. I shall eat alms food with curry in proportion; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about not from the top

35. I shall not eat alms food from the top, [but] having pressed it down; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about hiding food

36. I shall not hide curry or condiment with rice because of desire to get more; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about asking for curry and rice

37. I shall not, when not sick, having asked for curry or rice for my own benefit, eat it; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about finding fault

38. I shall not, finding fault, look at the bowl of others; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about mouthfuls

39. I shall not make up too large a mouthful; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about a piece [of food]

40. I shall make a piece [of food] into a round [ball]; [this is] a training to be done.

The section about appreciatively; the fourth

e. kabaḷavaggo¹

anāhaṭasikkhāpadaṃ

41. na anāhaṭe kabaḷe mukhadvāraṃ vivarissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 41, Vin IV 195.1f.)

5

bhuñjamānasikkhāpadaṃ

42. na bhuñjamānā sabbahatthaṃ² mukhe pakkhipissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (Cf. BhSekh no. 42, Vin IV 195.10f.)

sakabaḷasikkhāpadaṃ

10 43. na sakabaḷena mukhena byāharissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 43, Vin IV 195.19f.)

piṇḍukkhepakasikkhāpadaṃ³

44. na piṇḍukkhepakaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 44, Vin IV 195.27f.)

kabaḷāvacchedakasikkhāpadaṃ

15 45. na kabaḷāvacchedakaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 45, Vin IV 196.1f.)

avagaṇḍakāraḥasikkhāpadaṃ

46. na avagaṇḍakāraḥaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 46, Vin IV 196.11f.)

20

hatthaniddhunakasikkhāpadaṃ

47. na hatthaniddhunaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 47, Vin IV 196.21f.)

sitthāvakāraḥasikkhāpadaṃ

25 48. na sitthāvakāraḥaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 48, Vin IV 196.31f.)

¹Sc so: other sources omit

²Vin Ec: sabbam ha-

³Sc: pīṇ- (but *piṇ-* in the rule)

e. The section about mouthfuls

The rule about not brought

41. I shall not open my mouth when the mouthful is not brought to it [= until the mouthful is brought]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about eating

42. I shall not put the whole hand into my mouth when eating; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about full [with food]

43. I shall not speak with my mouth full; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about tossing up a lump

44. I shall not eat tossing up a lump of food [into my mouth]; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about breaking up a mouthful

45. I shall not eat breaking up a mouthful; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about stuffing out [the cheeks]

46. I shall not eat stuffing out my cheeks; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about shaking the hand about

47. I shall not eat shaking my hand about; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about scattering rice about

48. I shall not eat scattering rice about; [this is] a training to be done.

jivhānicchāraśikkhāpādaṃ

49. na jivhānicchāraśaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti śikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 49, Vin IV 197.6f.)

capucapukāraśikkhāpādaṃ

5 50. na capucapukāraśaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti śikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 50, Vin IV 197.13f.)

kabalavaggo pañcamo

f. surusuruvaggo¹

surusurukāraśikkhāpādaṃ

10 51. na surusurukāraśaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti śikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 51, Vin IV 197.34f.)

hatthanillehakaśikkhāpādaṃ

52. na hatthanillehakaśaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti śikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 52, Vin IV 198.5f.)

15 pattanillehakaśikkhāpādaṃ

53. na pattanillehakaśaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti śikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 53, Vin IV 198.11f.)

oṭṭhanillehakaśikkhāpādaṃ

20 54. na oṭṭhanillehakaśaṃ bhuñjissāmī ti śikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 54, Vin IV 198.17)

sāmisasikkhāpādaṃ

55. na sāmisena hatthena pāṇiyathālakam² paṭiggahessāmī ti śikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 55, Vin IV 198.34f.)

sasitthakaśikkhāpādaṃ

25 56. na sasitthakaśaṃ pattadhovanam antaraghare chaddessāmī ti śikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 56, Vin IV 199.15f.)

¹Sc so; other sources omit

²Vin E^c: -ni-

The rule about putting the tongue out

49. I shall not eat putting my tongue out; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about making a chomping noise [= smacking my lips]

50. I shall not eat making a chomping noise [= smacking my lips]; [this is] a training to be done.

The section about mouthfuls; the fifth

f. The section on making a sucking noise

The rule about making a sucking sound

51. I shall not eat making a sucking sound; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about licking the hand

52. I shall not eat licking my hand; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about licking the bowl

53. I shall not eat licking the bowl; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about licking the lips

54. I shall not eat licking my lips; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about soiled by food

55. I shall not accept a drinking-water pot with a hand soiled by food; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about with rice grains

56. I shall not among the houses [= in a village] throw away bowl-washing [water] with rice grains in it; [this is] a training to be done.

chattapāṇisikkhāpadaṃ

57. na chattapāṇissa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti
sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 57, Vin IV 200.9f.)

daṇḍapāṇisikkhāpadaṃ

5 58. na daṇḍapāṇissa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti
sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 58, Vin IV 200.25f.)

satthapāṇisikkhāpadaṃ

59. na satthapāṇissa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti
sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 59, Vin IV 200.36f.)

10 āvudhapāṇisikkhāpadaṃ

60. na āvudhapāṇissa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti
sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 60, Vin IV 201.6f.)

surusuruvaggo chaṭṭho

g. pādukāvaggo¹

15 pādukasikkhāpadaṃ

61. na pādukārūḥassa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti
sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 61, Vin IV 201.14f.)

upāhanasikkhāpadaṃ

20 62. na upāhanārūḥassa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti
sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 62, Vin IV 201.21f.)

yānasikkhāpadaṃ

63. na yānatassa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti sikkhā
karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 63, Vin IV 201.25f.)

sayanasikkhāpadaṃ

25 64. na sayanatassa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti
sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 64, Vin IV 202.3f.)

¹So; other sources omit

The rule about one with an umbrella in hand

57. I shall not teach Dhamma to one having an umbrella in his hand [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about one with a staff in hand

58. I shall not teach Dhamma to one with a staff in his hand [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about one with a knife in hand

59. I shall not teach Dhamma to one with a knife in his hand [who is] not-sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about one with a weapon in hand

60. I shall not teach Dhamma to one with a weapon in his hand [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The section on making a sucking noise; the sixth

g. The section about shoes

The rule about shoes

61. I shall not teach Dhamma to one wearing shoes [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about sandals

62. I shall not teach Dhamma to one wearing sandals [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about vehicles

63. I shall not teach Dhamma to one in a vehicle [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about couches

64. I shall not teach Dhamma to one on a couch [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

pallatthikasikkhāpadam

65. na pallatthikāya nisinnassa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 65, Vin IV 202,12f.)

5

veṭṭhasikkhāpadam

66. na veṭṭhasīsassa¹ agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 66, Vin IV 202,22f.)

oguṇṭṭhasikkhāpadam

67. na uguṇṭṭhasīsassa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti
10 sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 67, Vin IV 202,34f.)

chamāsikkhāpadam

68. na chamāyaṃ nisīditvā āsane nisinnassa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 68, Vin IV 203,11f.)

15

nīcāsanasikkhāpadam

69. na nīce āsane nisīditvā ucce āsane nisinnassa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (= BhSekh no. 69, Vin IV 204,22ff.)

ṭṭhitāsikkhāpadam

20 70. na ṭṭhitā nisinnassa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (Cf. BhSekh no. 70, Vin IV 204,33f.)

pacchatogacchantīsikkhāpadam

71. na pacchato gacchantī purato gacchantassa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (Cf. BhSekh no. 71,
25 Vin IV 205,4f.)

¹ Vin E^c: -ṭṭh-

The rule about lolling

65. I shall not teach Dhamma to one who sits lolling [= holding on to her knees ?] [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about wrapped round

66. I shall not teach Dhamma to one with his head wrapped around [with a turban] [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about covered up

67. I shall not teach Dhamma to one with his head covered up [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about on the ground

68. I shall not while sitting on the ground teach Dhamma to one sitting on a seat [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about low seats

69. I shall not while sitting on a low seat teach Dhamma to one sitting on a high seat [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about standing

70. I shall not while standing teach Dhamma to one sitting [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about going behind

71. I shall not while going behind teach Dhamma to one going in front [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

uppathenagacchantīsikkhāpadaṃ

72. na uppathena gacchantī pathena gacchantassa agilānassa dhammaṃ desessāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (Cf. BhSekh no. 72. Vin IV 205.10f.)

5 ṭhitā-uccārasikkhāpadaṃ¹

73. na ṭhitā agilānā uccāraṃ vā passāvaṃ vā karissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (Cf. BhSekh no. 73, Vin IV 205.16f.)

harite-uccārasikkhāpadaṃ

74. na harite agilānā uccāraṃ vā passāvaṃ vā khelaṃ vā
10 karissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (Cf. BhSekh no. 74, Vin IV 205.25f.)

udake-uccārasikkhāpadaṃ

75. na udake agilānā uccāraṃ vā passāvaṃ vā khelaṃ vā
15 karissāmī ti sikkhā karaṇīyā. (Vin IV 350.8f.; cf. BhSekh no. 75, Vin IV 206.22f.)

pādukavaggo sattamo

udditthā kho ayyāyo sekhiyā dhammā.

tatthāyyāyo² ³pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? dutiyam
pi pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? tatiyam pi pucchāmi
20 kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? parisuddh' etthāyyāyo, tasmā tuṇhī,
evam etaṃ³ dhārayāmī ti. (Vin IV 350.25f.)

sekhiyā⁴ nitthitā.

¹S^c adds: tayo pakiṇṇakā ("the three miscellaneous rules")

²Vin E^c: tatth' a-

³⁻³Vin E^c: ...

⁴S^c adds: dhammā

The rule about going beside a path

72. I shall not while going beside a path teach Dhamma to one going on the path [who is] not sick; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about defæcating while standing up

73. I shall not, when not sick, defæcate or urinate while standing up; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about defæcating on green plants

74. I shall not, when not sick, defæcate or urinate or spit on green plants; [this is] a training to be done.

The rule about defæcating in water

75. I shall not, when not sick, defæcate or urinate or spit into water; [this is] a training to be done.

The section about shoes; the seventh

Recited, noble ladies, are the rules of training.

Herein I ask the noble ladies: Are you pure in this? A second time I ask the noble ladies: Are you pure in this? A third time I ask the noble ladies: Are you pure in this? The noble ladies are pure in this; therefore they are silent. So I record it.

The rules of training are finished

I. adhikaraṇasamathā

ime kho panāyyāyo¹ satta adhikaraṇasamathā dhammā
uddesaṃ āgacchanti.

uppannuppannānaṃ adhikaraṇānaṃ samathāya vūpa-
5 samāya

sammukhāvinayo dātabbo,
sativinayo dātabbo,
amūlḥavinayo dātabbo,
paṭiññāya kāretabbam.

10 yebhuyyasikā,
tassapāpiyasikā,
tiṇavatthārako ti.

uddiṭṭhā kho ayyāyo satta adhikaraṇasamathā dhammā.

tatthāyyāyo² ³pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? dutiyam
15 pi pucchāmi kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? tatiyam pi pucchāmi
kacci 'ttha parisuddhā? parisuddh' etthāyyāyo, tasmā tuṇhī,
evam etaṃ³ dhārayāmī ti. (Vin IV 351,1-7)

adhikaraṇasamathā⁴ niṭṭhitā.

uddiṭṭhaṃ kho ayyāyo nidānaṃ,
20 uddiṭṭhā aṭṭha pārājikā dhammā,
uddiṭṭhā sattarasa saṅghādisesā dhammā,
uddiṭṭhā tiṃsa nissaggiyā pācittiyā dhammā,
uddiṭṭhā chasatṭhisatā pācittiyā dhammā,
uddiṭṭhā aṭṭha pāṭidesanīyā⁵ dhammā,
25 uddiṭṭhā sekhiyā dhammā,
uddiṭṭhā satta adhikaraṇasamathā dhammā.

¹ Vin E^c: pan' a-

² Vin E^c: tatth' a-

³⁻³ Vin E^c: ...

⁴ S^c adds: dhammā

⁵ Vin E^c: -ni-

I. The settlement of legal processes

Now, noble ladies, these seven matters for the settlement of legal processes come up for recitation.

For the settlement, for the stilling of legal processes whenever they may arise:

1. A verdict "in the presence of" may be given;
2. A verdict of mindfulness may be given;
3. A verdict of insanity may be given;
4. It may be carried out according to what is admitted;
5. The decision of the majority;
6. By [giving a penalty] to one for further evil;
7. The covering up [as] with grass.

Recited, noble ladies, are the seven matters of the settlement of legal processes.

Herein I ask the noble ladies: Are you pure in this? A second time I ask: Are you pure in this? A third time I ask: Are you pure in this? The noble ladies are pure in this; therefore they are silent. Thus I record it.

The settlement of legal processes is finished

Recited, noble ladies, is the introduction,
 recited are the eight matters entailing defeat,
 recited are the seventeen matters entailing a formal
 meeting of the saṅgha,
 recited are the thirty matters entailing expiation with
 forfeiture,
 recited are the one hundred and sixty-six matters entailing
 expiation,
 recited are the eight matters to be confessed,
 recited are the rules for training,
 recited are the seven matters for the settlement of legal
 processes.

ettakaṃ tassa Bhagavato suttāgataṃ suttapariyāpannaṃ
 anvaddhamāsaṃ¹ uddesaṃ āgacchati, tattha sabbāh' eva
 samaggāhi sammodamānāhi avivadamānāhi sikkhitabban ti.
 (Vin IV 351,8-16)

5

vitthāruddeso catuttho²

bhikkhunīpātimokkhaṃ niṭṭhitaṃ.

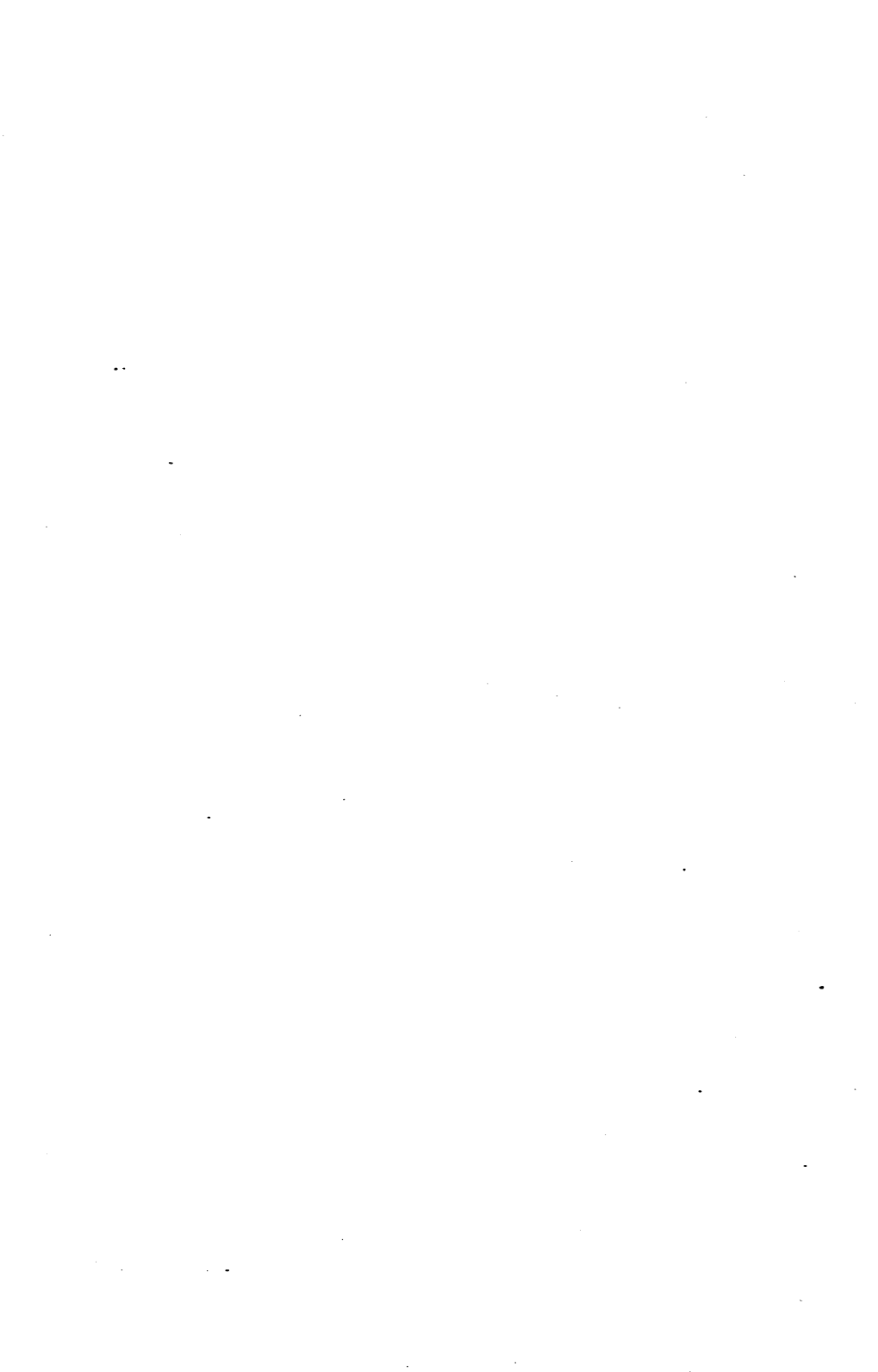
¹S^c: -ddh-

²B^c so; Wij; other editions omit

So much, come down in the sutta of the Bhagavant, contained in the sutta, comes up for recitation every half month. Herein all are to train — united, in agreement, not disputing.

The recitation of the enumeration; the fourth

The Bhikkhunī Pātimokkha is finished.



I. INDEX OF PĀLI WORDS

- 'ttha 6.5-7, 10.13-15, 22.11-13, 26.2-4, 44.18-20, 82.9-11, 86.13-15, 106.24f., 108.1.18-20, 114.22-24, 122.5-7, 142.9-11, 162.2-4, 222.19-21, 226.21-23, 246.18-20, 248.14-16
 'mā 130.5.10
 'me 70.3.22, 212.7, 214.5
 'sī 8.12, 116.11
 'sī 8.12, 116.11
 'ssa 6.2, 76.6, 116.16
 'ssā 114.19, 218.7
 akatānudhammāya 212.23
 akatānudhammena 70.16
 akatasahāyaṃ 120.4
 akatasahāyo 120.7
 akāmā 22.4
 akālacīvaraṃ 28.16, 144.9, 150.5
 akāsi 18.25, 138.19
 akkoseyya 180.10
 akkhantiyā 134.13.23
 agārikassa 172.14, 178.13
 agilānassa 102.11, 14.17, 20, 104.3, 6.9, 12, 15, 18, 21, 24, 106.2, 5, 8, 11, 242.2, 5, 8, 11, 16, 19, 22, 25, 244.2, 6, 9, 12, 16, 20, 23, 246.2
 agilānā 190.10, 13, 208.15, 224.5, 10, 15, 20, 226.2, 7, 12, 17, 236.12, 246.6, 9, 13
 agilānāya 200.14, 206.2
 agilānena 56.3, 62.11
 agilāno 58.21, 64.19, 84.23, 86.8, 96.18, 106.14, 17, 20
 aggaṃ 12.18
 aggaḷaṭṭhapanāya 50.20, 200.3
 aṅgassa 12.10
 aṅgulipatodake 64.10, 208.2
 acclakassa 60.8
 accāyikā 78.19
 accekam 42.22, 160.14
 accekacīvaraṃ 42.22, 160.14
 acchādetha 32.9, 152.21
 acchādessatī 34.6, 154.18
 acchādessāmā 32.6, 152.18
 acchādessāmī 30.19, 152.7
 acchādechī 30.22, 32.16, 152.10, 154.5
 acchindeyya 42.3, 144.17, 158.21
 acchindāpeyya 42.3, 144.17, 158.21
 acchinnacīvarā 150.15
 acchinnacīvaro 30.8
 ajānam 10.6, 118.6
 ajj 4.8, 114.2
 ajjatagge 72.5, 214.14
 ajjhāpannaṃ 118.17
 ajjhārāmā 78.12, 220.12
 ajjhārāme 78.14, 86.8, 220.14
 ajjhāvasathā 78.12, 220.12
 ajjhāvasathe 78.14, 220.14
 ajjhokāse 48.21, 168.2, 198.3
 aññaṃ 36.18, 40.6, 72.17, 144.20, 146.2, 6, 10, 14, 18, 148.4, 158.6, 214.25
 aññe 72.7, 74.7
 aññā 130.5, 11, 134.10, 19, 214.16, 216.12
 aññatarāṃ 10.10, 20.8, 22.3, 44.5, 66.10, 12, 122.2, 140.2, 142.3, 210.3, 5
 aññatarassa 12.10
 aññatarena 24.8, 10, 20, 22
 aññatra 10.7, 12.5, 28.11, 30.3, 7, 36.19, 44.9, 46.22, 48.6, 52.15, 24, 54.7, 13, 16, 56.6, 12, 58.25, 60.3, 62.7, 12, 16, 64.20, 66.2, 78.11, 19, 80.4, 118.7, 124.13, 148.21, 150.14, 170.20, 196.3, 11, 200.18, 202.18, 204.18, 206.3, 8, 208.16, 19, 220.12, 25

aññadattthikena 146.5, 9, 13, 17,
148.3

aññabhāgiyañ 16.9, 128.22

aññabhāgiyassa 16.5, 128.18

aññamaññavacanena 20.1, 138.22

aññamaññavuttthāpanenā 20.1,
138.23

aññamaññissā 132.22, 25, 134.11,
15, 21, 25

aññavāḍake 48.16, 196.22

aññāṇakena 74.10, 216.14

aññātakam 30.6, 150.13

aññātakassa 30.16, 152.4

aññātakanaṃ 32.2, 152.14

aññātako 30.11, 42.10, 150.19,
160.2

aññātabbam 72.19, 214.27

aññātikāya 28.23, 30.2, 38.10,
52.23, 54.2, 84.5

aññāsīm 118.20

aññuddisikena 146.5, 9, 13, 17,
148.4

aṭṭaniyā 80.4, 220.25

aṭṭha 116.2, 122.1, 142.2, 224.2,
226.20, 248.20, 24

aṭṭhaṅgulapādakam 80.3, 220.24

aṭṭhavatthukā 120.22

aṭṭhāsi 16.19, 136.13

aṭṭhikatvā 74.13, 216.18

aṭṭhimayaṃ 78.22, 220.19

aḍḍhateyyakamsaparamaṃ 148.12

aḍḍhateyyamāsā 66.4, 208.21

aḍḍhateyyā 80.22

atikkāmayato 28.7, 40.3, 16, 80.4,
13, 18, 22

atikkāmentiyā 148.17, 158.17,
164.17, 170.16, 182.11, 220.25,
222.9

atikkāmeyya 14.13, 78.9, 172.2, 19

atirekaṃ 82.3, 222.13

atirekacīvaraṃ 28.7, 148.17

atirekapatto 40.3

attakāmapāricariyāya 12.18

attanā 118.18, 22

attano 44.13, 58.21, 96.18, 160.21,
236.12

attānaṃ 18.21, 25f., 138.15, 19f.,
170.2, 5

attuddesaṃ 14.7, 17

attupanāyikam 118.3

attūpanāyikam 10.3

atthaṃ 34.19, 156.12

atthāya 58.21, 96.18, 236.12

atthaṅgate 52.11

atthi 32.23, 72.8, 74.10, 154.11,
214.17, 216.14

attho 34.8, 154.20

adatvā 76.19, 218.21

adāpetvā 60.14, 202.23

adinnaṃ 8.9, 13, 58.24, 60.2, 116.8,
12, 202.17

adinnādāne 8.9, 116.9

addhamāsaṃ 66.2, 208.19

addhamāso 40.20, 22

addhānagamasamayo 56.8, 66.6,
200.20, 208.23

addhānamaggappaṭipannassa 38.4

adhakkhakaṃ 118.12

adhikaraṇaṃ 16.2, 10, 15, 18, 128.12,
22, 136.9, 12, 178.8

adhikaraṇasamathā 108.5, 16,
110.7, 248.2, 13, 26

adhikaraṇassa 16.6, 128.18

adhikaraṇānaṃ 108.7, 248.4

adhikaraṇe 132.2, 7

adhiṭṭhahitvā 144.9

adhiṭṭhaheyya 50.22, 200.5

adhiṭṭhātabbam 50.21, 200.4

adhimānā 10.8, 118.7

adhogāminiṃ 54.12

anaññaṃ 50.10, 60.16, 76.7, 12,
198.16, 202.25, 218.8, 14

anaññāya 126.4

anatirittam 58.2

anatirittena 58.7

anattamanā 130.2, 8, 132.3, 7,
 158.21, 174.17, 198.19, 216.21, 25
 anattamano 42.3, 50.12, 74.17, 20
 ananuññātaṃ 188.20
 anantarāyikini 170.19, 178.10,
 188.8, 13
 anapaloketvā 124.11, 126.3, 182.15
 anabbhitā 142.8
 anabbhito 22.9
 anabhiñānaṃ 10.2, 118.2
 anabhineyya 14.12, 21
 anavassutā 126.16
 anavassuto 126.15
 anādaraṃ 120.3
 anādariya 64.14, 208.8
 anādaro 120.7
 anādā 36.11, 24, 66.11, 210.4
 anāpucchāṃ 48.23, 50.4, 198.5, 10
 anāpucchā 62.6, 78.18, 168.11, 15,
 19, 180.7, 192.17, 204.17
 anārambhaṃ 14.10, 18
 anāvikatvā 8.5
 anāhaṭṭe 98.7, 238.3
 anikkhantarājake 78.8
 aniggataratanake 78.8
 animantito 84.23
 aniyatā 24.2, 26.1, 110.2
 aniyato 24.13, 24
 anissajjitvā 178.20
 anissajjetvā 178.17
 anīkadassanaṃ 64.3, 206.17
 anuggaṇheyya 184.22
 anuggaṇhāpeyya 184.22
 anuddhamseyya 14.25, 16.7, 76.3,
 128.9, 19, 218.3
 anupakhajja 50.8, 60.19, 198.14,
 204.2
 anupadajjeyya 42.18, 160.10
 anupadajjeyyāma 42.17, 160.9
 anupaviseyya 120.20
 anupasaṃpannaṃ 46.12, 194.15
 anupasaṃpannassa 48.2, 5

anupasaṃpannāya 194.18, 196.6,
 10
 anupasaṃpannena 46.15
 anupasaṃpanno 68.17
 anubandhissasi 188.12
 anubhoti 34.19, 156.12
 anumatiyā 4.5, 112.20
 anuvattakā 18.2
 anuvattikā 136.23
 anuvattī 120.8
 anuvatteyya 120.4
 anuvassaṃ 190.2
 anusāvitāṃ 4.19, 114.12
 anusāviyamāne 4.21, 114.14
 anekapariyāyen' 70.7, 72.1
 anekapariyāyena 8.20, 116.19
 anekapariyāyēnāyē 212.11,
 214.10
 anokāsakataṃ 192.20
 antakiriya 130.14
 antamaso 8.6, 14.4, 42.18, 54.6,
 66.22, 68.21, 25, 116.5, 124.6,
 128.4, 160.10, 176.17, 186.3,
 210.16, 212.3
 antaragharaṃ 84.5
 antaraghare 44.5, 88.11, 13, 16, 18,
 90.2, 4, 7, 9, 14, 16, 18, 92.2, 4, 7, 9,
 12, 14, 19, 21, 23, 94.1, 4, 7, 102.8,
 228.11, 13, 16, 18, 21, 230.1, 4, 6, 11,
 13, 16, 18, 21, 23, 232.2, 4, 7, 9, 14, 16,
 19, 21, 24, 234.2, 240.25
 antarā 14.9
 antarāyaṃ 172.8
 antarāyāyā 70.4, 9, 23, 72.3, 212.8,
 13, 214.6, 12
 antarāyikā 70.3, 8, 22, 72.1, 2, 212.7,
 12, 214.5, 10, 11
 antarāyiko 42.3, 114.16
 antoraṭṭhe 176.6
 antovassaṃ 176.13
 anvaddhamāsaṃ 74.4, 6, 110.9,
 182.9, 216.8, 11, 250.2
 apaccuddhāraṇaṃ 210.11

- apadisitabbo 72.6, 214.15
 apanidhāpeyya 66.22, 210.16
 apanidheyya 66.21, 210.15
 aparikkamane 14.11, 19
 aparena 10.4, 14.26, 16.8, 118.4,
 128.10, 20
 apasakka 84.14, 16
 apasādetabbā 84.13
 apasādetum 84.15
 apassam 10.7, 118.7
 app 14.25, 16.7, 42.16, 128.9, 19,
 160.8
 appaccakkhāya 8.5
 appaccuddhāraṇaṃ 66.17
 appaṭikāraṃ 120.4
 appaṭikāro 120.7
 appaṭinissatthāya 212.23
 appaṭinissatthena 70.17
 appaṭisaṃviditaṃ 86.7; -o 78.8
 appatīta 128.8, 17
 appatīto 14.24, 16.5
 appadīpe 166.20
 appavāritā 152.8, 18, 160.4
 appavārito 30.19, 32.6, 42.12
 appasaddā 230.16, 18
 appasaddo 90.18f.
 appaharite 50.21f., 200.4f.
 appitaṇ 42.14, 160.6
 aphāsu 76.6, 218.7
 aphāsum 174.9
 abbhakkhānaṃ 70.7, 26, 212.11,
 214.9
 abbhāgamanam 120.19
 abbhācikkhi 70.6, 25, 212.10, 214.8
 abbhetaṭṭabbā 142.6
 abbhetaṭṭabbo 22.8
 abbheyya 22.9, 142.7
 abhikkhuke 180.23
 abhinipajjeyya 50.18, 168.15, 20,
 198.25
 abhinipphādeyya 34.9f., 10, 34.13,
 15f., 16, 156.2f., 6-8
 abhinisīdeyya 50.17, 168.15, 19,
 198.24
 abhinetaṭṭabbā 14.9, 17
 abhiramāyye 130.13
 abhirūheyya 54.12
 abhisapeyya 170.3
 abhihaṭṭhum 30.12, 56.17, 58.7,
 150.20, 202.3
 amūlakaṇ 16.2, 128.12
 amūlakena 14.24, 76.2, 128.9,
 218.2
 amūlavinayo 108.11, 248.8
 ambho 8.18, 116.17
 amhākaṇ 18.5, 136.27
 amhākam 18.7, 136.28
 ayaṃ 8.13, 21, 10.8, 22.10, 24.12,
 30.9, 34.20, 40.11, 52.16, 54.8, 56.9,
 14, 20, 62.9, 66.6, 72.20, 78.15,
 126.18, 142.8, 150.16, 156.13,
 158.10f., 200.21, 202.6, 204.20,
 208.24, 214.28, 220.16
 ayan 40.10
 ayam 24.24, 74.5, 116.12, 20, 118.8,
 14, 22, 120.12, 21, 124.7, 13, 19,
 126.5, 10, 128.4, 13, 23, 130.19,
 132.16, 136.4, 19, 138.28, 140.25,
 216.10
 ayyam 138.21, 154.6
 ayyā 132.10, 138.19f., 140.6, 18,
 154.16
 ayyāya 140.7, 18
 ayyāyo 114.5, 21, 122.1, 138.15,
 142.1, 162.1, 4, 222.18, 226.20,
 246.17, 248.13, 19
 ayye 114.2, 118.6, 20, 120.5, 126.14,
 16, 134.8, 18, 154.6, 16, 188.2, 6, 11,
 214.14, 24, 216.9, 16, 224.6, 11, 16,
 21, 226.3, 8, 13, 18
 araṇṇā 8.9, 116.8
 alaṃ 140.9, 21, 188.2
 alaṅkammaniye 24.6
 alaṇ 24.16, 70.9, 72.2, 212.13,
 214.11

- alan 20.15, 26
alamariyañānadassanaṃ 10.3,
118.3
alābhā 74.12, 216.16
avagaṇḍakāraḥ 98.22, 238.18
avaca 20.21, 70.6, 25, 130.8, 132.7,
134.18, 140.15, 212.10, 214.8
avacaṃ 10.6, 118.6
avacanīyaṃ 18.21, 25, 138.15, 19
avacuttha 18.4, 8, 22, 136.25, 138.1,
16
avassaṭṭā 118.19
avassutassa 118.11, 120.16, 126.8
avassutā 118.11, 120.16, 126.8
avassuto 126.15
avivadamānāhi 250.3
avivadamānchi 110.10
avivadamāno 16.20, 18.11, 136.14,
138.4
avissajjivā 36.18
asaṃvāsā 116.6, 12, 21, 118.8, 14, 23,
120.13, 22, 122.4
asaṃvāso 8.7, 13, 22, 10.8, 12
asaṅkacchikā 194.2
asatthikā 176.7, 11
asaddhammassa 120.21
asantiyā 4.14, 114.8
asante 38.7
asappāyaṃ 84.8, 18, 86.2, 10, 224.7,
12, 17, 22, 226.4, 9, 14, 19
asamanuggāhīyamānā 118.5,
128.11, 21
asamanuggāhīyamāno 10.5, 16.1, 9
asammataṃ 184.7, 19, 186.17
asammata 186.23
asammato 52.8
asikkhitasikkhaṃ 184.2, 14, 186.12
assa 4.22, 16.16, 18.25, 20.12, 20,
28.18, 32.20, 34.16, 70.5, 24, 72.5,
74.11, 118.19, 120.5, 130.8, 132.6,
134.17, 136.11, 138.18, 140.6, 15,
150.7, 154.8, 174.21, 180.20,
212.9, 214.7, 14
assā 114.15, 156.8, 216.16
assāmikaṃ 14.7
assu 18.8, 132.23, 136.29
aham 74.5, 216.9
aham 18.22, 138.16
ākāṅkhamānāya 150.5, 202.3
ākāṅkhamānena 28.16, 38.5, 56.17
ākāṅkhamāno 44.4
ākoṭāpeyya 28.24
āgacchati 110.9, 250.2
āgacchati 74.7, 216.11
āgacchanti 8.2, 12.3, 24.3, 28.3,
46.3, 84.3, 88.2, 108.6, 116.2,
124.3, 144.3, 164.3, 224.3, 228.3,
248.3
ājānāmi 70.3, 22, 212.7, 214.5
ādātābhaṃ 66.10, 164.17, 210.3
ādātābhā 36.10, 23
ādāya 18.6, 136.28
ādiyamānā 116.12
ādiyamānāya 164.16
ādiyamāno 8.13
ādiyeyya 8.9, 116.9
āpajjati 142.3
āpajjīm 84.8, 86.1, 10, 224.7, 12, 17,
22, 226.4, 9, 14, 19
āpajjivā 10.10, 22.3, 122.2
āpajjimhā 84.18
āpajjeyya 30.20, 32.7, 42.13, 62.7,
76.15, 23, 152.8, 19, 160.5, 188.4,
204.18, 218.19, 220.3
āpatti 4.14, 6.2, 114.8, 19
āpattiṃ 4.22, 48.5, 68.13, 74.10,
114.15, 196.10, 216.15
āpattiyā 4.14, 20.19, 114.8, 140.13
āpannā 118.5, 124.8, 14, 20, 126.6,
11, 19, 128.5, 14, 24, 130.20, 132.16,
134.4, 136.5, 20, 138.10, 28, 140.26,
216.15
āpannāya 114.18
āpannena 6.1

āpanno 10.5, 74.11
 ābhaṭaṃ 32.18, 34.16, 154.7, 156.9
 āmakadhaññaṃ 166.2
 āmasanaṃ 118.12
 āmisahetu 52.19
 āyatañ 42.14, 160.6
 āyasmatā 20.14, 25
 āyasmato 20.13, 24, 32.23
 āyasantam 18.27, 32.18
 āyasantānaṃ 18.10, 42.16, 160.8
 āyasmante 4.16, 6.5, 10.13, 18.22,
 22.11, 26.2, 44.18, 82.9, 86.13,
 106.24, 108.18
 āyasmanto 4.11, 4.23, 6.4, 7, 10.9,
 15, 12.2, 18.21, 24, 22.1, 13, 24.2,
 26.1, 4, 28.2, 32.8, 34.18, 20, 44.16,
 20, 46.2, 82.8, 11, 84.2, 86.12, 15,
 88.1, 106.23, 108.1, 5, 16, 20, 22,
 152.20, 156.10, 12
 āyasmā 16.19, 18.26, 20.12, 15, 23,
 26, 30.21, 32.19, 34.4, 5, 152.9
 āraññaṃ 44.3, 86.5
 ārādhanaṃ 4.6, 112.21
 ārāmaṃ 176.22, 180.7
 ārāmiko 34.1, 154.13
 ārocetha 4.12, 114.6
 āroccya 48.3, 6, 118.19, 196.7, 11
 āroccsan 118.22
 āropetabbo 74.12, 216.16
 ālīpāpeyya 182.17
 ālokaśandhiparikammāya 50.20,
 200.3
 ālopaṃ 98.2, 236.22
 āvasathaṃ 178.20
 āvasathacivaraṃ 178.17
 āvasathapiṇḍo 56.3, 200.14
 āvāsā 20.15, 26, 140.9, 21
 āvāse 180.23
 āvikatā 6.2, 114.19
 āvikareyya 4.14, 22, 114.8, 15
 āvikātabbā 6.2, 114.19
 āvudhāpāṇissa 102.20, 242.11

āvuso 10.6, 32.20, 34.1, 8, 42.13,
 60.12, 70.8, 72.1, 5, 16, 74.12, 84.8,
 17, 86.1, 10, 154.9, 14, 20, 160.5
 āsanaṃ 24.15
 āsanā 76.19, 218.21
 āsane 24.6, 17, 60.23, 104.24, 106.2,
 168.11, 15, 192.17, 204.7, 244.12, 16
 āsanena 2.5, 112.5
 āsandiṃ 176.26
 āsādanāpekkho 58.9
 āha 134.12f., 22f.
 āhaccapādaṃ 50.17, 198.24
 āhara 144.15f.
 āhareyya 58.25, 60.3, 202.18
 āhāraṃ 58.24, 60.2, 202.17
 āgh' 126.16
 icc 16.24, 18.15, 20.5, 30, 34.9, 14,
 66.4, 70.13, 120.11, 130.18, 132.15,
 134.3, 136.3, 18, 138.8, 27, 140.25,
 156.2, 6, 176.3, 208.21, 212.17
 itti 8.20, 10.3f., 76.6, 116.19, 118.3f.,
 218.7
 itthannāmaṃ 30.18, 32.5, 16, 152.6,
 17, 154.4
 itthālāṅkāraṃ 190.19
 itthimatiṃ 14.3, 128.3
 itthiyā 14.2, 128.2
 itthiviggahena 196.3
 idaṃ 14.7, 20.1, 32.17, 40.14, 42.13,
 58.18, 68.18, 74.14, 80.11, 16, 21,
 82.3, 5, 138.22, 154.6, 158.15,
 160.5, 170.14, 216.18, 222.7, 13, 15
 idān' 74.5, 216.9
 idha 84.12
 idhavāsenā 20.15, 26, 140.9, 21
 indakhīlaṃ 78.9
 imaṃ 178.8
 imamhā 14.26, 16.8, 20.15, 26,
 128.10, 20, 140.9, 21
 imā 134.4, 138.9, 218.13
 imāya 216.12

- iminā 8.19, 30.17, 21, 32.15, 74.8,
 116.18, 152.5, 9, 154.4
 ime 8.2, 12.2, 24.2, 28.2, 46.2,
 76.10, 84.2, 88.1, 108.5, 116.2,
 124.2, 144.2, 164.2, 224.2, 228.2,
 248.2
 imehi 32.4, 8, 72.23, 152.16, 20,
 216.3

 ukkuṭṭikāya 94.4, 232.24
 ukkoṭṭeyya 68.10, 210.26
 ukkhittaṃ 120.2, 126.2
 ukkhittakāya 90.7, 9, 230.4, 6
 ukkhittānūvattikā 120.13
 ukkhitto 120.6
 uggaṇhāpeyya 38.13, 78.12, 156.19,
 220.13
 uggaṇheyya 38.13, 78.12, 156.18,
 220.12
 uggaṇhāpetvā 78.14, 220.15
 uggaṇhetvā 78.14, 220.14
 uggireyya 74.21, 216.26
 uccāraṃ 106.14, 17, 20, 166.7, 11,
 246.6, 9, 13
 ucce 106.2, 244.16
 ujjāgghikāya 90.14, 16, 230.11, 13
 ujjhānasaññinī 236.16
 ujjhānasaññī 96.20
 ujjhāpanake 48.18, 196.25
 ujjhāpeyya 168.22
 uññāya 134.12, 22
 uṭṭhāy 76.19, 218.21
 uṇhasamayo 66.5, 208.22
 utukkhānaṃ 2.9, 112.8
 uttari 22.5, 28.20, 30.13, 34.14, 38.7,
 42.24, 44.8, 50.22, 56.4, 18, 62.13,
 20, 74.11, 148.9, 13, 150.9, 21,
 156.7, 160.16, 200.5, 15, 202.4,
 206.4, 13, 216.16
 uttarichappaṇcavācāhi 46.21, 196.2
 uttaridirattatirattaṃ 46.15, 194.18
 uttarimanussadhammaṃ 10.2,
 48.2, 118.2, 196.6
 udakaṃ 2.5, 52.2, 68.6, 112.5,
 200.8, 210.22
 udakadantaponā 58.25, 60.3, 202.18
 udakasāṭikaṃ 170.13
 udakasuddhikaṃ 164.16
 udake 64.12, 106.20, 208.5, 246.13
 uddālanakaṃ 30.8, 222.3
 uddiṭṭhaṃ 6.4, 108.22, 114.21,
 248.19
 uddiṭṭhā 10.9, 22.1, 26.1, 44.16,
 82.8, 86.12, 106.23, 108.16, 23,
 110.1-7, 122.1, 142.1, 162.1,
 222.18, 226.20, 246.17, 248.13, 20-
 26
 uddiṭṭhehi 72.24, 216.4
 uddisitum 112.21
 uddisitum 4.6
 uddisissāmi 4.12, 114.6
 uddiseyya 4.10, 114.4
 uddissa 30.16, 32.2, 13, 18, 34.11, 13,
 18, 42.10, 13, 152.4, 14, 154.2, 7,
 156.4, 5, 11, 160.2, 5
 uddissamāne 72.22, 74.4, 9, 13,
 216.2, 9, 13, 17
 uddesaṃ 8.2, 12.3, 24.2, 28.3, 46.3,
 74.7, 84.3, 88.1, 108.6, 110.9,
 116.2, 124.3, 144.3, 164.3, 216.11,
 224.2, 228.2, 248.3, 250.2
 uddesapariyāpannesu 18.19, 138.13
 uddhaṅgāminim 54.12
 uddharāpeyya 48.22, 50.4, 198.4, 10
 uddhareyya 48.22, 50.3, 198.4, 9
 upakkaḥaṭaṃ 30.17, 152.5
 upakkaḥāṇi 32.3, 152.16
 upagataṃ 56.16, 202.2
 upaṭṭhaheyya 174.12
 upaṭṭhāpanāya 174.13
 upaṭṭhāpeyya 72.10, 214.19
 upaṭṭheyya 164.19
 upadaheyya 76.5, 218.7
 upanikkhittaṃ 38.14, 156.19

- upanissāya 20.9, 140.3
 uparivehāsakuṭṭiyā 50.16, 198.23
 upalāpeyya 72.9, 214.19
 upavassam 44.2
 upasamhareyya 120.20
 upasaṅkamata' 34.5
 upasaṅkamatāyā 154.17
 upasaṅkamitvā 30.20, 32.7, 17, 34.3-
 7, 42.12, 52.14, 152.8, 19, 154.6, 16,
 19, 160.4, 168.10, 14, 18
 upasampādeyya 68.16
 upassayaṃ 174.16
 upassutim 76.10, 218.12
 upādāya 16.6, 30.23, 32.10, 128.19,
 152.11, 22
 upādāyā 96.15, 236.9
 upādinnō 16.11, 128.23
 upāsako 34.1, 154.13
 upāsakā 24.7, 12, 19, 23
 upāhanārūhassa 242.19
 upāhanārūhassa 104.6
 uposatham 4.9, 114.3
 uposathapucchakaṇ 182.10
 uposathassa 2.6, 11, 112.6, 10
 uposatho 2.14, 48, 112.13, 114.2
 uppajjeyya 28.16, 42.22, 150.5,
 160.14
 uppajjeyyūṃ 38.5
 uppathena 106.11, 246.2
 uppannuppannānam 108.7, 248.4
 ubbhajāṇumaṇḍalam 118.12
 ubbhajāṇumaṇḍalikā 118.14
 ubbhatasmim 28.6, 10, 15, 148.16,
 20, 150.4
 ubhatoṣaṅghe 142.4, 182.2
 ubhinnaṃ 32.2, 152.14
 ubho 32.9, 152.21
 ummaddāpeyya 192.5, 8, 11, 14
 uyyānam 176.23
 uyyuttam 62.15, 206.7
 uyyojeyya 60.14, 168.8, 202.23
 uyyodhikaṃ 64.2, 206.16
 ussayavādikā 124.5
 ussukkaṃ 170.20, 174.13, 178.11,
 188.8, 14
 ūnadvādasavassam 184.10
 ūnadvādasavassā 186.19
 ūnapañcabandhanena 40.6, 158.6
 ūnavīsativassam 68.16, 186.8
 ūnassa 28.19, 150.8
 ūno 22.8, 142.6
 ekaṃ 54.11, 190.5
 ekakassa 60.15
 ekaccaṃ 20.19, 140.13f.
 ekattharaṇapāvuraṇā 174.6
 ekaddhānamaggam 54.5, 68.21, 24,
 212.3
 ekamañce 174.3
 ekarattam 28.10
 ekarattam 148.21
 ekassa 84.14
 ekā 124.17-18, 136.24, 166.21, 24,
 168.2, 6, 182.16, 204.10
 ekāya 24.5, 18, 54.19, 62.2, 142.6
 ekikāya 202.24
 ekuddeso 16.20, 18.12, 136.14,
 138.4
 eken' 166.21, 24, 168.2, 6, 182.16,
 204.10
 ekena 22.8
 ekenā 32.10, 152.22
 eko 18.3, 24.5, 18, 54.19, 56.3, 62.2,
 200.14
 etaṃ 6.8, 10.16, 16.24, 18.4, 7, 16,
 20.5, 30, 22.14, 26.5, 34.9, 14, 44.21,
 70.13, 82.12, 86.16, 108.2, 21,
 114.25, 118.21, 120.7, 11, 122.8,
 130.18, 132.15, 134.3, 136.3, 18, 25,
 28, 138.8, 27, 140.25, 142.12,
 144.15f, 156.2, 6, 162.5, 176.3,
 212.17, 222.22, 226.24, 246.21,
 248.17

- etad 12.18, 50.9, 60.16, 76.6.11,
 198.15, 202.25, 218.7.13
 etasmim 72.16, 214.24
 etassa 120.20
 etāni 2.6.11, 112.6.10
 ete 66.4, 208.21
 etena 12.20
 ettakam 110.8, 250.1
 etth' 6.7, 10.15, 22.13, 26.4, 44.20,
 82.11, 86.15, 108.1.20, 162.4
 etthāyyāyo 114.24, 122.7, 142.11,
 222.21, 226.23, 246.20, 248.16
 enaṃ 24.7.19
 eḷakalomānaṃ 36.6.10, 12
 eḷakalomāni 36.4.10
 ev' 18.26, 118.18, 144.15f.
 eva 14.25, 16.2, 7.10, 21, 18.2, 13.19,
 20.2.8, 19f., 13f., 24f., 27, 24.15,
 28.16, 18, 30.16, 32.2.13, 38.4,
 42.10, 16, 22, 44.6, 48.22, 50.3.9,
 56.16, 60.16, 62.18, 70.10, 72.4.6,
 24, 74.5, 76.6.11, 84.11, 110.9,
 120.9, 128.9.12, 19.22, 130.16,
 132.2.7.12, 21.28, 136.1.15, 138.5,
 13.19.24, 140.2.3f., 7f., 19f., 22,
 150.5.7, 152.4.14, 154.2, 160.2.8,
 14, 170.19, 174.12, 176.1, 178.10,
 184.22, 186.2, 188.8.13, 198.4.9,
 15, 202.2.25, 206.11, 212.14,
 214.13.15, 216.4.9, 218.7.13, 250.2
 evaṃ 4.19, 10.6, 18.3.8, 28, 20.16,
 21, 32.17.23, 34.3, 44.21, 52.19,
 70.2.5.7.21.25f., 72.16.22, 74.5,
 114.12, 118.6.20, 126.14, 130.2.8,
 132.3.7, 134.8.18, 136.24, 138.1,
 21, 140.10.15, 144.14, 154.6.11, 16,
 212.6.9.11, 214.4.8f., 24, 216.2.9
 evaṃsaddā 134.10.20
 evaṃsilokā 134.10.20
 evañ 16.21, 18.12, 20.2, 16, 27, 42.17,
 70.9, 72.3, 120.8, 130.15, 132.11,
 27, 134.27, 136.15, 138.5.23, 140.9,
 21, 160.9, 174.24, 212.13, 214.12
 evam 4.19, 6.8, 10.16, 16.16, 18.8,
 24, 20.12, 20, 22.14, 26.5, 32.20,
 70.5.24, 72.5, 82.12, 86.16, 108.2,
 21, 114.12.24, 120.5, 122.8, 130.7,
 132.6.23, 134.13.17.23, 136.10.29,
 138.18, 140.6.14, 142.12, 154.8,
 162.5, 174.21, 212.9, 214.7.14,
 222.22, 226.24, 246.21, 248.17
 evarūpaṃ 30.21, 30.22, 32.8f.,
 152.9.20f.
 evarūpā 118.21
 evarūpāni 58.20
 evarūpāya 4.19, 114.12
 evācārā 134.10.20
 evāhaṃ 118.20
 evāhan 188.7.12
 esā 136.26f., 138.1f.
 eso 18.5.8.9, 34.1, 120.5, 126.14.16,
 154.14
 eh' 60.12
 ehāyye 178.8, 202.21
 okāse 166.23
 okkhittacakkhu 90.2.4
 okkhittacakkhunī 228.21, 230.1
 oḡuñṭhitasāsassa 104.21, 244.9
 oḡuñṭhitā 232.19.21
 oḡuñṭhito 92.23, 94.1
 oṭṭhanillechakaṃ 102.2, 240.19
 otiṇṇo 12.8.13.17
 odanaṃ 84.13, 96.18, 236.12
 odanena 96.14, 236.8
 odātānaṃ 36.11f.
 obhāsitaṃ 24.17
 obhāseyya 12.14
 omadditvā 96.11, 236.5
 omasavāde 46.8, 194.10
 oren' 40.22, 66.2, 208.19
 orena 36.17, 40.21
 olokessāmī 96.20, 236.16
 ovadanti 52.20
 ovadeyya 52.8.12.15

- ovādāya 182.6
 ovādūpasāṅkamaṇā 182.10
 ovādo 2.10, 112.9
 osāreyya 126.4
 ohiyeyya 124.19
- kacci 6.5-7, 10.13-15, 22.11-13,
 26.2-4, 44.18-20, 82.9-11, 86.13-15,
 106.24f., 108.1, 18-20, 114.22f.,
 122.5-7, 142.9-11, 162.2-4, 222.19-
 21, 226.21-23, 246.18-20, 248.14-16
 kathinuddhāraṃ 172.20
 kathine 28.6, 10, 15, 148.16, 20,
 150.4
 kaṇḍuppaṭṭicchādiṃ 80.15, 222.6
 kattikatemāsikapuṇṇamaṃ 160.13
 kattikatemāsipuṇṇamaṃ 42.21
 kattikatemāsipuṇṇamaṃ 44.2
 katvā 40.20, 23
 kathā 60.15, 202.24
 kaddamaṃ 66.11, 210.4
 kanteyya 178.2
 kappā 124.13
 kappiyan 32.22, 154.10
 kappeyya 24.6, 18, 46.16, 18, 50.8,
 54.20, 60.20, 23, 62.3, 70.18, 72.11,
 194.19, 22, 198.14, 204.3, 7, 11,
 214.1, 20
 kabaḷaṃ 96.23, 236.19
 kabaḷāvacchedakaṃ 98.19, 238.15
 kabaḷe 98.7, 238.3
 kammakārena 124.6
 kammappattā 2.14, 112.13
 kammasaṃmayo 66.5, 208.23
 kammānaṃ 76.14, 218.18
 kayavikkayaṃ 38.21, 158.2
 karaṇīyā 78.19, 88.5, 8, 11, 14, 16, 18,
 90.2, 4, 7, 10, 15, 17-19, 92.3, 5, 8, 10,
 13, 15, 20, 22, 23, 94.1, 4, 8, 11, 13, 17,
 19, 23, 96.2, 5, 9, 12, 15, 19, 21, 23,
 98.2, 8, 11, 13, 16, 19, 22, 100.2, 5, 8,
 11, 13, 16, 19, 102.2, 6, 9, 12, 15, 18, 21,
 104.4, 7, 10, 13, 16, 19, 22, 25, 106.3,
 6, 9, 12, 15, 18, 21, 228.6, 8, 11, 13, 16,
 18, 22, 230.2, 4, 7, 12, 14, 16, 18, 22, 24,
 232.3, 5, 8, 10, 15, 17, 19, 21, 24,
 234.3, 6, 9, 12, 15, 19, 22, 25, 236.3, 6,
 9, 13, 17, 19, 22, 238.4, 7, 10, 12, 15, 18,
 21, 24, 240.2, 5, 10, 13, 16, 19, 23, 26,
 242.3, 6, 9, 12, 17, 20, 23, 26, 244.3, 7,
 10, 13, 17, 21, 24, 246.3, 7, 10, 14
 karitvā 50.9, 60.16, 76.7, 11, 198.16,
 202.25, 218.8, 13
 karissatī 126.15
 karissāmī 96.23, 98.2, 106.14, 18,
 106.21, 236.19, 22, 246.6, 10, 14
 kareyya 4.9, 114.3, 144.6, 170.20,
 172.9, 174.10, 13, 178.5, 11, 188.9,
 14
 karotī 18.21, 138.15
 karotu 18.26, 138.20
 karoṭha 42.14, 16, 160.6, 8
 karoma 4.6, 112.21
 kalahajātānaṃ 76.9, 218.12
 kalyāṇaṃ 18.22f., 138.16f.
 kalyāṇakamyatāṃ 30.22, 32.10,
 152.10, 22
 kalyāṇadhammaṃ 12.19
 kāyaṃ 120.20
 kāyappacālakāṃ 92.2, 4, 230.21, 23
 kāyabandhanaṃ 66.21, 210.15
 kāyasamsaggaṃ 12.9
 kārakasaṅghaṃ 126.4
 kārayamānāya 170.13, 200.2,
 220.24, 222.6
 kārayamānena 14.6, 16, 36.9, 22,
 50.19, 80.2, 10, 15, 20
 kārapetvā 36.16
 kārapeyya 36.3, 7, 13, 19, 38.1,
 78.23, 80.8, 82.3, 220.20, 222.3, 13
 kāretabbāṃ 28.18, 80.3, 11, 108.12,
 150.7, 220.24, 248.9
 kāretabbā 14.7, 80.16, 21, 170.14,
 222.7

- kāretabbo 24.10, 12, 22, 24, 74.11,
 216.15
 kāreyya 14.12, 20
 kālacīvaran 144.9
 kālena 32.22, 34.5, 154.10, 18
 kālasāmam 66.11, 210.4
 kiṃ 4.11, 8.19, 72.23, 114.5, 116.18,
 216.3
 kiñci 16.6, 18.4, 21.23, 34.19,
 128.18, 134.12, 22, 136.25, 138.15f.,
 156.12
 kiñcimattam 42.16f., 160.8f.
 kin 126.14, 130.4, 10
 kira 74.6, 216.10
 kismiñcid 132.2, 6
 kukkuccam 76.5, 218.6
 kukkuccāya 72.24, 216.4
 kukkuccikā 130.6, 12
 kuṭṭim 14.6, 12
 kupitā 130.2, 8, 132.3, 7, 158.21,
 174.16, 198.19, 216.21, 25
 kupito 42.3, 50.12, 74.17, 20
 kumārakasamsattham 188.16
 kumāribhūtam 186.8, 11, 15
 kulam 56.16, 202.2
 kuladūsako 20.9, 12, 23
 kuladūsikā 140.3, 6, 18
 kulamaccharinī 180.20
 kulāni 20.10, 14, 25, 84.21, 140.4, 8,
 19, 168.10, 14, 18
 kule 60.19, 204.2
 kulesu 62.7, 84.11, 22, 204.18
 kusalam 16.24, 18.16, 20.5, 30,
 34.10, 14, 70.13, 120.12, 130.19,
 132.15, 134.3, 136.4, 18, 138.8, 27,
 140.25, 156.2, 6, 176.3, 212.17
 ko 74.9, 216.13
 koci 16.10, 32.23, 128.22, 154.11
 kocid 44.6, 62.18, 206.11
 koccham 48.21, 198.3
 koṭṭāpetvā 166.3
 koṭṭetvā 166.3
 kosiyaṃissakam 36.3
 khaṇāpeyya 48.9, 196.14
 khaṇeyya 48.9, 196.14
 khattiyassa 78.7
 khamatī 18.7, 136.28
 khambhakatā 232.14, 16
 khambhakato 92.19, 21
 khāda 58.8, 126.18
 khādaniyam 58.2, 11, 14, 60.9, 84.6,
 23, 86.7, 126.9, 16, 178.14, 180.16,
 202.9, 13
 khādaniyena 58.7
 khādeyya 58.3, 12, 15, 84.7, 24, 86.9,
 126.10, 164.6, 180.17, 202.10, 14
 khippam 28.17, 150.6
 khiyyanake 196.25
 khiyyanadhammaṃ 188.3
 khīyanake 48.18
 khīyanadhammaṃ 76.15, 23,
 218.19, 220.3
 khīram 58.20, 226.12
 khuddānukhuddakchi 72.23, 216.3
 khelaṃ 106.17, 20, 246.9, 13
 kho 4.16, 18, 23, 6.4, 10.9, 12.2, 18.2,
 20.9, 12f., 23f., 22.1, 24.2, 15f., 26.1,
 28.2, 32.17, 20f., 34.1, 4, 17, 40.13,
 42.13, 44.2, 16, 46.2, 58.18, 74.5,
 82.8, 84.2, 21, 86.5, 12, 88.1,
 106.23, 108.5, 16, 22, 114.10f., 16, 21,
 118.22, 120.5, 122.1, 124.2,
 132.10, 24, 134.14, 24, 136.23,
 140.3, 6f., 18, 142.1, 144.2, 154.6,
 9f., 14, 16, 156.10, 158.14, 160.5,
 162.11, 164.2, 216.9, 222.18, 224.2,
 226.20, 228.2, 246.17, 248.2, 13, 19
 gacchantassa 106.8, 11, 244.23,
 246.2
 gacchanī 244.23, 246.2
 gacchanto 106.8, 11
 gacchāyye 202.23
 gacchāvuso 60.14

gaccheyya 48.23, 50.4, 62.15, 64.4,
120.19, 124.17f., 132.10f., 166.16,
176.23, 182.7, 198.5.10, 206.7.18
gaccheyyā 132.11
gaṇaṃ 124.12, 180.13, 182.15
gaṇabhojane 56.6, 200.18
gaṇamhā 124.19
gaṇassa 118.18.22, 126.4, 172.8
gaṇḍaṃ 182.14
gantabbam 34.17, 156.9
gandhavaṇṇakena 190.22
gabbhiniṃ 182.22
gamanāya 62.18, 206.12
gaṇissāmī 88.11, 16.90.2.7.14.18,
92.2.7.12.19.23, 94.4, 228.11.16,
21, 230.4.11.16.21, 232.2.7.14.19.
24
garupāvuraṇaṃ 148.8
gahaṇaṃ 118.13
gahapatāniṃ 30.6, 150.13
gahapatāniyā 30.17, 152.5
gahapatānī 30.11, 42.10, 150.19,
160.3
gahapatānīnaṃ 32.3, 152.15
gahapati 30.11, 42.10, 150.19, 160.2
gahapatiṃ 30.6, 150.13
gahapatiko 32.14, 154.3
gahapatinā 124.5, 174.20, 22
gahapatiputtana 124.6, 174.21
gahapatiputtenāpi 174.22
gahapatissa 30.16, 152.4
gahapatinaṃ 32.2, 152.15
gahetvā 8.11, 116.10
gāmaṃ 20.8, 60.12, 78.19, 140.2,
194.2, 202.21
gāmantaṃ 54.6, 124.17
gāmantaṃ 68.21.25, 212.3
gāmā 8.9, 116.8
gārayhaṃ 84.8.17, 86.1.10, 224.6,
11.16.21, 226.3.8.13.18
gārayhā 22.10, 68.18, 142.8
gimhāna 40.19-22, 66.4, 208.21

gilānasamayo 56.7.13, 66.5,
200.19, 208.22
gilānā 52.16
gilānānaṃ 40.13, 158.14
gihigataṃ 184.10.13.17
gihiniyā 192.14
gihiveyyāvaccam 178.5
gihisamārambhā 54.16
gītaṃ 166.15
gocariyānaṃ 36.11.13
c' 16.2.10, 18.5.8f., 20.10f., 13f., 24f.,
28.18, 72.6, 74.11, 128.12.22,
136.26f., 138.1, 140.4f., 7f., 19f.,
150.7, 214.15f.
ca 2.5.9.14f., 4.1.16.2.11.21, 18.6,
12, 20.2.10f., 13f., 16-18.21f., 25.27,
22.9, 24.16, 32.21, 40.8, 42.14f., 17,
44.6, 62.18, 68.17, 70.9, 72.2f.,
74.9-11, 112.5.8.13-15.19, 118.21,
120.8, 128.12.23, 130.15, 132.3-5,
8f., 11.27, 134.27, 136.15.27, 138.5,
23, 140.4f., 7-9.11-13.15-17.19-21,
142.7f., 154.10, 158.8, 160.6f., 9,
174.24, 182.10f., 206.11, 212.13,
214.11f., 216.14f.
caṇḍiṃ 188.17
caṇḍikatā 180.13
catasso 80.16, 170.14, 222.7
catukkamsaparamaṃ 148.8
catukkhattum 34.10.12, 156.3.4
catutthaṃ 36.11.13
catumāsappaccayapavāraṇā 62.11,
206.2
catūhapañcāhā 170.20
cattāro 8.2.10.9, 22.2, 84.2, 86.12,
108.23, 110.5
capucapukāraṃ 100.11, 240.5
cara 72.8, 130.14, 214.17
caritabbam 142.4
carissāmī 130.7.13
careyya 176.7.11.13

- cāyyāya 140.8, 20
cārikam 176.7, 11, 13, 16, 178.20
cārittam 62.7, 204.18
cāveyyan 14.26, 16.8, 128.10, 20
cīṇṇamānattā 142.4
cīṇṇamānatto 22.6
cittamanā 116.19
cittamano 8.20
cittasāṅkappā 116.19
cittasāṅkappo 8.20
cittāgāraṃ 176.22
cittena 12.8, 13, 17
cīvaraṃ 28.19, 30.2, 7, 13, 18, 22,
32.9, 15, 34.9, 13, 15, 42.2, 7, 11, 13,
44.5, 52.23, 54.2, 66.13, 16, 20,
76.22, 82.2, 144.13, 15, 17, 150.8, 14,
21, 152.6, 10, 21, 154.4, 156.2, 6f.,
158.20, 25, 160.3, 5, 170.18, 188.7,
210.6, 11, 14, 220.2, 222.12
cīvarakārasamayo 56.7, 13, 62.8,
200.19, 204.19
cīvarakālasamayam 42.23, 160.15,
172.18
cīvaracetāpanam 30.17, 32.14, 18,
20, 34.16, 18, 152.5, 154.3, 7, 9,
156.9, 11
cīvaracetāpanan 32.19, 154.7
cīvaracetāpanena 30.18, 21, 32.15,
152.6, 9, 154.4
cīvaraṇ 32.21, 154.10
cīvaratthikāya 154.12, 18
cīvaratthikena 32.24, 34.6
cīvaradānasamayo 56.7, 13, 62.8,
200.19, 204.19
cīvaralābham 172.8
cīvaralābhāya 210.2
cīvaralābhena 66.9
cīvaravibhaṅgaṃ 172.11
cīvarasāṅkamanīyam 172.5
cīvarānaṃ 44.5
cīvare 30.20, 32.7, 42.12, 152.8, 19,
160.4
cīvarena 30.19, 32.16, 34.5, 44.7, 8,
152.7, 154.5, 18
cīvarenā 34.8, 156.1
cīvarehi 30.11, 32.5, 150.20, 152.17
cutā 118.19
ce 14.11, 19, 16.23f., 18.15f., 20.4f.,
29f., 22.8, 28.11, 20, 30.11, 13, 19,
32.6, 16, 22, 34.2, 10, 14f., 36.11, 17,
24, 38.7, 40.21, 42.11, 24, 44.8,
50.22, 52.11, 56.4, 18, 62.13, 20,
64.2, 66.11, 70.12f., 21, 74.7, 84.11,
15, 120.11f., 130.18f., 132.14f.,
134.2f., 136.3f., 17, 19, 138.7, 9, 26f.,
140.24f., 142.6, 148.9, 13, 21, 150.9,
19, 21, 152.7, 18, 154.5, 11, 14,
156.2, 7f., 160.3, 16, 176.2, 4, 200.5,
15, 202.4, 206.4, 13, 16, 210.4,
212.16f., 214.4, 216.11
cetāpetabbham 148.9, 13
cetāpetvā 30.18, 22, 32.5, 9, 15,
146.2, 152.6, 10, 17, 21, 154.4
cetāpentiyā 148.8, 12
cetāpeyya 40.7, 146.2, 6, 10, 14, 18,
148.4, 9, 13, 158.7
codayamānā 156.1
codayamāno 34.8
codetabbo 34.7, 154.20
coram 8.10, 116.9
corā 116.10
corim 124.11
coro 8.11
cha 80.21, 82.5, 222.15
chakkhattuparamam 34.11f., 156.3,
5
chaddāpeyya 166.9, 12
chaddēyya 166.8, 12
chaddessāmī 102.8, 240.25
chattapāṇissa 102.11, 242.2
chattupāhanam 190.10
chanda 2.9, 112.8
chandam 76.14, 19, 126.4, 218.18, 21

chandagāminiyo 132.3, 8, 140.11.

16

chandagāmino 20.17, 21

chandañ 18.6, 136.27

chandaso 116.4

chandā 132.10

channaṃ 36.17, 120.19

chappañcayojanāni 176.17, 186.3

chabbassāni 36.16

chamāya 104.24

chamāyaṃ 244.12

chasatthiṣatā 164.2, 222.18, 248.23

chasu 184.2, 6, 14, 18, 186.12, 16

chāratṭaṃ 22.5

chāratṭaparamaṃ 44.7

chupanaṃ 118.13

chedanakaṃ 80.4, 13, 18, 23, 82.3,

170.16, 220.25, 222.9, 13

jatumaṭṭhake 164.14

jappeyya 168.7

jātaṃ 182.14

jātarūparajataṃ 38.13, 156.18

jānaṃ 22.3, 44.12, 50.7, 52.2, 54.15,

58.8, 68.6, 9, 13, 16, 20, 70.16, 72.9,

78.2, 118.17, 124.11, 160.20, 180.7,

198.13, 200.8, 210.22, 25, 212.2, 22,

214.18, 220.7

jānāti 18.6, 136.28

jānāmi 10.4, 6, 74.5, 118.4, 6, 216.10

jāneyyumaṃ 74.8, 216.12

jāyattane 14.3, 128.3

jāratṭane 14.3, 128.3

jivhānicchārakaṃ 100.8, 240.2

jīvitā 8.16, 19, 68.3, 116.15, 18,

210.19

jotiṃ 64.19, 208.15

ñeva 132.27, 134.12, 16, 22, 26,

174.23

thātabbaṃ 34.11, 156.4

thānehi 182.3

thitā 84.12, 118.19, 200.5, 244.20,

246.6

thitāya 200.4

thitena 50.21

thito 50.22, 106.5, 14

taṃ 4.13, 12.14, 16.2, 10, 24, 18.15,

20.5, 30, 22.8, 28.7, 19, 32.17, 22,

34.2f, 6, 9, 13f, 17, 40.3, 16, 48.22,

50.3, 70.12, 17, 76.11, 80.4, 12, 17,

22, 84.9, 15, 18, 86.2, 11, 114.6,

120.11, 126.17, 128.12, 22, 130.18,

132.14, 134.2, 136.3, 18, 138.8, 26,

140.24, 142.7, 148.17, 150.8,

154.5, 11, 15, 18, 156.1, 6f, 11,

158.17, 164.17, 170.15, 176.3,

182.11, 188.7, 12, 198.4, 9, 212.16,

23, 218.13, 220.25, 222.8, 224.7, 12,

17, 22, 226.4, 9, 14, 19

taṅkhaṇikāya 14.4, 128.4

tañ 30.11, 74.7, 11, 150.19, 216.11,

15

tatiyaṃ 36.10, 12

tatiyaṃ 6.6, 10.14, 22.12, 26.3,

44.19, 82.10, 86.14, 106.25, 108.19,

114.23, 122.6, 142.10, 162.3,

222.20, 226.22, 246.19, 248.15

tato 10.4, 14.26, 16.8, 28.20, 30.13,

34.14, 38.7, 42.24, 44.8, 50.22, 56.4,

18f, 62.12, 20, 118.4, 128.10, 20,

148.9, 13, 150.9, 21, 156.7, 160.16,

200.5, 15, 202.4f, 206.4, 13

tatth' 6.5, 10.13, 22.11, 26.2, 44.18,

82.9, 86.13, 106.24, 108.18

tattha 22.7, 10, 30.9, 34.16, 20, 40.11,

52.16, 54.9, 56.9, 14, 20, 62.9, 66.7,

72.20, 74.10, 78.16, 110.9, 142.5, 8,

150.16, 156.9, 13, 158.11, 200.21,

202.7, 204.20, 208.24, 214.28,

216.15, 220.16, 250.2

- tathāyam 30.8, 52.16, 54.7, 56.6.
12, 62.8, 66.3, 150.15, 200.18,
204.19, 208.20
- tathāyyāyo 114.22, 122.5, 142.9,
162.2, 222.19, 226.21, 246.18,
248.14
- tatr' 8.2, 14.7, 80.11, 16.21, 82.3,
116.2, 170.14, 222.7.13
- tatra 30.19, 32.6, 42.11, 84.11,
152.7.18, 160.3
- tath' 16.21, 18.13, 20.2.27, 70.10,
72.4, 120.9, 130.16, 132.12.28,
136.1.15, 138.5.24, 140.22, 176.1.
212.14, 214.13
- tathā 10.11, 122.3
- tathānāsitaṃ 72.9, 214.18
- tathārūpaṃ 8.12, 116.11
- tathārūpappaccayā 62.16, 64.20
- tathārūpappaccayā 206.8, 208.16
- tathārūpā 78.19
- tathārūpe 24.17
- tathārūpesu 44.4, 84.22, 86.6
- tathāvādinā 70.16
- tathāvādiniyā 212.22
- tathāhaṃ 70.2.21, 212.6, 214.4
- tadatthāya 120.20
- tan 34.19
- tantavāye 42.12, 160.4
- tantavāyehi 42.6.11, 158.24, 160.3
- tam 24.6.18, 120.4
- tayā 60.14, 202.23
- tayo 18.3
- talaghātake 164.12
- talasattikaṃ 74.20, 216.26
- tasmā 6.1.8, 10.16, 22.14, 26.5,
44.21, 82.12, 86.16, 108.2.21,
114.18.24, 122.7, 142.11, 162.4,
222.21, 226.23, 246.20, 248.16
- tasmim 4.1, 68.18, 74.14, 112.15,
216.18
- tass' 18.2
- tassa 16.23, 18.14.28, 20.4.9.29,
34.19, 40.9, 44.6, 60.13, 62.18,
70.11, 74.10.12, 110.8, 120.10,
130.17, 132.14, 134.2, 136.2.17,
138.7.22.25, 140.23, 176.2, 212.15,
250.1
- tassapāpiyasikā 108.14, 248.11
- tassā 40.8, 136.23, 140.3, 156.11,
158.9, 202.22, 206.11, 216.14.16
- tā 132.23.27f., 134.12.21, 136.24.29,
138.5f., 140.10, 142.8
- tādisikāya 20.19, 140.13
- tāni 40.13.15, 44.3, 58.18, 84.21,
86.5, 158.14.16
- tāya 140.4, 142.3, 150.8.20, 154.8,
158.7, 206.12, 224.6.11.16.21,
226.3.8.13.18
- tāva 84.14.16, 188.2
- tāvatiṃhaṃ 22.4
- tāvāhaṃ 72.16, 214.24
- tāsāhaṃ 130.6.12
- tī 2.6.11, 4.2.16, 6.8, 8.12.20, 10.4.7.
16, 12.20, 14.26, 16.8.21, 18.7.12.
24, 20.1.15.20.26, 22.14, 26.5,
30.19.22, 32.6.10.16.19.27f., 34.2.6.
8.20, 40.10.19.-22, 42.17, 44.21.
50.9, 52.20, 58.8, 60.13.16, 66.4,
70.4.9.23, 72.3.8.18, 74.1.7.14,
76.6.11.24, 78.15, 82.6.12, 84.9.
13f., 16.18, 86.2.11.16, 88.5.8.11.13.
16.18, 90.2.4.7.9.14.16, 18f., 92.2.4.
7.9.12.14.19.21.23, 94.1.4.7.10.13.
16.18.23, 96.2.5.8.11.15, 19f., 23,
98.2.7.10.13.16.19.22, 100.2.5.8.
11.13.16.19, 102.2.5.9.11.14.17.20,
104.3.6.9.12.16.18.21.25, 106.3.5.
9.12.14.18.21, 108.2.15.21, 110.10,
112.6.10.16, 114.10.25, 116.11.19,
118.4.7.21.22, 120.8, 122.8,
126.18, 128.10.20, 130.7.13.15,
132.5.10f., 27, 134.17.27, 136.15.29,
138.4.18.23, 140.9.14.21, 142.12,
144.9.17, 152.7.10.18.22, 154.5.8.
10.12.14.18, 156.1.13, 158.11,
160.9, 162.5, 174.24, 178.9.

- 188.2f. 7, 12, 198.15, 202.22, 25,
 208.21, 212.8, 13, 214.6, 12, 17, 26,
 216.5, 11, 18, 218.7, 13, 220.4, 16,
 222.16, 22, 224.7, 12, 17, 23, 226.5, 9,
 14, 19, 24, 228.6, 8, 11, 13, 16, 18, 21,
 230.1, 4, 6, 11, 13, 16, 18, 21, 23,
 232.2, 4, 7, 9, 14, 16, 19, 21, 24, 234.2,
 5, 8, 11, 14, 19, 22, 25, 236.2, 5, 9, 13,
 16, 19, 22, 238.3, 6, 9, 12, 15, 18, 21, 24,
 240.2, 5, 10, 13, 16, 19, 22, 26, 242.2,
 5, 8, 11, 16, 19, 22, 25, 244.3, 6, 9, 13,
 17, 20, 24, 246.3, 6, 10, 14, 21, 248.12,
 17, 250.3
 tiṃsa 28.2, 44.16, 110.3, 144.2,
 162.1, 248.22
 ticivarena 28.11, 148.21
 tiṭṭhamānā 156.6
 tiṭṭhamāno 34.13
 tiṭṭheyya 16.16, 76.10, 136.10,
 218.12
 tiṇaṃ 52.2, 200.8
 tiṇavatthārako 108.15, 248.12
 tiṇṇaṃ 24.7, 9, 44.5, 66.9, 11, 210.2,
 5
 tiyojanaparamaṃ 38.6
 tiracchānagatāya 8.6
 tiracchānagatena 116.5
 tiracchānavijjaṃ 178.23, 180.2
 tiriyaṃ 14.9, 80.12, 17, 22, 82.5,
 170.15, 222.8, 15
 tiriyaṇṭaraṇāya 54.13
 tirokuḍḍe 166.8
 tiropākāre 166.8
 tirotatthe 176.10
 tisso 136.24
 tīhi 182.2
 tucchaṃ 10.7, 118.7
 tuṇhī 4.14, 6.8, 10.16, 22.14, 26.5,
 44.21, 82.12, 86.16, 108.2, 21,
 114.8, 24, 122.7, 142.11, 162.4,
 222.21, 226.23, 246.20, 248.16
 tuṇhībhaṇena 4.16, 114.10
 tuṇhībhūtā 156.5
 tuṇhībhūtāya 156.4
 tuṇhībhūtena 34.11
 tuṇhībhūto 34.13
 tumhañ 134.12, 22
 tumhe 34.17, 134.9, 18f., 156.10
 tuyh' 8.19, 116.18
 tuyhaṃ 144.14f.
 tuyham 144.15
 tuvaṭṭeeyyaṃ 174.3, 6
 tūlonaddhaṃ 80.7, 222.2
 te 8.19, 18.3, 7, 12f., 20.15f., 26, 22.9,
 40.10, 68.17, 70.4, 9, 23, 72.2, 5, 8,
 74.12, 116.18, 126.14, 16, 140.9, 21,
 158.10, 188.2, 212.8, 13, 214.6, 11,
 14, 17, 216.16
 tena 20.10, 22.4, 24.12, 23, 28.18,
 30.12, 32.19, 40.7, 44.6f., 62.19,
 84.7, 86.1, 9
 terasa 12.2, 22.1, 110.1
 telaṃ 40.14, 58.19, 158.15, 224.10
 tchi 14.10, 18, 84.13, 17
 tvaṃ 74.13, 126.15, 17, 188.6, 11,
 216.17
 thūpakato 96.11, 236.5
 thenā 116.11
 theno 8.12
 theyyasaṅkhātāṃ 8.9, 116.8
 theyyasatthena 68.20, 212.2
 therā 52.19
 daṇḍapaṇiṣsa 102.14, 242.5
 datvā 42.2, 76.15, 22, 158.20,
 174.16, 218.19, 220.2
 dadeyya 52.24, 60.10, 74.18, 172.15,
 178.15, 216.22
 dadhi 58.20
 dadhiṃ 226.17
 dantamayāṃ 78.22, 220.19
 dasā 80.12
 dasāhaparamaṃ 28.6, 40.3, 148.17
 dasāhānāgataṃ 42.21, 160.13

- dassanāya 62.15, 166.16, 176.23,
 206.7
 dassasi 188.7
 dātabbo 108.9-11, 248.6-8
 dāpetvā 60.13, 202.22
 dāsena 124.6
 diṭṭhim 70.17, 212.23
 diṭṭhena 182.3
 diyaddham 80.12
 diyaddho 66.3, 208.20
 dirattatirattam 62.19, 72.7, 206.12,
 16, 214.16
 dirattatirattañ. 64.2
 disvā 24.7, 19
 dissanti 20.19f., 13f., 24f., 140.4f., 7f.,
 19f.
 dīghaso 14.8, 80.11, 16, 21, 82.4,
 170.14, 222.7, 14
 dukkhassa 130.14
 dukkhitam 174.12
 duggahitena 168.21
 dujjīvitena 8.19, 116.18
 duṭṭhā 128.8, 17
 duṭṭhāni 20.11, 14, 25, 140.5, 8, 20
 duṭṭhullam 48.5, 68.13, 196.10
 duṭṭhullāhi 12.14, 24.16
 duṭṭho 14.24, 16.5
 dutyam 6.6, 10.14, 22.12, 26.3,
 44.19, 82.10, 86.14, 106.25, 108.19,
 114.22, 122.5, 142.9, 162.2,
 222.19, 226.21, 246.18, 248.14
 dutyikam 168.7
 dubbacajātikā 138.13
 dubbacajātiko 18.19
 dubbanakaraṇam 66.10, 12, 210.3,
 5
 dubbanakaraṇānam 66.9, 12,
 210.2, 5
 dubbanakaraṇāya 36.24
 dubbalacivarapaccāsāya 172.18
 dubbalyam 8.5
 dubbalyā 134.13, 23
 dulladdham 74.12, 216.17
 dūtena 32.14, 154.3
 dūto 32.16, 20, 22, 34.2, 17, 154.5, 8,
 11, 14, 156.10
 dūpadhāritena 168.21
 deti 126.16
 detha 84.12
 dethā 84.13
 desaṃ 16.6, 128.18
 desitaṃ 70.3, 22, 212.7, 214.5
 desitāpattikassa 4.4, 112.19
 desetabham 14.10, 18
 deseyya 46.22, 196.3
 desessāmī 102.11, 14, 17, 20, 104.3,
 6, 9, 12, 16, 18, 21, 25, 106.3, 5, 9, 12,
 242.2, 5, 8, 11, 16, 19, 22, 25, 244.3, 6,
 9, 13, 17, 20, 24, 246.3
 deso 16.10, 128.22
 dosam 16.2, 11, 128.12, 23
 dosagāminiyo 132.4, 8, 140.11, 16
 dosagāmino 20.17, 22
 dosā 128.8, 17, 132.10
 doso 14.24, 16.5
 dvaṅgulapabbaparamam 164.16
 dvattikkhattum 154.20, 156.1,
 216.13
 dvatticchadanassa 50.21, 200.4
 dvattipattapūrā 56.18, 202.4
 dvattipattapūre 56.19, 202.5
 dvādasa 14.8
 dvārakosā 50.20, 200.3
 dvittikkhattum 34.7f., 74.8
 dvinnam 24.19, 21
 dve 18.3, 24.2, 26.1, 36.9, 11, 80.11,
 17, 110.2, 136.24, 170.15, 174.3, 6,
 182.9, 184.2, 6, 14, 18, 21, 25, 186.12,
 16, 188.12, 190.5, 222.8
 dvenavuti 46.2, 82.8, 110.4
 dhammam 8.6, 46.12, 22, 70.3, 22,
 84.8, 17, 86.1, 10, 102.11, 14, 17, 20,
 104.3, 6, 9, 12, 15, 18, 21, 25, 106.3, 5,
 9, 12, 116.4, 118.17, 124.8, 14, 20,

- 126.5, 11. 19, 128.5, 13. 24, 130.3. 9.
20, 132.16, 134.4, 136.5, 20, 138.10.
28, 140.26, 194.15, 196.3, 212.7.
214.5, 224.6, 11. 16, 22, 226.4, 8. 13.
18, 242.2, 5. 8, 11. 16, 19, 22, 25,
244.2, 6. 9, 13. 17, 20, 24, 246.3
dhammavādinī 136.26, 138.1
dhammavādī 18.4. 9
dhammā 8.2, 10.9, 12.2, 22.1, 24.2,
26.1, 28.3, 44.17, 46.2, 70.4, 8. 23,
72.2, 82.8, 84.2, 86.12, 88.1,
106.23, 108.6, 17. 23, 110.1-7,
116.2, 122.1, 124.2, 142.1, 144.2,
162.1, 164.2, 182.10, 212.8, 12,
214.6, 11, 222.18, 224.2, 226.20,
228.2, 246.17, 248.2, 13. 20-26
dhammānaṃ 24.7. 10, 19, 21
dhammikaṃ 172.11, 20
dhammikānaṃ 76.14, 218.18
dhammena 12.20, 14.25, 16.7,
18.27f., 120.3, 6, 126.3, 128.9, 19,
138.29f.
dhammesu 184.2, 6, 14, 18, 186.12,
16
dhammo 4.24, 24.12, 24, 74.6,
114.16, 130.14, 216.10
dhārayāmi 6.8, 10.16, 22.14, 26.5,
44.21, 82.12, 86.16, 108.2, 21,
114.25, 122.8, 142.12, 162.5,
222.22, 226.24, 246.21, 248.17
dhāretabbam 28.7, 36.17, 148.17
dhāretabbo 40.3, 10, 158.11
dhāreyya 172.5, 190.10, 16, 19
dhovāpeyya 28.24, 38.11, 182.16
n' 4.22, 48.22, 50.3, 72.8, 114.15,
118.18, 170.19, 174.12, 178.10,
184.22, 186.2, 188.8, 13, 198.4, 9,
214.17
na 2.15, 4.1, 10.10, 18.8f., 22, 20.19,
21f., 24.15, 32.20, 34.19, 48.22,
50.3, 60.14, 70.6f., 25f., 72.6, 16f.,
74.9, 13, 84.15, 90.7, 9, 14, 16, 92.2,
4, 7, 9, 12, 14, 19, 21, 23, 94.1, 4, 7,
96.11, 14, 18, 20, 98.7, 10, 13, 16, 19,
22, 100.2, 5, 8, 11, 13, 16, 19, 102.2, 5,
8, 11, 14, 17, 20, 104.3, 6, 9, 12, 15, 18,
21, 24, 106.2, 5, 8, 11, 14, 17, 20,
112.14, 15, 118.18, 22, 122.2,
134.12, 22, 138.1, 16, 140.14-17,
154.9, 156.11, 170.19, 174.13,
176.16, 178.10, 182.3, 6, 184.22,
186.3, 188.8, 13, 198.4, 9, 202.23,
212.10f., 214.8f., 15, 24, 25, 216.14,
17, 230.4, 6, 11, 13, 21, 23, 232.2, 4, 7,
9, 14, 16, 19, 21, 24, 234.2, 236.5, 8,
11, 16, 238.3, 6, 9, 12, 15, 18, 21, 24,
240.2, 5, 10, 13, 16, 19, 22, 25, 242.2,
5, 8, 11, 16, 19, 22, 25, 244.2, 6, 9, 12,
16, 20, 23, 246.2, 6, 9, 13
naṃ 14.26, 16.7, 128.10, 20
naggā 170.10
naccaṃ 166.15
naṭṭhacīvarā 150.16
naṭṭhacīvaro 30.9
nadipāraṃ 124.18
nava (nine) 22.2, 82.4, 142.1,
222.14
navam (new) 36.9, 13, 16, 18, 38.1,
40.7, 66.9, 12, 80.2, 158.7, 210.2, 6,
220.23
navanītaṃ 40.14, 58.19, 158.15
nahāyeyya 66.2, 170.10, 190.22,
192.2, 208.19
nātimahantaṃ 236.19
nātimahantaṃ 96.23,
nānappakāraṃ 38.18, 21, 156.22,
158.2
nānā 134.9, 19
nānubandheyya 184.26
nāma 14.25, 16.7, 42.16, 128.10, 20,
160.8
nālaṃ 70.4, 23, 212.8, 214.6
nālaṅkammaniyam 24.15
nāvaṃ 54.12

- nāvābhiruhanasamayo 56.8, 200.20
 nāsītā 118.19
 nikaṇṇikaṃ 168.7
 nikkaddhāpeyya 50.13, 174.17, 198.20
 nikkaddheyya 50.13, 174.17, 198.20
 nikkhipitabbam 28.19, 42.24, 78.15, 150.8, 160.16, 220.15
 nikkhipeyya 28.20, 42.24, 44.5, 150.9, 160.16
 nigamaṃ 20.8, 60.13, 140.2, 202.22
 nīccapavāraṇāya 62.12, 206.3
 nīṭṭhitacīvarasṃmim 28.6, 10, 15, 148.16, 20, 150.4
 nidānaṃ 6.4, 108.22, 114.21, 248.19
 niddisi 34.4, 154.17
 niddisitaḥbo 34.1, 154.13
 nimantitā 84.11, 180.16, 204.16
 nimantito 62.5
 nirayena 170.2
 nivāsetabbam 40.20
 nivāseyya 40.23
 nivāsessāmī 88.5, 228.6
 nisajjaṃ 24.6, 9, 18, 21, 54.20, 60.19, 23, 62.3, 204.3, 7, 11
 nisajjā 60.15, 202.24
 nisinnapubbam 74.8, 216.12
 nisinnassa 104.15, 24, 106.2, 5, 244.2, 12, 16, 20
 nisīdanaṃ 66.20, 80.10, 210.15
 nisīdanasanthataṃ 36.22, 38.1
 nisīditvā 104.24, 106.2, 168.11, 244.12, 16
 nisīdissāmī 88.13, 18, 90.4, 9, 16, 19, 92.4, 9, 14, 21, 94.1, 7, 228.13, 18, 230.1, 6, 13, 18, 23, 232.4, 9, 16, 21, 234.2
 nisīdeyya 192.18
 nissaggiyaṃ 28.8, 12, 21, 24, 30.3, 7, 13, 23, 32.10, 34.15, 36.4, 7, 14, 19, 38.2, 8, 11, 14, 19, 22, 40.4, 7, 16, 23, 42.4, 7, 19, 25, 44.9, 13, 144.6, 10, 18, 21, 146.3, 6, 10, 14, 19, 148.5, 10, 14, 18, 150.1, 10, 14, 22, 152.1, 11, 22, 156.8, 19, 23, 158.3, 7, 17, 22, 25, 160.10, 17, 21
 nissaggiyā 28.2, 44.16, 110.3, 144.2, 162.1, 248.22
 nissajjitabbo 40.8, 158.8
 nissāraṇiyaṃ 124.8, 14, 20, 126.6, 11, 19, 128.5, 14, 24, 130.20, 132.17, 134.5, 136.5, 20, 138.10, 29, 140.26
 nihatādhikaraṇaṃ 68.9, 210.25
 nīce 106.2, 244.16
 nīlaṃ 66.10, 210.4
 nīharitvā 56.20, 202.6
 nu 130.4, 10
 no 16.24, 18.6, 16, 20.5, 30, 28.18, 34.10, 15, 70.13, 118.21, 120.12, 130.19, 132.15, 134.3, 136.4, 19, 28, 138.9, 27, 140.25, 150.7, 156.2, 8, 176.4, 212.17
 p' 18.7, 22, 136.28
 pakkamat' 20.15, 26
 pakkamatāyyā 140.8, 20
 pakkamantī 198.4, 9
 pakkamanto 48.22, 50.3
 pakkamissatī 50.9, 198.15
 pakkameyya 76.19, 168.11, 176.16, 178.21, 218.21
 pakkhamānattaṃ 142.4
 pakkhipissāmī 98.10, 238.6
 paggaṇheyya 16.22, 20.2, 27, 70.10, 72.4, 120.9, 130.16, 132.12, 136.1, 16, 138.24, 140.22, 176.1, 212.14, 214.13
 paggaṇheyyuṃ 18.13, 132.28, 138.6
 paggayha 16.16, 19, 136.10, 13
 pacāpetvā 166.4
 pacitvā 166.4
 paccayaṃ 50.9, 60.16, 76.7, 11, 198.15, 202.25, 218.8, 13
 paccayo 44.6, 62.18, 206.11

- paccākatā 132.2, 7
 paccācikkhāmi 130.3f., 9f.
 paccāsāya 28.20, 150.9f.
 paccāsīsittabbā 182.10
 paccāharā 144.17
 paccekacivaracetāpanā 32.3
 paccekacivaracetāpanāni 152.15
 paccekacivaracetāpanehi 32.4, 8,
 152.16, 20
 paccekacivarāni 32.5, 152.17
 paccekapuṭṭhassa 4.18
 paccekapuṭṭhassā 114.11
 pacchato 106.8, 244.23
 pacchā 10.11, 76.15, 23, 118.20,
 122.3, 144.14, 170.19, 178.10,
 188.3, 7, 13, 218.19, 220.3
 pacchābhattam 62.6, 168.14, 204.17
 pañcakkhattum 34.10, 12, 156.3, 5
 pañcāhikam 172.2
 pañham 192.20
 paṭigganḥātāyā 154.7
 paṭigganḥātu 32.19
 paṭigganḥāma 32.21f., 154.9f.
 paṭigganḥeyya 30.3, 56.18, 202.5
 paṭiggahetabbam 28.17, 42.23,
 150.6, 160.15
 paṭiggahetabbā 56.18, 202.4
 paṭiggahetabbāni 38.5
 paṭiggahetvā 28.17, 38.6, 40.15,
 42.23, 56.19, 84.7, 24, 86.8, 126.9,
 17, 150.6, 158.16, 160.15, 202.5
 paṭiggahessāmī 94.10, 13, 16, 18,
 102.5, 234.5, 8, 11, 14, 240.22
 paṭicodeyya 118.18
 paṭicodessam 118.22
 paṭicchannam 24.15
 paṭicchanne 24.6, 60.22, 166.23,
 204.6
 paṭicchādeti 22.4
 paṭicchādeyya 68.14
 paṭicchādessāmī 96.14, 236.8
 paṭijānamāno 24.9, 21
 paṭiññāya 108.12, 248.9
 paṭidesetabbam 84.7, 17, 24, 86.9,
 224.6, 11, 16, 21, 226.3, 8, 13, 18
 paṭidesemā 84.18
 paṭidesemī 84.9, 86.2, 11, 224.7, 12,
 17, 22, 226.4, 9, 14, 19
 paṭinissaggāya 16.23, 18.14, 20.4,
 29, 70.12, 120.10, 130.17, 132.14,
 134.2, 136.2, 17, 138.7, 26, 140.23,
 176.2, 212.16
 paṭinissajjeyya 16.24f., 20.5, 30,
 70.13, 120.11f., 130.18f., 132.15,
 136.3, 4, 18f., 138.27, 140.24f.,
 176.3f., 212.17
 paṭinissajjeyyūm 18.15f., 134.3,
 138.8f.
 paṭipajjitabbam 22.6
 paṭipajjeyya 54.6, 68.21, 25, 212.3
 paṭipīlanam 118.13
 paṭibhāheyya 172.11, 20
 paṭibhāseyya 84.15
 paṭisāyaniyāni 40.13
 paṭisāyaniyāni 158.14
 paṭisevato 70.4, 9, 23, 72.3, 212.8,
 13, 214.6, 12
 paṭisevanatthāya 120.21
 paṭiseveyya 8.6, 116.4
 paṭissuñitvā 178.9, 188.3
 paṭhamāpattikam 124.7, 13, 19,
 126.5, 11, 18, 128.4, 13, 24
 paṭhamāpattikā 22.2, 142.2
 paṭhamo 66.4, 208.21
 paṇītabhojanāni 58.18, 21
 paṭiṭṭhāti 16.3, 11, 128.13, 23
 pattam 40.7, 66.20, 96.20, 158.7,
 210.14, 236.16
 pattakallam 4.9, 114.3
 pattakallan 4.2, 112.16
 pattadhovanam 102.8, 240.25
 pattanillehakam 100.19, 240.16
 pattapariyānto 40.9, 158.9
 pattasaññinī 234.8, 22
 pattasaññī 94.13, 96.2
 pattasannicayam 144.6

- pattena 40.6, 158.6
 patto 40.8.10, 158.8.10
 pathaviṃ 48.9, 196.14
 pathena 106.11, 246.2
 padaso 46.12, 194.15
 padātabbo 40.9, 158.10
 padipo 2.5, 112.5
 pan' 4.16.23, 12.2, 18.19, 20.8, 24.2,
 28.2.16, 30.16, 32.2.13, 23, 38.4,
 42.10.21, 46.2, 56.16, 72.23, 84.2.
 11, 88.1, 108.5, 132.21, 138.13,
 140.2, 150.5, 152.4.14, 154.2,
 160.2.14, 202.2, 216.3
 pana 4.18.21, 8.4.9.16, 10.2, 12.8,
 13.17, 14.2.6.16.24, 16.5.14, 18.2,
 24.5.15.17, 28.23, 30.2.6, 36.3.6.9.
 16.22, 38.10.13.18.21, 40.6.13,
 42.2.6, 44.2.12, 46.12.15.18.21,
 48.2.5.9.20, 50.2.7.12.16.19, 52.2.
 8.14.19.23, 54.2.5.11.15.19, 58.2.6.
 11.14.18.20.24, 60.2.8.12.19.22,
 62.2.5.15, 64.16.19, 66.2.9.15.20,
 68.3.6.9.13.16.20.24, 70.2.9.16,
 72.2.9.15.22, 74.4.9.17.20, 76.2.5.
 9.14.18.22, 78.2.7.11.13.18.22,
 80.2.7.10.15.20, 82.2, 84.5.21.21,
 86.5f., 114.11.14, 116.4.8.15,
 118.2.11.17, 120.2.16, 124.5.11.17,
 126.2.8.14, 128.2.8.17, 130.2,
 132.2, 134.8, 136.8.23, 144.6.9.13.
 20, 146.2.5.9.13.17, 148.3.8.12,
 150.13, 156.18.22, 158.2.6.14.20.
 24, 160.20, 164.6.9.16.18, 166.2.7.
 11.15.20.23, 168.2.5.10.14.18.21,
 170.2.5.10.13.18, 172.2.5.8.11.14.
 18.20, 174.3.6.9.12.16.20, 176.6.
 10.13.16.22.26, 178.2.5.8.13.17.20.
 23, 180.2.7.10.13.16.20.23, 182.2.
 6.14.22.25, 184.2.6.10.13.17.21.25,
 186.2.8.11.15.19.22, 188.2.6.11.
 16.20.23, 190.2.5.10.13.16.19.22,
 192.2.5.8.11.14.17.20, 194.2.15.
 18.22, 196.2.6.10.14, 198.2.8.13.
 19.23, 200.2.8, 202.9.13.17.21,
 204.2.6.10.16, 206.7, 208.10.15.19,
 210.2.9.14.19.22.25, 212.2.6.13.
 22, 214.11.18.23, 216.2.8.13.21.25,
 218.2.6.11.18.20, 220.2.7.11.13.
 19.23, 222.2.6.12, 224.5.10.15.20,
 226.2.7.12.17
 panāyyāya 154.11
 panāyyāyo 114.10.16, 124.2, 144.2,
 164.2, 224.2, 228.2, 248.2
 pannaraso 4.8, 114.2
 pabbājenti 20.19, 140.13
 pabbājenti 20.19, 140.14
 pabbājeyyūṃ 8.11, 116.10
 pamāṇaṃ 14.8.13, 80.11.16.21,
 170.14, 222.7
 pamāṇikaṃ 80.10
 pamāṇikā 14.7, 80.16.20, 170.13,
 222.7
 paraṃ 168.21, 170.2
 parakkami 16.18, 136.12
 parakkameyya 16.14, 136.8
 paramparabhōjane 56.12
 parāmasanaṃ 12.11, 118.12
 parikkhārena 146.5.9.13.17, 148.3
 paricareyyā 12.20
 pariṇataṃ 44.12, 78.2, 160.20,
 220.7
 pariṇāmentī 76.24, 220.4
 pariṇāmeyya 44.13, 78.3, 160.21,
 220.8
 paripaṇhitabbaṃ 72.19, 214.27
 paripucchāmi 72.18, 214.26
 paripucchitabbaṃ 72.19, 214.27
 paripunnādvādasavassaṃ 184.13.
 17
 paripunnādvādasavassā 186.22
 paripunnāvisativassaṃ 186.11, 15
 paribbājakassa 60.8, 172.14, 178.13
 paribbājikāya 60.8, 172.14, 178.13
 paribhavana 134.13.23
 paribhāseyya 180.10.13
 paribhūñjitabhāni 40.16, 158.17

- paribhuñjeyya 66.13, 17, 68.6,
 176.26, 178.17, 210.6, 11, 22
 parimaṇḍalaṃ 88.5, 8, 98.2, 228.6,
 8, 236.22
 parimaddāpeyya 192.5, 9, 11, 14
 pariyaṇeyya 178.23
 pariyaṃ 50.21, 200.4
 pariyesitabbam 40.20
 pariyeseyya 8.17, 40.22, 116.16
 pariḷāhasamayo 66.5, 208.22
 parivattetvā 144.13
 parivatthabham 22.4
 parivutthaparivāseṇa 22.5
 parisāṅkāya 182.3
 parisā 18.28, 138.22
 parisāya 4.19, 114.12
 parisuddh' 6.7, 10.15, 22.13, 26.4,
 44.20, 82.11, 86.15, 108.1, 20,
 114.24, 122.7, 142.11, 162.4,
 222.21, 226.23, 246.20, 248.16
 parisuddhā 4.16, 6.5-7, 10.13-15,
 22.11-13, 26.2-4, 44.18-20, 82.9-11,
 86.13-15, 106.24f., 108.1, 18-20,
 114.10, 22-24, 122.5-7, 142.9-11,
 162.2-4, 222.19-21, 226.21-23,
 246.18-20, 248.14-16
 paresaṃ 96.20, 236.16
 pallāṅkaṃ 176.26
 pallatthikāya 94.7, 104.15, 234.2,
 244.2
 pavattiniṃ 184.25
 pavāritaṃ 58.6
 pavāritā 180.16
 pavārito 58.2
 pavāreyya 30.12, 56.17, 58.8,
 150.20, 182.3, 202.3
 pavitthāya 84.6
 pavisissāmā 60.13, 202.22
 paviseyya 78.19, 180.8, 194.2
 pasāke 182.14
 passāmi 10.7, 118.7
 passāmī 10.4, 118.4
 passāvaṃ 106.14, 17, 20, 166.7, 11,
 246.6, 9, 13
 pahāraṃ 74.17, 216.22
 pahīṇittha 34.18, 156.11
 pahīṇeyya 32.15, 154.3
 pācittiyaṃ 28.8, 12, 21, 25, 30.3, 7, 14,
 23, 32.11, 34.15, 36.4, 7, 14, 20, 38.2,
 8, 12, 15, 19, 22, 40.4, 7, 17, 23, 42.4, 7,
 19, 25, 44.9, 13, 46.6, 8, 10, 13, 16, 19,
 23, 48.3, 7, 10, 14, 16, 18, 23, 50.4, 10,
 13, 18, 52.3, 9, 12, 15, 20, 24, 54.3, 7,
 13, 16, 20, 56.4, 6, 12, 19, 58.4, 9, 12,
 15, 22, 25, 60.3, 10, 17, 20, 23, 62.3, 7,
 13, 16, 20, 64.4, 8, 10, 12, 14, 16, 21,
 66.3, 13, 17, 22, 68.4, 7, 10, 14, 18, 22,
 26, 70.14, 19, 72.11, 18, 74.1, 14, 18,
 21, 76.3, 7, 12, 15, 19, 24, 78.3, 9, 13,
 20, 23, 80.5, 8, 13, 18, 23, 82.3, 144.7,
 10, 18, 21, 146.3, 6, 11, 15, 19, 148.5,
 10, 14, 18, 150.1, 10, 15, 22, 152.1, 11,
 22, 156.8, 20, 23, 158.3, 7, 18, 22, 25,
 160.11, 17, 21, 164.6, 10, 12, 14, 17,
 19, 166.4, 9, 13, 16, 21, 24, 168.3, 8,
 11, 16, 20, 22, 170.3, 6, 10, 16, 21,
 172.3, 6, 9, 12, 15, 19, 21, 174.3, 7, 10,
 13, 17, 176.4, 7, 11, 13, 17, 23, 27,
 178.2, 5, 11, 15, 18, 21, 24, 180.2, 8,
 11, 14, 17, 20, 24, 182.4, 7, 11, 17, 22,
 25, 184.3, 8, 11, 15, 19, 22, 26, 186.4,
 9, 13, 17, 20, 23, 188.4, 9, 14, 18, 21, 24,
 190.2, 6, 11, 13, 16, 19, 23, 192.3, 6, 9,
 12, 15, 18, 21, 194.3, 7, 10, 12, 16, 19,
 23, 196.3, 7, 12, 15, 19, 22, 25, 198.5,
 10, 16, 21, 25, 200.6, 9, 15, 18, 202.5,
 10, 14, 18, 25, 204.3, 7, 11, 18, 206.4,
 8, 13, 18, 20, 208.2, 5, 8, 10, 17, 20,
 210.6, 11, 16, 20, 23, 26, 212.4, 18,
 214.2, 20, 26, 216.5, 19, 22, 26, 218.3,
 8, 14, 19, 22, 220.4, 8, 13, 21, 26,
 222.3, 9, 13
 pācittiya 28.2, 44.16, 46.2, 82.8,
 110.3f., 144.2, 162.1, 164.2,
 222.18, 248.23f.

- pācittiyena 24.9. 11. 20. 22
 pāṭidesanīyaṃ 84.9. 18, 86.2. 10,
 224.7. 12. 17. 22, 226.4. 9. 14. 19
 pāṭidesanīyā 84.2. 12, 110.5, 224.2.
 226.20. 248.24
 pāṇaṃ 68.3, 210.19
 pātimokkhaṃ 4.5. 10. 12, 112.20,
 114.3. 6
 pātimokkhe 72.22, 74.4. 9. 13,
 216.2. 8. 13. 17
 pādukārūḥassa 242.16
 pādukārūḥassa 104.3
 pāṇiyathālakam 102.5
 pāṇiyathālakam 240.22
 pāṇiyena 164.18
 pāpakam 18.22. 23, 138.16f.
 pāpakā 20.10. 13. 24, 140.4. 7. 19
 pāpakena 8.19, 116.18
 pāpasaddā 132.21. 24, 134.14. 24
 pāpasamācārā 140.3. 6. 18
 pāpasamācāro 20.9. 12. 23
 pāpasilokā 132.22. 25, 134.15. 25
 pāpācārā 132.21. 24, 134.14. 24
 pāyantim 182.25
 pāyyāyo 138.16
 pārājikam 118.17
 pārājikā 8.2, 10.9, 108.23, 116.2. 5,
 12. 21, 118.8. 14. 23, 120.12. 21,
 122.1. 4, 248.20
 pārājikena 14.25, 16.7, 24.8. 10,
 128.9. 19
 pārājiko 8.7. 13. 22, 108.12
 pārīcarīyaṇaṃ 12.19
 pārīpūri 150.7
 pārīpūriyā 28.19, 150.9
 pārīpūrī 28.18
 pārīvattakā 30.3, 52.24
 pārīvāsīkachandadānena 188.23
 pārīsuddhi 2.9, 112.8
 pārīsuddhiṃ 4.11, 114.5
 pārūpissāmī 88.8, 228.8
 pārhetabbo 34.17, 156.10
 pi 6.6, 8.6. 13. 22, 108.14, 14.4,
 18.10. 26f., 22.8. 12f., 24.24, 26.3,
 28.11. 20, 38.7, 42.16. 18, 44.19,
 50.22, 52.11, 54.6, 66.22, 68.22. 25,
 70.21, 72.6. 8, 74.5, 76.6, 82.10,
 84.14, 86.14, 106.25, 108.19,
 114.22f., 116.5. 12. 21, 118.8. 14. 22,
 120.12. 21, 122.6, 124.7. 13. 19,
 126.5. 10. 18, 128.4. 13. 23, 130.5. 11,
 19. 132.10. 11. 16, 134.4. 10. 19,
 136.4. 19, 138.2. 9. 20f., 28, 140.25,
 142.6. 10, 148.21, 150.10, 160.8. 10,
 162.3, 174.22, 176.17, 186.4,
 200.5, 210.16, 212.4, 214.4. 15. 17,
 216.10, 218.7, 222.20, 226.22,
 246.19, 248.15
 piññākēna 192.2
 piṇḍapātāṃ 54.15, 94.10. 13. 16. 18,
 23, 96.2. 5. 8. 11, 234.5. 8. 11. 14. 19,
 22. 25, 236.2. 5
 piṇḍapātāmatam 42.18
 piṇḍapātāmatam 160.10
 piṇḍāya 60.13, 202.22
 piṇḍukkhepakam 98.16, 238.12
 piṇḥam 48.20, 50.17, 80.2. 7, 198.2,
 24, 220.23, 222.2
 puggalam 68.16
 puggalassa 78.3, 220.8
 puggalā 4.1, 112.15
 puggalīkena 148.4
 puggalo 68.17
 pucchāmi 6.5-7, 10.13-15, 22.11-13,
 26.2-4, 44.18-20, 82.9-11, 86.13-15,
 106.24f., 108.1. 18-20, 114.22f.,
 122.5f., 142.9f., 162.2f., 222.19f.,
 226.21f., 246.18f., 248.14f.
 puccheyya 192.21
 punakammāya 68.10, 210.26
 punapavāraṇāya 62.12, 206.3
 pubb' 118.20
 pubbakaraṇaṇa 2.6, 112.6
 pubbakaraṇapubbakiccāni 4.4,
 112.19

- pubbakiccaṃ 4.11, 114.5
 pubbakiccan 2.11, 112.10
 pubbupagataṃ 50.7, 198.13
 pubbe 30.19, 32.6, 42.12, 54.16,
 78.8, 84.22, 86.7, 152.7, 18, 160.4
 purato 106.8, 192.17, 244.23
 purāṇacivaraṃ 28.23
 purāṇasanthatassa 36.23f.
 purisa 8.18, 116.17
 purisapuggalassa 118.11, 120.16,
 126.8
 purisapuggalo 126.14, 16
 purisamatim 14.3, 128.3
 purisaviggahena 46.22
 purisasamsattham 188.16
 purisassa 14.3, 120.19, 128.3, 196.2
 purisena 166.20, 23, 168.2, 6,
 182.15, 194.22, 204.6, 10
 pure 10.11, 122.3
 purebhattam 62.6, 168.10, 204.17
 pūgaṃ 124.12
 pūvehi 56.16, 202.2
 pokkharaniṃ 176.23

 phāṇitaṃ 40.15, 58.19, 158.16,
 224.20
 phālāpeyya 182.16
 phāsu 6.2, 16.20, 18.12, 60.15f.,
 114.19, 136.14, 138.4, 202.24f.

 bandhāpeyya 182.17
 bandheyyuṃ 8.11, 116.10
 balaggaṃ 64.3, 206.17
 bahūhi 30.11, 150.19
 bālā 116.11
 bālo 8.12
 bāhuppacālakaṃ 92.7, 9, 232.2, 4
 buddham 130.3, 9
 byañjanaṃ 96.14, 236.8
 byattaṃ 72.17, 214.25
 byāharissāmī 98.13, 238.9
 byūhe 168.5

 brahmacariyaṃ 130.7, 13f.
 brahmacariyā 14.26, 16.8, 128.10,
 20
 brahmacariyena 170.3
 brahmacāriṃ 12.20
 brāhmaṇo 32.14, 154.2

 bhagavatā 4.24, 70.2, 4, 9, 21, 23,
 72.2, 114.17, 212.6, 8, 12, 214.4, 6,
 11
 bhagavato 18.28, 70.6, 26, 110.8,
 138.22, 212.10, 214.9, 250.1
 bhagavantam 70.6, 25, 212.10,
 214.8
 bhagavā 70.7, 26, 72.6, 212.11,
 214.9, 15
 bhagini 12.19, 84.14, 16
 bhaginiyā 174.23
 bhaginiyo 132.24, 134.14, 24
 bhaginī 118.21
 bhaginīnaṃ 132.27, 134.16, 26
 bhajjāpetvā 166.3
 bhajjitvā 166.3
 bhañissanti 76.11, 218.13
 bhaṇḍanaajātānaṃ 76.9, 218.11
 bhante 4.8, 32.18, 34.4
 bhayagāminiyo 132.5, 9, 140.12, 17
 bhayagāmino 20.18, 23
 bhayā 132.11
 bhavitabham 4.15, 114.9
 bhavissati 50.9, 78.15, 198.15,
 220.15
 bhavissatī 76.6, 218.7
 bhāgā 36.10
 bhāge 36.12
 bhājāpeyya 144.10
 bhāsati 18.7, 136.28
 bhāseyya 12.18
 bhiṃsāpeyya 64.16, 208.10
 bhikkhave 32.24, 34.6, 72.18,
 154.12, 19, 214.26

- bhikkhu** 4.21, 8.4, 9.12, 16, 10.2, 10,
 12.8, 13, 17, 14.2, 11, 19, 24, 16.2, 5,
 11, 14, 16, 21f., 18.5f., 9, 19, 24, 20.2f.,
 8, 11, 16, 20, 27f., 22.2, 6, 7, 9, 24.5, 9,
 12, 17, 21, 24, 28.11, 23, 30.2, 6, 8, 19,
 32.6, 36.3, 6, 11, 24, 38.10, 13, 18, 21,
 40.6, 10, 42.2, 6, 12, 17, 44.4, 12,
 46.12, 15, 18, 21, 48.2, 5, 9, 20, 50.2, 7,
 12, 16, 52.2, 8, 11, 14, 19, 23, 54.2, 5,
 11, 15, 19, 58.2, 6, 8, 11, 14, 20, 24,
 60.2, 8, 12, 19, 22, 62.2, 5, 15, 64.2, 16,
 19, 66.2, 11, 15, 20, 68.3, 6, 9, 13, 16,
 20, 24, 70.2, 5, 10f., 16, 72.9, 15, 22,
 74.4, 17, 20, 76.2, 5, 9, 14, 18, 22, 78.2,
 7, 11, 18, 22, 80.7, 82.2, 84.5, 22,
 86.6, 120.5
bhikkhum 14.24, 16.5, 18.4, 22.9,
 30.16, 18, 32.2, 5, 13, 16, 17, 22, 34.3,
 18, 42.10, 50.8, 12, 56.16, 58.6,
 60.12, 62.6, 64.16, 72.17, 74.7,
 76.2, 78.18, 120.3, 8, 180.10, 192.20
bhikkhugaṇanā 2.9
bhikkhunā 6.1, 14.6, 16, 22.4f., 28.6,
 10, 15, 17, 19, 30.12, 32.19, 24, 34.6,
 36.9, 16, 22, 38.5, 40.8, 19, 42.23,
 44.7, 50.19, 56.3, 17, 62.11, 19, 66.9,
 70.16, 72.19, 74.8, 78.13, 80.2, 10,
 15, 20, 84.8, 86.1, 9
bhikkhunī 158.10
bhikkhunīm 84.15, 118.18, 21,
 126.3, 128.8, 17, 136.25, 142.7,
 152.4, 6, 14, 17, 154.2, 5, 11, 15,
 156.10, 160.2, 168.7, 198.14, 19,
 202.2, 21, 204.17, 208.10, 214.25,
 216.11, 218.2
bhikkhuniyā 28.23, 30.2, 38.10,
 52.23, 54.2, 5, 11, 19, 66.15, 84.5,
 114.18, 136.23, 142.3, 144.13,
 148.8, 12, 16, 20, 150.4-6, 8, 21,
 154.8, 12, 19, 156.12, 158.8f., 20,
 160.13, 15, 164.16, 170.13, 18,
 174.9, 16, 178.8, 182.9, 192.5,
 196.10, 200.2, 14, 202.4, 206.2, 11f.,
 210.2, 9, 14, 212.22, 214.27, 216.12,
 14, 21, 25, 218.6, 220.13, 23, 222.6,
 224.6, 11, 16, 21, 226.3, 8, 13, 18
bhikkhuniyo 52.8, 11, 15, 20, 132.4f.,
 8-10, 21, 23, 27, 134.1, 4, 10, 20,
 136.23, 29, 138.5f., 9, 20f., 140.10-13,
 15-17, 142.8, 174.3, 6, 216.12,
 220.4
bhikkhunī 52.16, 84.12f., 112.13,
 114.14, 116.4, 8, 11, 15, 118.2, 11, 17,
 120.2, 4, 8f., 16, 122.2, 124.5, 7, 11,
 13, 17, 19, 126.2, 5, 8, 10, 14, 18,
 128.2, 4, 8, 12f., 17, 23f., 130.2, 7, 15f.,
 19, 132.2, 6, 12f., 16, 134.8, 17, 27,
 136.1, 4, 8, 10, 15f., 19, 26f., 138.1f.,
 13, 18, 24f., 28, 140.2, 5, 10, 14, 21f., 26,
 142.2, 5-7, 144.6, 9, 13, 20, 146.2, 5,
 9, 13, 17, 148.3, 21, 150.13, 16,
 152.7, 18, 156.18, 22, 158.2, 6, 20, 24,
 160.4, 9, 20, 164.6, 9, 18, 166.2, 7, 11,
 15, 20, 23, 168.2, 5, 10, 14, 18, 21,
 170.2, 5, 10, 18, 172.2, 5, 8, 11, 14, 18,
 20, 174.9, 12, 16, 20, 21, 24, 176.1, 6,
 10, 13, 16, 22, 26, 178.2, 5, 8, 13, 17, 20,
 23, 180.2, 7, 10, 13, 16, 20, 23, 182.2,
 6, 14, 22, 25, 184.2, 6, 10, 13, 17, 21, 25,
 186.2, 8, 11, 15, 19, 22, 188.2, 6, 11,
 16, 20, 23, 190.2, 5, 10, 13, 16, 19, 22,
 192.2, 5, 8, 11, 14, 17, 20, 194.2, 15,
 18, 22, 196.2, 6, 10, 14, 198.2, 8, 13,
 19, 23, 200.8, 202.9, 13, 17, 21,
 204.2, 6, 10, 16, 206.7, 16, 208.10, 15,
 19, 210.4, 9, 14, 19, 22, 25, 212.2, 6, 9,
 14, 15, 22, 214.18, 23, 216.2, 8, 21, 25,
 218.2, 6, 11, 18, 20, 220.2, 7, 11, 19,
 222.2, 12, 224.5, 10, 15, 20, 226.2, 7,
 12, 17
bhikkhunigaṇanā 112.8
bhikkhunīnaṃ 154.14, 158.14,
 218.11
bhikkhunīparipācitaṃ 54.15
bhikkhunīparisāya 158.8f.
bhikkhunīpesuññe 194.12

- bhikkhunīsaṅghassa 112.20,
 132.22, 25, 134.11, 15, 20, 25
 bhikkhunīsaṅgho 142.5, 7
 bhikkhunīsammutiya 150.1, 152.1,
 196.11
 bhikkhunīhi 120.5, 8, 9, 122.3,
 130.7, 15f., 132.6, 12f., 23, 28, 134.1,
 17, 27, 136.1, 10, 15f., 29, 138.5f., 14,
 18, 24f., 140.5, 10, 14, 22f., 174.21, 24,
 176.1, 202.6, 212.9, 14f., 214.7, 12,
 14, 16, 23
 bhikkhunupassayaṃ 52.14
 bhikkhuno 28.16, 34.19, 38.4, 40.9,
 42.21, 44.6, 62.18, 74.10, 84.15
 bhikkhuparisāya 40.8f.
 bhikkhupesunne 46.10
 bhikkhumānattāya 22.6
 bhikkhusaṅghato 182.9
 bhikkhusaṅghassa 4.5
 bhikkhusaṅgho 22.7f.
 bhikkhusammutiya 28.12, 36.19,
 44.9, 48.6
 bhikkhussa 18.2, 42.2, 48.5, 66.15,
 20, 68.13, 74.17, 20, 76.5, 164.18,
 192.17, 210.9
 bhikkhū 2.14, 14.9, 12, 17, 20, 18.2, 7,
 12f., 26f., 20.16–18, 21–23, 22.9,
 52.20, 68.17, 74.7, 76.24, 84.11, 14,
 16
 bhikkhūnaṃ 8.4, 34.2, 40.13, 76.9
 bhikkhūhi 10.11, 14.10, 18, 16.16,
 21f., 18.7, 12f., 20, 24, 202f., 11, 16, 20,
 27f., 56.20, 70.5, 10f., 24, 72.3, 5, 7,
 15, 84.13, 17
 bhiyyo 74.9, 216.14
 bhiyyokamyataṃ 96.15, 236.9
 bhisim 48.21, 198.3
 bhuñja 58.8, 126.18
 bhuñjantassa 164.18
 bhuñjanti 84.11
 bhuñjantī 84.14, 16
 bhuñjamānā 238.6
 bhuñjamāno 98.10
 bhuñjitabbo 56.3, 200.14
 bhuñjissāmī 94.23, 96.2, 5, 8, 11, 19,
 98.16, 19, 22, 100.2, 5, 8, 11, 13, 16, 19,
 102.2, 234.19, 22, 25, 236.2, 5, 13,
 238.12, 15, 18, 21, 24, 240.2, 5, 10, 13,
 16, 19
 bhuñjeyya 54.16, 56.4, 58.3, 12, 15,
 21, 84.7, 24, 86.9, 126.10, 166.4,
 180.17, 200.15, 202.10, 14, 224.5,
 10, 15, 20, 226.3, 7, 12, 17
 bhuttasmiṃ 58.9
 bhuttāvim 58.6
 bhuttāvī 58.2
 bhūtagāmapātabyatāya 48.14,
 196.19
 bhūtasmiṃ 48.3, 196.7
 bhedanakaṃ 78.23, 220.20
 bhedanasamvattanikaṃ 16.15, 18,
 136.9, 12
 bhedanāya 40.10, 158.10
 bhedāpeyya 182.16
 bhedāya 16.14, 17, 136.8, 11
 bhesajjāni 40.14, 158.15
 bhojanīyaṃ 58.3, 11, 15, 60.9, 84.6,
 23, 86.8, 126.9, 17, 178.14, 180.17,
 202.9, 14
 bhojanīyena 58.7
 m' 144.15f.
 maṃ 18.21, 30.21, 32.7, 42.13,
 138.15, 152.9, 19, 160.5, 188.11
 maṃsaṃ 58.20, 226.7
 maggo 54.8
 macchaṃ 226.2
 marcho 58.19
 mañcaṃ 48.20, 50.17, 80.2, 7, 198.2,
 24, 220.23, 222.2
 maññamānāya 160.14
 maññamānena 42.22
 matan 8.19, 116.18
 mattikaṃ 52.3, 200.9
 madhu 40.14, 58.19, 158.16

madhum 224.15
 manasikaroma 4.13, 114.7
 manasikarosī 74.14, 216.18
 manussaviggahaṃ 8.16, 116.15
 manthehi 56.16, 202.3
 mama 18.24, 138.17
 mayaṃ 32.4.20f., 152.16, 154.9.10
 mayam 42.16, 160.8
 mayā 34.5, 154.17
 mayhaṃ 144.16
 mayham 144.16
 maraṇavaṇṇaṃ 8.17.20, 116.16.19
 maraṇāya 8.18.21, 116.17.20
 mahallakaṃ 14.16.20, 50.19, 200.2
 mahājanikena 146.14.18
 mahāsamayo 56.9, 200.20
 mā 18.21, 34.20, 70.6.25, 134.9.19,
 138.15, 156.13, 212.10, 214.8
 mātāpitūhi 188.20
 mātugāmaṃ 12.13, 24.16
 mātugāmaṣṣa 12.17, 46.21
 mātugāmena 12.8, 24.5.17, 46.18,
 60.22, 62.2, 68.24
 mādisaṃ 12.19
 māyasmantānam 18.9
 māyasmanto 18.4.8
 māyasmā 16.17, 18.25, 20.21, 70.5
 māyyā 136.11, 138.19, 140.15
 māyyānam 138.2
 māyyāyo 136.25.29
 māyye 120.7, 130.8, 132.6, 134.18,
 174.22, 212.9, 214.7
 māvuso 70.24
 māsaparamaṃ 150.7
 māsaparaman 28.18
 māso 40.19.21, 66.3f., 208.20f.
 mukhadvāraṃ 58.24, 60.2, 98.7,
 202.17, 238.3
 mukhe 98.10, 238.6
 mukhena 98.13, 238.9
 mutti 74.10, 216.14
 muddhābhisittassa 78.7
 musā 10.7, 118.7

muhuttam 76.6, 218.7
 mūlhā 116.11
 mūlho 8.12
 me 4.8, 34.8, 60.14f., 114.2, 154.20,
 188.6, 202.23f.
 methunaṃ 8.5, 116.4
 methunupasaṃhitāhi 12.15
 methunupasaṃhitena 12.21
 mocāpeyya 182.17
 mohagāminiyo 132.4.9, 140.12.17
 mohagāmīno 20.18.22
 mohanake 74.14, 216.18
 mohā 132.11
 moho 74.11, 216.16
 yaṃ 34.4.17, 74.12, 76.10, 144.15f.,
 154.16, 156.10, 216.17, 218.12
 yañ 74.10, 216.14
 yat' 34.16, 156.8
 yato 126.15
 yattha 22.7, 142.5
 yathā 4.18, 10.11, 12.14, 70.3.22,
 114.11, 122.3, 212.7, 214.5
 yathādhammaṃ 68.9, 210.25
 yathādhammo 74.11, 216.15
 yathārūpe 8.9, 116.9
 yathāsanthutaṃ 76.23, 220.3
 yad 20.1, 138.22
 yadā 118.19
 yadi 4.8, 114.2
 yan 126.16
 yam 72.6, 214.15
 yassa 4.14, 50.8, 78.15, 220.15
 yassā 114.8, 198.14
 yā 12.19, 114.14, 116.4.8.15, 118.2,
 11.17, 120.2.16, 124.5.11.17,
 126.2.8.14, 128.2.8.17, 130.2.5.11,
 132.2, 134.8, 136.8, 144.6.9.13.20,
 146.2.5.9.13.17, 148.3, 150.13,
 156.18.22, 158.2.6.20.24, 160.20,
 164.6.9.18, 166.2.7.11.15.20.23,
 168.2.5.10.14.18.21, 170.2.5.10.

18, 172.2, 5, 8, 11, 14, 18, 20, 174.3, 6,
 9, 12, 16, 20, 176.6, 10, 13, 16, 22, 26,
 178.2, 5, 8, 13, 17, 20, 23, 180.2, 7, 10,
 13, 16, 20, 23, 182.2, 6, 14, 22, 25,
 184.2, 6, 10, 13, 17, 21, 25, 186.2, 8,
 11, 15, 19, 22, 188.2, 6, 11, 16, 20, 23,
 190.2, 5, 10, 13, 16, 19, 22, 192.2, 5, 8,
 11, 14, 17, 20, 194.2, 15, 18, 22, 196.2,
 6, 10, 14, 198.2, 8, 13, 19, 23, 200.8,
 202.9, 13, 17, 21, 204.2, 6, 10, 16,
 206.7, 208.10, 15, 19, 210.9, 14, 19,
 22, 25, 212.2, 6, 22, 214.18, 23,
 216.2, 8, 21, 25, 218.2, 6, 11, 18, 20,
 220.2, 7, 11, 19, 222.2, 12, 224.5, 10,
 15, 20, 226.2, 7, 12, 17
 yānagatassa 104.9, 242.22
 yāni 40.13, 44.2, 58.18, 84.21, 86.5,
 158.14
 yānena 190.13
 yāyeyya 190.13
 yāva 40.10, 42.23, 50.20, 72.17,
 84.14, 16, 158.10, 160.15, 200.3,
 214.25
 yāvatatiyaṃ 4.19, 21, 16.22, 18.14,
 20.3, 28, 70.11, 114.12, 14, 120.10,
 130.16, 132.13, 134.1, 136.16,
 138.6, 25, 140.23, 176.1, 212.15
 yāvatatiyakam 130.19, 132.16,
 134.4, 136.4, 19, 138.9, 28, 140.26
 yāvatatiyakā 22.2, 142.2
 yāvatatiyañ 16.23, 18.14, 20.4, 29,
 70.12, 120.10, 130.17, 132.14,
 134.2, 136.2, 17, 138.7, 26, 140.24,
 176.2, 212.16
 yāvatikā 2.14, 112.13
 yāvātūham 22.3
 yāvad 72.24, 216.4
 yuñjant' 34.19, 156.12
 yuvatim 12.14
 yuvā 12.14
 ye 70.3, 22, 212.7, 214.5
 yena 24.11, 23
 yebhuyyasikā 108.13, 248.10

yeva 136.23
 yesaṃ 10.9, 22.2, 122.1, 142.2
 yo 4.21, 8.4, 9, 16, 10.2, 12.8, 13, 17,
 14.2, 24, 16.5, 14, 24.5, 17, 28.23,
 30.2, 6, 36.3, 6, 38.10, 13, 18, 21,
 40.6, 8, 42.2, 6, 44.12, 46.12, 15, 18,
 21, 48.2, 5, 9, 20, 50.2, 7, 12, 16, 52.2,
 8, 14, 19, 23, 54.2, 5, 11, 15, 19, 58.2, 6,
 11, 14, 20, 24, 60.2, 8, 12, 19, 22, 62.2,
 5, 15, 64.16, 19, 66.2, 15, 20, 68.3, 6,
 9, 13, 16, 20, 24, 70.2, 16, 72.8, 15, 22,
 74.4, 17, 20, 76.2, 5, 9, 14, 18, 22, 78.2,
 7, 11, 18, 22, 80.7, 82.2, 84.5, 21,
 86.6, 158.8

rajāpeyya 28.24, 38.11
 rañño 78.7
 ratanaṃ 78.11, 13, 220.11, 13
 ratanasammatam 78.11, 13, 220.11,
 14
 rattandhakāre 166.20
 rattim 124.18
 rathikāya 168.5
 raho 24.5, 18, 54.19, 60.22, 62.2,
 204.6, 10
 rājabhoggo 32.13, 154.2
 rājā 32.13, 154.2
 rājāgāraṃ 176.22
 rājānaṃ 124.12
 rājāno 8.9, 116.9
 ruciñ 18.6, 136.27
 ruccittha 18.10, 138.3
 rudhitam 182.14
 rūpiyasamvohāraṃ 38.18, 156.22
 re 72.8, 214.17
 rodeyya 170.5

lajjiniyo 130.6, 12
 labhati 10.10, 122.2
 labhanti 72.7, 214.16
 lasuṇaṃ 164.6
 lahupāvuraṇaṃ 148.12

lābham 44.12, 76.24, 78.2, 160.20,
220.4.7
lesamattam 16.6, 128.18
lesamatto 16.10, 128.23
lomam 164.9

va 4.13, 32.9, 114.6, 130.5, 11,
134.8, 18, 152.21
vakkhanti 18.27, 138.21
vakkhāmi 18.23, 138.17
vaggavādakā 18.3
vaggavādikā 136.24
vacanāyā 18.24, 138.18
vacaniyam 18.26
vacaniyam 138.19
vacaniyā 18.8, 120.5, 130.8, 132.6,
24, 134.18, 136.11, 29, 138.18,
140.6, 15, 174.22, 212.9, 214.7, 14
vacaniyo 16.17, 18.25, 20.12, 20,
32.20, 70.5, 24, 72.5, 154.8
vajjanīyā 4.1, 112.15
vajjapaṭicchādikā 118.23
vajjappaṭicchādikā 132.23, 26,
134.11, 15, 21, 25
vajjham 124.11
vaṇṇam 12.18
vaṇṇetī 132.27, 134.17, 27, 174.24
vata 30.20, 32.7, 152.9, 19
vattamānāya 76.18, 218.20
vatthu 14.10, 18
vatthudesanāya 14.9, 13, 17, 21
vatthusim 14.11, 19
vatvā 42.17, 160.9, 188.7, 13
vadatu 138.20
vadetu 18.27
vadeyya 10.6, 20.17, 24.8, 12, 20, 23,
32.17, 23, 34.4, 52.19, 70.2, 7, 21,
72.1, 16, 23, 74.5, 118.6, 20, 126.14,
130.2, 132.3, 134.8, 140.11,
144.14, 154.6, 11, 16, 212.6, 11,
214.4, 10, 24, 216.3, 9
vadeyyum 18.3, 136.25

vadhitvā 170.5
vasamānā 206.16
vasamāno 64.2
vasitabbam 62.19, 206.12
vaseyya 62.20, 180.23, 206.13
vassam 176.16, 180.23, 182.2,
190.5
vassānam 36.17
vassānassa 66.4, 208.21
vassāni 184.2, 6, 14, 18, 21, 25,
186.12, 16, 188.12
vassikasāṭṭhikam 80.20
vassikasāṭṭhikacivaram 40.19, 21
vā 8.9, 11, 18, 21, 10.5, 10, 12.9f.,
14.2-4, 12f., 20, 16.1, 9, 15, 18, 18.3,
22f., 20.8, 22.3, 24.8-11, 20, 22f.,
28.24, 30.6, 8f., 11, 16f., 22, 32.3, 8f.,
13f., 34.1, 17, 36.18, 38.11, 13f., 42.3,
10f., 48.9, 20-23, 50.2-4, 13, 17f.,
52.2f., 54.3, 12, 56.16f., 58.3, 7f., 11f.,
14f., 60.8f., 11-16, 62.6, 64.3, 20,
66.11, 15f., 20-22, 70.18, 72.10,
78.11-15, 22f., 80.2, 7, 82.3, 84.6f.,
23f., 86.7-9, 96.14, 18, 106.14, 17, 20,
116.8, 10, 16f., 20, 118.5, 12f., 19f.,
120.17-20, 122.2, 124.5f., 12f., 17f.,
126.9f., 15, 17f., 128.2-4, 11, 21f.,
136.9, 12, 24, 138.16f., 140.2f.,
144.17f., 150.13-16, 19, 152.4f., 9f.,
15, 20f., 154.2f., 13, 156.9f., 18f.,
158.21, 160.2f., 164.18f., 166.2-4, 7-
9, 11f., 15, 21, 24, 168.3, 5-7, 15, 19f.,
170.2f., 18f., 172.14f., 174.17, 20f.,
176.22f., 26, 178.13f., 180.10f., 16f.,
182.3, 6, 14-17, 188.20, 192.5f., 8f.,
11f., 14f., 196.14f., 198.2-5, 9f., 20,
24f., 200.8f., 202.2f., 9f., 13f., 21, 22-
24, 204.17, 206.17, 208.16, 210.4,
9f., 14-16, 214.1, 19, 220.11-15, 19f.,
23, 222.2, 13, 236.8, 12, 246.6, 9, 13
vācāhi 12.14, 24.17
vāceyya 46.13, 180.2, 194.16
vātavutthisamayō 66.6, 208.23

- vāditaṃ 166.15
 vādo 74.9, 216.13
 vāyamamānā 156.7 -
 vāyamamāno 34.14
 vāyāpeyya 42.7. 11, 158.25, 160.3
 vāsitakena 192.2
 vāssa 8.17
 vikappaṃ 30.20, 32.7, 42.13, 152.8.
 19, 160.5
 vikappetvā 66.17, 210.11
 vikāle 58.11, 78.18, 168.18, 202.9
 vighāsaṃ 166.8, 12
 vijaṭṭāpeyya 38.11
 vijjanti 2.15, 112.14
 viññatvā 166.2
 viññāpetvā 42.6, 58.21, 96.19,
 144.20, 158.24, 166.2, 224.5, 10, 15,
 20, 226.2, 7, 12, 17, 236.13
 viññāpeyya 30.7, 144.20, 150.14
 viññunā 46.22, 196.3
 vitthataṇ 42.14, 160.6
 vidatthi 80.12
 vidatthiyo 14.8, 80.11, 17, 21, 82.4,
 5, 170.15, 222.8, 14f.
 viditaṃ 124.11
 vidhūpanena 164.19
 vinayadharaṃ 72.17, 214.25
 vinayavādinī 136.26, 138.2
 vinayavādī 18.5, 9
 vinayena 120.3, 6, 126.3
 vinassā 34.20, 72.8, 156.13, 214.17
 vinicchayakathāya 76.18, 218.20
 vipariṇatena 12.8, 13, 17
 vippavasitabhaṃ 44.8
 vippavaseyya 28.11, 44.8, 124.18,
 148.21
 vippavāsāya 44.7
 viyyati 42.14, 160.6
 viramath' 18.23
 viramathāyyāyo 138.17
 vilapin 10.7, 118.7
 vilekhāya 72.24, 216.4
 vivarissāmī 98.7, 238.3
 vivādāpannānaṃ 76.10, 218.12
 viviccathāyye 132.26, 134.16, 26
 viviccāyye 174.23
 vivekaṇ 132.26, 134.16, 26, 174.23
 visāṇamayam 78.22, 220.20
 visibbanāpekkhā 208.15
 visibbanāpekkho 64.19
 visibhāpetvā 170.19
 visibhetvā 170.18
 visuddhāpekkhā 118.5
 visuddhāpekkhāya 114.18
 visuddhāpekkhena 6.1
 visuddhāpekkho 10.5
 vissajjetvā 36.18
 viharati 20.9, 140.3
 viharatī 16.20, 18.12, 136.14, 138.4
 viharatha 134.9, 19
 viharanti 132.21, 24, 134.14, 24
 viharanto 44.4
 vihari 174.22
 viharittha 134.9, 19
 vihareyya 124.5, 174.20
 vihāraṃ 14.16, 20, 50.19, 200.2
 vihārā 50.13, 198.20
 vihāre 50.2, 7, 16, 198.8, 13, 23
 vihesake 48.16, 196.22
 vihesāya 72.24, 216.4
 vihesikā 132.22, 25, 134.11, 15, 21, 25
 vīsatiṅaṇo 22.7f., 142.5f.
 vuccati 2.6, 11, 4.2, 112.6, 10, 16
 vuccamānā 18.13, 120.9, 130.15,
 132.12, 28, 134.27, 136.15, 138.5,
 14, 24, 140.10, 22, 174.24, 178.9,
 188.3, 212.14, 214.13, 23
 vuccamāno 16.21, 18.20, 20.2, 16,
 27, 70.10, 72.4, 72.15
 vuttāpanāya 188.8, 13
 vuttāpitam 184.25
 vuttāpitenā 188.2
 vuttāpetvā 184.21, 186.2
 vuttāpeyya 124.13, 182.22, 25,
 184.3, 7, 10, 14, 19, 186.9, 12, 17, 19,
 23, 188.8, 13, 17, 21, 24, 190.2, 5

vutthāpessāmī 188.7. 12
 vuttā 70.4. 8. 23. 72.2. 212.8. 12.
 214.6. 11
 vutto 4.24. 114.17
 vutthā 176.16. 182.2
 vūpakāsāpeyya 186.3
 vūpakāseyya 186.3
 vūpasamāya 108.7. 178.10. 248.4
 vūpasameyya 178.10
 vūpasamehī 178.9
 vethitaśisassa 104.18. 244.6
 veṇiggāham 12.10
 vedissāmī 4.16. 114.10
 vebhassiyā 134.13. 23
 veyyākaraṇam 4.18. 114.11
 veyyāvaccakaram 34.2. 4. 154.15.
 veyyāvaccakaro 32.23f. 34.2. 7.
 154.12-14. 19
 vo 34.20. 156.13
 voropeyya 8.17. 68.3. 116.16.
 210.19
 vosāsamānarūpā 84.12
 voharati 18.6. 136.28

 saṃvaṇṇeyya 8.18. 21. 116.17. 20
 saṃvattantī 74.1. 216.5
 saṃvaddhā 18.28. 138.22
 saṃvaseyya 214.1
 saṃvāsam 10.11. 122.3
 saṃvāsāya 182.6
 saṃvāseyya 70.18
 saṃvidhāya 54.5. 11. 68.20. 24.
 212.2
 saṃvihajitabbam 56.20. 202.6
 saṃsatthā 132.21. 24. 134.8. 14. 18.
 24. 174.20. 22
 saṃharāpeyya 164.9
 sakam 34.20. 144.17. 156.13
 sakabalena 98.13. 238.9
 sakkaccam 94.10. 23. 234.5. 19
 sakyadhītarō 130.5. 11
 saṅkāram 166.7. 11

saṅketam 120.18
 saṅgham 124.12. 130.4. 10. 182.15
 saṅghabhedo 18.10. 138.2
 saṅghassa 4.9. 11. 16.14. 17. 114.3. 5.
 136.8. 11
 saṅghāṭikānaggahaṇam 120.17
 saṅghāṭicāram 172.2
 saṅghāṇim 190.16
 saṅghādisesaṃ 124.8. 14. 20. 126.6.
 11. 19. 128.5. 14. 25. 130.20. 132.17.
 134.5. 136.5. 20. 138.10. 29. 140.27
 saṅghādisesā 12.2. 22.1. 110.1.
 124.2. 142.1. 248.21
 saṅghādisesena 24.8. 10. 20. 22.
 76.2. 218.2
 saṅghādiseso 12.5. 11. 15. 21. 14.4.
 13. 21. 16.3. 11. 25. 18.16. 20.6. 31
 saṅghikam 44.12. 48.20. 76.24.
 78.2. 160.20. 198.2. 220.4. 7
 saṅghikā 50.12. 198.20
 saṅghike 50.2. 7. 16. 198.8. 13. 23
 saṅghikena 146.6. 10
 saṅghe 76.18. 134.9. 19. 218.20
 saṅghena 16.19. 18.11. 76.22. 120.2.
 6. 126.2. 136.13. 138.3. 184.7. 18.
 186.16. 22. 220.2
 saṅgho 4.8. 9. 16.20. 18.11. 114.2f..
 132.27. 134.12. 17. 22. 27. 136.14..
 138.3. 174.23
 sacc 188.6. 11
 saṅcarittam 14.2. 128.2
 saṅcicca 8.16. 68.3. 76.5. 116.15.
 174.9. 210.19. 218.6
 saṅcetanikā 12.5
 saṅṇatto 34.5. 154.17
 saṅṇācikāya 146.12
 saṅṇācikena 146.10. 18. 148.4
 saṅṇāpetvā 34.3. 154.15
 satiyā 28.20. 150.9. 150.9
 sativinayo 108.10. 248.7
 satt 14.9
 satta 108.5. 16. 110.7. 248.2. 13. 26
 sattarasa 124.2. 142.1. 248.21

- sattāhaparamaṃ 40.15, 158.16
 satthagamaniyo 54.7
 satthapānissa 102.17, 242.8
 satthahāraṇaṃ 8.17, 116.16
 satthā 72.6, 214.15
 satthusāsanena 120.3, 6, 126.3
 saddhiṃ 10.11, 12.9, 24.5, 18, 54.5,
 11.19, 56.20, 60.14, 22, 62.2, 68.20,
 24, 70.17, 72.7, 122.3, 144.13,
 166.21, 23, 168.2, 6, 182.15, 202.6,
 23, 204.6, 10, 212.2, 23, 214.16
 saddheyyavacasā 24.7, 11, 19, 23
 santī 130.5, 11
 santaṃ 62.5, 78.18
 santaruttaraparamaṃ 150.20
 santaruttaraparamaṃ 30.12
 santā 4.13, 32.9, 114.6, 152.21
 santi 134.9, 19
 santiṃ 4.22, 114.15, 204.16
 santike 12.18, 130.6, 12
 santiṭṭheyya 120.18, 166.21, 24,
 168.3, 6
 santi 6.2, 114.19
 santhatam 36.3, 6, 9, 13, 16-18
 santharāpetvā 48.21, 50.3, 168.19,
 198.3, 9
 santharivā 48.21, 50.2, 168.19,
 198.3, 8
 sannidhikāraṇaṃ 40.15, 58.14,
 158.16, 202.13
 sapadānaṃ 96.5, 234.25
 saparikkamaṇaṃ 14.10, 19
 sappatibhayāni 44.3, 86.6
 sappatibhaye 176.6, 10
 sappatibhayo 54.8
 sappāṇakaṃ 52.2, 68.6, 200.8,
 210.22
 sappi 40.14, 58.19, 158.15
 sappiṃ 224.5
 sabbam 98.10
 sabbahattham 238.6
 sabbā 114.6
 sabbāh 250.2
 sabbe 4.13
 sabbeḥ 110.9
 sabhattā 204.16
 sabhatto 62.5
 sabhāgāpattiyo 2.15, 112.14
 sabhikkhukaṃ 180.7
 sabhojane 60.19, 204.2
 samaggassa 4.5, 16.14, 17, 112.20,
 136.8, 11
 samaggāhi 250.3
 samaggena 76.22, 120.2, 6, 126.2,
 220.2
 samaggechi 110.10
 samaggo 16.19, 18.11, 136.13,
 138.3
 samañacīvaram 172.15
 samañaparibhājakenaṃ 124.7
 samañabhattasamayo 56.9, 200.21
 samaṇiyo 130.5f., 11f.
 samañuddesa 70.25, 72.1, 5
 samañuddesaṃ 72.9, 214.18
 samañuddesā 72.7, 214.4, 7, 12f., 16
 samañuddese 214.8, 10, 14
 samañuddeso 70.21, 24, 72.3f.
 samatiṭṭhikaṃ 94.18, 234.14
 samathāya 108.7, 248.4
 samanuggāhiyamānā 118.4,
 128.11, 21
 samanuggāhiyamāno 10.4, 16.1, 9
 samanubhāsitaṭṭhā 18.14, 120.10,
 130.17, 132.13, 134.1, 136.2, 17,
 138.7, 25, 140.23, 176.2, 212.15
 samanubhāsitaṭṭho 16.23, 20.3, 28,
 70.11
 samanubhāsiyamānā 18.15, 120.11,
 130.18, 132.14, 134.2, 136.3, 18,
 138.8, 26, 140.24, 176.3, 212.16
 samanubhāsiyamāno 16.23, 20.4,
 29, 70.12
 samayā 30.7, 52.15, 54.7, 56.6, 12,
 62.7, 66.3, 150.14, 200.18, 204.18,
 208.20

- samayena 10.4, 16.1.8, 118.4,
128.11.21
samayo 30.8f., 52.16f., 54.7.9, 56.7.
9.13f., 62.8f., 66.3.7, 150.15f.,
200.19.21, 204.19f., 208.20.24
samāsūpakam 94.16, 96.8, 234.11,
236.2
samācārā 20.10, 13.24, 140.4.7.19
samādapeyya 8.18.21, 116.17.20
samādahāpeyya 64.20, 208.16
samādaheyya 64.19, 208.16
samādāya 16.15.18, 136.9.12
samānā 204.16
samāno 62.5
samāpajjeyya 12.9, 14.2, 38.19.21,
128.2, 156.23, 158.2
samāpetvā 4.1, 112.19
samudācareyya 10.3, 118.3
samet' 16.19, 18.10
sametāyyā 136.13
sametāyyānam 138.3
sampajānamusāvād' 4.22, 114.15
sampajānamusāvāde 46.6, 194.7
sampajānamusāvādo 4.23, 114.16
sambādhe 164.9
sambādho 50.8, 198.15
sambhuñjeyya 70.17, 72.10, 214.1.
19
sammajjanī 2.5, 112.5
sammato 52.11
sammā 130.14
sammukhāvinayo 108.9, 248.6
sammodamānāhi 250.3
sammodamānehi 110.10
sammodamāno 16.20, 18.11,
136.14, 138.4
sayanagatassa 104.12, 242.25
saramānā 114.14
saramānāya 114.18
saramānena 6.1
saramāno 4.21
sallapeyya 120.18, 166.21.24,
168.3.6
sasitthakam 102.8, 240.25
sassāmikam 14.17
saha 18.27f., 70.18, 72.10, 138.20f.,
214.1.19
sahajīvinim 174.12, 184.21, 186.2
sahatthā 38.6, 60.9, 84.6.23, 86.8,
126.9.17, 178.14
sahadhammikam 18.20, 72.15,
138.14, 214.23
sahaseyyam 46.16.18, 72.8, 194.19.
22, 214.17
sā 24.11.23, 84.11.13, 114.8,
118.19-21, 120.4.8f., 130.7.15f.,
132.5.12f., 134.17.27, 136.1.10.15f.,
138.18.23f., 140.5.9.14.21f., 142.5.
7, 144.14, 152.7.18, 160.3.9,
170.19, 174.21.24, 176.1, 178.9,
188.3.7.13, 198.15, 212.9.13f.,
214.7.12f.
sāditabbam 30.13, 150.21
sāditabbā 62.11, 206.3
sādiyeyya 30.13, 38.14, 62.13,
118.13, 120.17-19, 150.22, 156.19,
206.4
sādhu 30.20, 32.7, 70.6.26, 152.8.
19, 212.10, 214.9
sādhukam 4.13, 74.13, 114.7,
216.17
sādhū 178.9, 188.3
sāpi 72.8, 214.17
sāmam 34.17, 42.2.6, 66.16, 156.9,
158.20.24, 210.10
sāmañerassa 66.16, 210.10
sāmañeriyā 66.16, 192.11, 210.10
sāmantā 36.23, 38.1
sāmike 168.11.15.18
sāmikena 188.20
sāmisena 102.5, 240.22
sāmīci 22.10, 40.11, 56.21, 78.16,
142.8, 156.13, 158.11, 202.7,
214.28, 220.16
sāmīci 34.21, 72.20
sārambhe 14.11.19

- sārāyamānā 156.1
 sārāyamāno 34.9
 sāretabbo 34.8, 154.20
 sāsaṅkasammatāni 44.3, 86.5
 sāsaṅkasammate 176.6, 10
 sāsaṅkasammato 54.8
 sikkhaṃ 8.5, 130.4, 10
 sikkhamānaṃ 184.3, 7, 188.6, 11, 17.
 21, 23
 sikkhamānāya 66.15, 192.8, 210.10,
 214.26
 sikkhamānena 72.18
 sikkhā 88.5, 8, 11, 13, 16, 18, 90.2, 4, 7.
 9, 14, 16, 18f., 92.2, 4, 7, 9, 12, 14, 19.
 21, 23, 94.1, 4, 7, 10, 13, 16, 18, 23,
 96.2, 5, 8, 12, 15, 19f., 23, 98.2, 7, 11,
 13, 16, 19, 22, 100.2, 5, 8, 11, 13, 16, 19,
 102.2, 6, 9, 12, 15, 18, 21, 104.4, 7, 9,
 13, 16, 19, 22, 25, 106.3, 6, 9, 12, 15, 18,
 21, 228.6, 8, 11, 13, 16, 18, 21, 230.1,
 4, 6, 11, 13, 16, 18, 21, 23, 232.2, 4, 7, 9,
 14, 16, 19, 21, 24, 234.2, 5, 8, 11, 14, 19,
 22, 25, 236.2, 6, 9, 13, 16, 19, 22,
 238.3, 7, 9, 12, 15, 18, 21, 24, 240.2, 5,
 10, 13, 16, 19, 23, 26, 242.3, 6, 9, 12, 17,
 20, 22, 26, 244.3, 7, 10, 13, 17, 21, 24,
 246.3, 7, 10, 14
 sikkhākāmā 130.6, 12
 sikkhāpadavivaṇṇake 74.1, 216.5
 sikkhāpade 72.16, 214.24
 sikkhāpadesu 18.20, 138.14
 sikkhāpadehi 72.23, 216.3
 sikkhāsājīvasamāpanno 8.4
 sikkhitabban 110.10, 250.3
 sikkhitasikkhaṃ 184.6, 18, 186.16
 sikkhissāmi 72.17, 214.25
 siṅghāṭake 168.5
 siṅcāpeyya 52.3, 200.9
 siṅceyya 52.3, 200.9
 sitthāvākarakam 100.5, 238.24
 sikkhāpanāya 170.20
 sikkhāpeyya 54.3
 sikkhāpeyya 54.3, 170.19
 siyā 4.14, 22.7, 44.6, 62.18, 114.8,
 142.5, 206.11
 sīlavantaṃ 12.19
 sīsappacālakam 92.12, 14, 232.7, 9
 sukkavissatthi 12.5
 sugataṅgulena 80.3, 220.24
 sugatacīvarappamāṇaṃ 82.2, 4,
 222.12, 14
 sugatacīvarappamāṇan 82.6,
 222.16
 sugatavidatthi 36.23
 sugatavidatthim 38.1
 sugatavidatthiyā 14.8, 80.12, 17, 22,
 82.5, 170.15, 222.8, 15
 sugatassa 82.4f., 222.14f.
 suṇātu 4.8, 114.2
 suṇoma 4.13, 114.7
 sutena 182.3
 suttaṃ 42.6, 158.24, 178.2
 suttapariyāpannaṃ 110.8, 250.1
 suttapariyāpanno 74.6, 216.10
 suttagataṃ 110.8, 250.1
 suttagato 74.6, 216.10
 suddhakālakānaṃ 36.6, 10, 12
 supinantā 12.5
 suppaṭicchannā 228.11, 13
 suppaṭicchanno 88.11, 13
 suppvāyitaṇ 42.15, 160.7
 suyanti 20.10f., 13f., 24f., 140.4f., 7f.,
 19f.
 surāmerayapāne 64.8, 206.20
 surusurukārakam 100.13, 240.10
 suvitacchitaṇ 42.15, 160.7
 suvilekhitaṇ 42.15, 160.7
 suvitaṇ 42.14, 160.6
 susaṃvutā 228.16, 18
 susaṃvuto 88.16, 18
 sūciharaṃ 66.21, 78.23, 210.15,
 220.20
 sūpaṃ 84.12, 96.14, 18, 236.8, 12
 sūriye 52.11
 sekkhasammatāni 84.21
 sekkhasammatesu 84.22

- sekhiyā 88.1, 106.23, 110.6, 228.2,
 246.17, 248.25
 seṇiṃ 124.12
 senaṃ 62.15, 18, 206.7.11
 senābyūhaṃ 64.3, 206.17
 senāya 62.19, 64.2, 206.12, 16
 senāsanāni 44.3, 86.5
 senāsanesu 44.4, 86.7
 seyyaṃ 50.2, 8, 70.18, 72.10,
 168.19, 198.8, 14, 214.1, 20
 seyyath' 40.14, 58.18, 158.15
 seyyo 8.19, 116.18
 seso 40.19-22, 66.3, 208.21
 so 4.14, 16.16, 21f., 18.24, 20.2f., 11,
 16, 20, 27f., 22.7, 9, 24.12, 23, 30.19,
 32.6, 16, 19, 22, 34.2, 5, 40.8f., 42.11,
 17, 50.9, 68.17, 70.5, 10, 24, 72.3f., 6,
 78.15, 154.5, 8, 10, 14, 17, 158.8f.,
 214.15, 220.15
 sokāvāsaṃ 188.17
 soṣṣāmī 76.11, 218.13
 svākkhāto 130.13

 h' 24.15
 hatthaṃ 98.10
 hatthaggaṇaṃ 120.17
 hatthaggaṇaṃ 12.9
 hatthato 30.2, 84.6, 126.9
 hatthaniddhunakaṃ 100.2, 238.21
 hatthanillehakaṃ 100.16, 240.13
 hatthena 102.5, 240.22
 haneyyum 8.11, 116.10
 handa 58.8
 handāyyc 144.14
 harite 106.17, 166.12, 246.9
 harissatī 78.15, 220.16
 hareyya 38.7
 hasāpekkhā 210.16
 hārake 38.7f.
 hāreṭabbāni 38.6
 hāsadhamme 64.12, 208.5
 hāsapekkho 66.22
 hi 6.2, 16.19, 18.11, 28, 70.6f., 26,
 114.19, 136.13, 138.3, 22, 212.10f.,
 214.9
 heṭṭhimāya 80.4, 220.25
 hotī 4.18, 20, 22, 6.2, 8.7, 13, 22, 10.8,
 12, 16.2, 10, 18.19, 24.15f., 30.8, 17,
 52.16, 54.8, 60.15, 84.12, 114.11, 13,
 15, 19, 116.5, 12, 21, 118.8, 14, 23,
 120.12, 21, 122.4, 128.12, 22,
 138.13, 150.15, 152.5, 202.24
 hotī 60.16, 202.25
 honti 4.1, 18.2, 32.4, 112.15, 136.23,
 152.16

II. INDEX OF ENGLISH WORDS

- ablution with water 165
 abode 21, 23, 141; a.s. 45, 87
 see also forest
 absent, bhikkhus 3, 5; bhikkhunīs
 113, 115
 abstain [from wrong doing] 21, 139
 abuse 181
 abusive speech 47, 195
 accept, 235; a. a robe 31, 33, 155:
 a. a robe fund 33, 155; a. gold or
 silver 39, 157; a. cakes or
 biscuits 57, 203; a. requisites 63,
 207; a. alms food 95, 235; a. a
 drinking pot 103, 241, 241; a.
 robe material 151; a. with one's
 own hand 87, 127
 accepted 29, 31, 39, 41, 63, 85, 87,
 127, 151, 159, 203, 207
 accordance, in a. with the law 19,
 21, 73, 75, 139, 215, 217; n a.
 with the rule 127; n a. with our
 desire and choice 19, 137; n a.
 with one or other of three matters
 25; n a. with one of two matters
 25; n a. with a female lay-
 follower whose word can be
 trusted 25
 according to: the law 69, 71, 211,
 215; acquaintanceship 77, 221:
 the [prescribed] measurements
 15, 81, 171, 223; what is
 admitted 109, 249
 accuse 15, 17, 77, 129, 219
 acknowledging 25
 acquaintanceship *see* according to
 acquiring a new robe 67, 211
 act [sexual] 13
 act as a go-between 15, 129
 action, *see* course, renewed
 acts, *see* formal, lawful
 acting in accordance 75, 217
 admits to 17, 129
 admitted 109, 249
 admonishable 19, 139
 admonished 17, 19, 21, 23, 71,
 121, 131, 133, 135, 137, 139,
 141, 177, 213
 afterwards 11, 43, 119, 145, 159,
 171, 179, 189
 against his will 23
 agreement, in a. 17, 19, 111, 137,
 139, 251; a. of the bhikkhunīs
 149; a. of the bhikkhus 29, 49
 ailing [woman] 175
 all alone 61, 203
 all round 37, 39, 89, 229
 allowable 33, 125, 155
 alluding to sexual intercourse 13
 alms, a. bowl 43, 161; a. food 55,
 61, 95, 97, 203, 235, 237; a.
 food with curry 95, 97, 235,
 237; a. tour 177, 179
 alone 125
 alternative 31, 33, 43, 153, 161
 amends, make a. 121
 angry 43, 51, 75, 131, 133, 159,
 175, 199, 217
 animal, *see* male
 announce 49, 79, 197; a. purity 5,
 115
 announced beforehand, not 79, 87
 announcing *see* time
 anointed on the head 79
 another, a. class 17, 129; a.
 occasion 11, 15, 17, 119, 129; a.
 [person] 21, 141, 169, 171; a.
 new rug 37; a. new bowl 41,
 159; a. thing 145, 147, 149
 answer 5, 115
 answered 179, 189

- applied, to be 67, 211
 appoint the site 15
 appointed, to be 15; a. for another thing 147, 149
 apportion to an individual 79, 221
 apportioned, a. to oneself 45, 161;
 a. property 79, 221; a.
 possession belonging to the
 saṅgha 45, 161
 apportioning 77, 221
 appreciatively 95, 235
 approach 155
 approached, having 33, 35, 155,
 169
 approaching 121; a. for exhorta-
 tion 183
 appropriate time 3, 5, 113
 approved 53; not a. 53, 185, 187;
 a. by the saṅgha 185, 187; a. as
 learners 85
 area, a. of two or three coverings
 [of plaster] 51, 201; a. without
 green crops 51, 201
 arise, legal processes a. 109, 249
 "Ariṣṭha" rule 71, 213
 arms. a. akimbo 93, 233; a.
 swinging 93, 233
 army 63, 65, 207; a. array 65,
 207; a. in array 63, 207; a.
 review 65, 207
 arrangement, by a. 55, 69, 213; by
 prior a. 55
 arrested 9, 117
 arrived 3, 51, 57, 113, 199, 203
 see also bhikkhu, bhikkhunī
 ask 7, 11, 23, 27, 45, 73, 83, 87,
 107, 109, 115, 123, 143, 163,
 193, 215, 227, 247, 249; a.
 about 183; a. for 31, 43, 59, 97,
 145, 147, 149, 151, 159, 167,
 169, 181, 193, 223, 225, 227,
 237; asking leave 49, 51, 63, 79,
 199; to be asked about 73, 215;
 without asking [for permission]
 169, 181
 assembly 5, 115; Bhagavant's a.
 21, 139; a. of bhikkhunīs 159;
 a. of bhikkhus 41
 assigned 67, 211
 attain worldly knowledge 179
 attend 5, 115; a. to an ailing
 [woman] 175
 attention 75, 217; a. to the bowl
 95, 97, 235
 available 43, 161
 avoid. *see* individual
 away, to be 125

 had 19, 139; b. behaviour 21, 141
 banish 21, 141
 bank, other b. of a river 125
 bargaining 149
 bathe 67, 171, 191, 193, 209
 bathing robe 171
 battlefield 65, 207
 "be off!" 73, 215
 beat, to 9, 117
 beating (to wash) 29
 bed 51, 81, 169, 195, 221, 223; to
 'make one's b. with 47, 71, 73,
 199, 213, 215
 [bedchamber] threshold 79
 beforehand 79, 87
 begging 15
 belonging to: a large company
 147; another class 17, 129; a
 group 147; an individual 149;
 the saṅgha 49, 51, 79, 147, 161,
 199, 221
 bench 51, 81, 199, 221, 223
 benefit 237; no b. 35, 157
 beset [by passion] 13
 Bhagavant 5, 21, 45, 71, 73, 111,
 113, 115, 139, 213, 215, 251

- bhikkhu, bh. in training 73; bh. named so-and-so 33; bh. saṅgha 5, 23, 183; suspended bh. 121; bh. who arrived before 51; bh. who has not given leave 193
 bhikkhunī, bh. not related 29, 31, 33, 39, 53, 55, 85; bh. saṅgha 113, 133, 143; bh. in training 215; bh. who arrived before 199; bh.s' quarters 53
 bind, to 9, 117
 biscuits 57, 203
 black 37
 blow, a 75, 217
 blue 67, 211
 boast, to 11, 119
 boat 55, 57, 201
 bodice 195
 bodily contact with a woman 13
 body, *see* hair, lower
 boil 183
 bone 79, 221
 border 81
 both saṅghas 143, 183
 bound up 183
 bowl 41, 67, 95, 97, 101, 149, 159, 211, 235, 237, 241; extra b. 41; hoard of b. 145; new b. 41; section 145
see also alms b.; licking
 bowl-washing [water] 241
 brahman 33, 155
 break 183
 breaking up 79, 221, 239; b.u. a mouthful 99, 239
 bring 15, 31, 57, 59, 151, 203
 broken 41, 159
 broom 3, 113
 brought: 15, 33, 35, 155, 157; b. back 57, 203; not b. 99, 239
 Buddha 131
 burst 183
 butter 59; fresh b. 41, 159
 buying 39, 159
 cakes 57, 203
 caravan 55, 177; c. of thieves 69, 213
 carded 39 (sheep's wool)
 carpet 175
 carriage road 169
 carried, to be c. for six years 37; to be c. for three yojanas at most 39; to be c. out 109, 127, 249
 cell 51, 199
 censurable 23, 69, 143; c. offence 85, 87, 225, 227
 chair 49, 199
 cheeks 99, 239
 chew 59, 85, 87, 203
 chomping noise [= smack the lips]. to make a 101, 241
 circle of the knees 119
 claimed, not to be 73, 215
 class [of rule] 17, 129
 cloth, heavy c. 149; light c., 149
 collarbone 119
 come down in the sutta 111, 251
 comes up for recitation 75, 111, 217, 251
 committed an offence 7, 11, 23, 85, 87, 115, 119, 123, 125, 127, 129, 131, 133, 135, 137, 139, 141, 143, 225, 227; c. a fault 75, 217
 communion, not in 9, 11, 117, 119, 121, 123; not go for c. 183; no longer allowed to [live in] c. 11, 123
 companion 169
 company, obtain permission from 145; keep c. with 175, 189; living in c. 133, 135, in c. with 77, 221; a large c. 147

- conceal an offence 23, 69; c. a fault 119; c. one another's faults 133, 135
- conducive, c. to schism 17, 137; c. to worry, etc. 73, 217
- confessed (offences) 5, 115; to be c. 85, 87, 111, 225, 227, 249
- confusion 73, 217
- conscientious 131
- conscious lie 5, 47, 115, 195
- consent 3, 77, 113, 219; c. postponed overnight 189; c. to rubbing, etc., 119; c. to holding the hand, etc., 121; [bringing] c. 3, 113, 137; having given c. [= proxy vote] 77, 219
- consume (food) 59, 85, 87, 203
- contact *see* bodily
- contained in the sutta 75, 111, 217, 251
- contempt 135
- convenient enough [for sexual intercourse] 25; c. for addressing a woman with lewd words 25
- convey to the mouth 61, 203
- cooked 167
- corrupted 15, 17, 21, 129, 141
- corrupter of families 21, 141
- corrupting 15, 17, 129
- corruption 17, 129
- cotton 81, 223
- couch 49, 105, 175, 199, 243
- counting (the participants) 3, 113
- course of action, 17, 19, 21, 23, 71, 121, 131, 133, 135, 137, 139, 141, 177, 213
- cover 175
- covering up [as] with grass 109, 249
- coverings (of plaster) 51, 201
- critical nature 189
- criticising 49
- criticism 77, 219, 221
- crops, 167; green c. 51, 201
- cross over, c.o. a stream 55; c.o. a threshold 79
- crossroads 169
- crowded, too c. 51, 199
- cul-de-sac 169
- curds 59, 227
- curry 95, 97, 235, 237
see also alms food
- curse 171
- cutting down 81, 83, 171, 221, 223
- damage, causing 49, 197
- dancing 167
- dangerous 45, 55, 87, 177
- dark brown 67, 211
- dark of the night 167
- daughters of the Sakyans 131
- day, [d. for the] observance 3, 113; d.s 23; *see also* fifteenth, five, fourth and fifth, seven, ten
- dealt with, to be, 25, 75, 217; not been d.w. 71, 213
- death 9, 117, 125
- deceased 119
- decision of the majority 109, 249
- [declaration of] purity 3, 5, 113, 115
- decrying 197
- defæcate 107, 247
- defeat 9, 11, 15, 17, 25, 109, 117, 119, 123, 129, 249
- defeated 9, 11, 117, 119, 121, 123
- deficiency 29, 151
- deliberation 77, 219
- depart 21, 23, 77, 141, 169, 219; not departed 79; departing 49, 51, 199
- dependence, live in d. 21, 141

- deposit 29, 43, 45, 151, 161;
 deposited 29, 39, 43, 79, 151,
 157, 161, 221
 deprive of life 9, 69, 117, 211
 desire 19, 21, 119, 121, 127, 133,
 137, 141; d. for a fine [robe] 31,
 33, 153; d. to get more 97, 237;
 group's d. 127
 desirous of training 131
 destined for another thing 147, 149
 detachable legs 51, 199
 detachment 133, 135
 determined 51, 145, 201
 Dhamma 47, 71, 105, 103, 105,
 107, 131, 137, 139, 195, 197,
 243, 245, 247; D. taught by the
 Bhagavant 71, 213, 215; *see*
 also speaker
 difficult to speak to 19, 139
 dig the earth 49, 197
 discipline 121, 127
 discomfort, cause 175
 disfigurement 67, 211
 dismiss 61, 169, 203
 disparaging 49, 197; d. the training
 rules 73, 217
 displeased 15, 17, 43, 51, 75, 129,
 131, 133, 159, 175, 199, 217
 dispose the body 121
 disputing 77, 219; not d. 17, 19,
 111, 137, 139, 251
 disrespect 65, 135, 209
 disrespectful 121
 [distance of] five or six yojanas
 177, 187
 distributed 145
 divan 177
 doer of the eight things 121
 door bolts 51, 201
 doorway 51, 201
 downcast eyes 91, 229, 231
 downstream 55
 dream 13
 dress, to 31, 33, 153, 155
 drinking 3, 65, 103, 113, 207; d.
 pot 103; d. water 165; drinking-
 water pot 241; *see also* water
 drive out 51, 199
 duty, *see* preliminary
 dwelling 179; d. place 15, 51, 79,
 189, 199, 201, 221
 dyed 29, 39
 ear 169
 earth 53, 201; *see also* dig
 eat 55, 57, 59, 95, 97, 99, 101, 103,
 127, 165, 167, 181, 201, 213,
 235, 237, 239, 241; eat together
 with 71, 73, 215
 eaten, to be 41, 57, 159, 201; when
 it is e. 59
 eating 85, 97, 99, 165, 239;
 finished e. 59; e. in groups 57,
 201; e. at the wrong time 59,
 203
 eavesdropping 77, 219
 edge [of the bowl] 95, 235
 effort, make an e. 171, 175, 179,
 189; *see also* further
 eight, doer of e. things 121; e.
 fingers of the sugata finger 81,
 221; e. matters entailing defeat
 117, 123, 249; e. matters to be
 confessed 225, 227, 249; e.
 [offences] 143
 elders 53
 embark on a boat 55; embarking
 on a boat 57, 201
 emission, intentional e. of semen
 13
 encroaching 51, 199
 engage in 9, 13, 39, 117, 157, 159,
 221; e. in criticism 77, 219, 221
 enter, e. a village 79, 195; e. a park
 181; e. into a covered place 121

- evasively 49, 197
 even all round 89, 229
 evenly woven 43, 161
 every, *e.* half month 75, 111, 183, 217, 251; *e.* year 191
 evidence, poor *e.* 135
 evil, *e.* habits 133, 135; *e.* repute 133, 135; *e.* ways of living 133, 135
 examined, being 11, 119
 exceed 15
 exceeding 29, 41, 81, 149, 159, 165, 171, 221, 223
 exchange, to 41, 159; in *e.* 31, 53, 147, 149, 159
 exchanged 145
 exclusion, *see* formal
 exhort 53
 exhortation 3, 53, 113, 183
 expectation 29, 151, 173
 expel 9, 117
 expelled 73, 119, 215
 expert, *see* learned
 expiation 25, 47, 49, 51, 53, 55, 57, 59, 61, 63, 65, 67, 69, 71, 73, 75, 77, 79, 81, 111, 165, 167, 169, 171, 173, 175, 177, 179, 181, 183, 185, 187, 189, 191, 193, 195, 197, 199, 201, 203, 205, 207, 209, 211, 213, 215, 217, 219, 221, 223, 249; *e.* with forfeiture 29, 31, 33, 35, 37, 39, 41, 43, 45, 111, 145, 147, 149, 151, 153, 157, 159, 161, 163, 249
 extra, *see* bowl, robe
 eyes *see* downcast
 faeces 167
 fall from this holy life 15, 17, 129
 family 57, 61, 85, 181, 203, 205; families 21, 63, 85, 141, 169, 205
 fan 165
 father 189
 fault 75, 217; conceal *f.* 119, 133, 135; find *f.* 59, 97, 237
 female, *f.* animal 9; *f.* lay follower whose word can be trusted 25; *f.* novice 67, 193, 211; *f.* trainee 67, 211; *f.* wanderer 61, 173, 179
 fence 167
 fermented liquors and spirits 65, 207
 fever 67, 209
 fifteenth day 5, 115
 finding fault 97, 237
 fine, *f.* foods 59; *f.* [robe] 31, 33, 153
 fingers 65, 81, 209; *see also* eight, sugata
 finished, *f.* preliminary works and duties 5, 113; *f.* probation 23; *f.* eating 59
 fire 65, 209
 firm (robe material) 43, 161
 first month of the rainy season 67, 209
 fish 59, 227
 five, *f.* days 173; *f.* mends 41, 159; *f.* or six sentences 47, 197; *f.* or six yojanas 177, 187; *f.* times 35, 157
 follower of one who is suspended 121
 followers 19, 137
 food 61, 99, 103, 167, 203, 205, 237, 239, 241; solid *f.*, soft *f.* 59, 61, 85, 87, 127, 179, 181, 203; a piece of *f.* 99, 237; other *f.s.* 237; *see also* alms, fine
 fool 9, 117

- forest 9, 117; f. abodes 45, 87
 forfeited, to be 41, 159
 forfeiture, *see* offence
 formal, f. acts 77, 219; f. meeting of the saṅgha 13, 15, 25, 17, 19, 21, 23, 77, 111, 125, 219, 249; f. meeting of the saṅgha involving [temporary] exclusion 125, 127, 129, 131, 133, 135, 137, 139, 141, 143; f. proceeding 3, 113; f. taking back [i.e. rescinding of the assignment] 67, 211
 formed 183
 four, f. *kamsas* 149; f. matters entailing defeat 9, 11, 109; f. matters to be confessed 85, 87, 111; f. months 63, 207; f. [offences] 23; f. spans of the sugata span 81, 171, 223; f. times, five times, or six times at most 35, 157
 fourth, f. and fifth days 171; f. (part) 37
 frame, f. below 81, 221; *see also* kathina
 fresh, *see* butter
 friend(s) 11, 33, 35, 43, 61, 71, 73, 75, 85, 87, 155, 157, 161; f. novice 71, 73
 frighten 65, 209
 frightening 45, 55, 87, 177
 from the top 97, 237
 front, in f. of a bhikkhu 193
 full moon, *see* Kattika
 fully, f. twelve years old 185; f. twelve years [of standing] 187; f. twenty years of age 187
 function, *see* preliminary
 further efforts 35, 157
 further evil 109, 249
 gain, no g. 75, 217
 garlic 165
 "get away with you" 73, 215
 getting up 77, 219
 ghee 41, 59, 159, 225
 girl, married 185
 give 43, 53, 61, 75, 85, 145, 161, 173, 179, 189, 217; g. up 17, 19, 21, 23, 71, 121, 131, 133, 135, 137, 139, 141, 143, 177, 213, 215, 217; g. with one's own hand 39, 61, 85, 179; g. one's consent [= proxy vote] 77, 219
 given 43, 61, 77, 109, 159, 175, 179, 193, 203, 219, 249; not g. 9, 61, 77, 117, 203; to be g. 41; not g. up 71
 giving, g. a robe 77, 221; g. directions 85; g. food 127; g. suck 183; g. of consent 189; [g. a penalty] to one for further evil 249; g. robe material 57, 63, 201, 205
 go, to, 49, 51, 61, 63, 65, 89, 91, 93, 95, 121, 125, 157, 167, 183, 199, 203, 205, 207, 229, 231, 233; to g. away 51, 85; g. to see 63, 167, 177, 207; g. behind 107, 245; g. beside a path 107, 247; g. in front 107, 245; not g. for exhortation 183; g. on the path 107, 247; g. on a journey 57, 67, 201, 209; g. [wrong] from desire, fear, hatred, stupidity 21, 133, 141
 go-between *see* act
 gold 39, 157
 good 7, 17, 19, 21, 23, 31, 33, 35, 71, 115, 121, 131, 133, 135, 137, 139, 141, 143, 153, 157, 177, 179, 189, 213, 215; g. man 9, 117
 gossiping 135
 grain 167

grass 53, 109, 201, 249
 green *see* crops, plants
 grief 189
 gross offence 49, 69, 197.
 group 119, 125, 127, 173, 181,
 183, 201; groups 57; g. of
 twenty 23, 143; g.'s desire 127
 grow, to let hair g. 165
 growth, come to 21, 139
 grudging 181
 guild 125

 habits 135; *see also* evil
 hair, locks of h. 13; h. of the
 [private parts of the] body 165
 half, h. a month 41, 67, 143, 209;
 h. month 75, 111, 183, 217, 251
 hand, one's own h. 39, 61, 85, 87,
 127, 179; shaking one's h. 101,
 239; licking one's h. 101, 241;
 soiled h. 103, 241; umbrella in
 h. 103, 243; h. soiled by food
 103, 241; staff in h. 103, 243;
 knife in h. 103, 243; weapon in
 h. 103, 243; from the h. of a
 bhikkhunī 31, 85; from the h. of
 a man 127; whole h. 99, 239;
 see also holding, palm
 handed, h. back 173; h. down 75,
 217
 harm 15
 head, h. covered 93, 95, 233; h.
 covered up 105, 245; h. of the
 army 65, 207; h. wrapped
 around [with a turban] 105, 245;
 shaking the h. 93, 233; *see also*
 anointed
 hear 5, 77, 115, 219
 heard 183; h. about 21, 141
 heavy cloth 149
 heed well 75, 217
 hell, curse with 171

help, neither h. nor have helped
 185
 hide 67, 97, 211, 237
 high 81, 221; h. seat 107, 245
 highest of ministries 13
 hitched up, with robes h.u. 91, 231
 hoard of bowls 145
 hold back 173
 holding of hands 13
 holding, h. of locks of hair 13; h.
 of the edge of the outer cloak
 121; h. of the hand 121; h. on to
 one's knees 95, 105, 235, 245
 holy life 13, 15, 17, 129, 131, 171
 honey 41, 59, 159, 225
 horn 79, 221
 hot, h. season 67, 209; h. weather
 41, 67, 209
 house-45; king's h. 177; houses
 85, 89, 91, 93, 95, 103, 229, 231,
 233, 235, 241; *see also* public
 household robe 179
 householder 31, 33, 43, 55, 125,
 151, 153, 155, 161, 173, 175,
 179; h.'s son 125, 175; h.'s wife
 31, 43, 151, 153, 161, 193; h.s'
 wives 33, 153; h.s' work 179
 human being 9, 117
 hundred and sixty-six matters
 entailing expiation 165, 223
 husband 189
 hut 15

 ignorance 75, 217
 ill 3, 113
 ill-gained 75, 217
 imitate 121
 impatience 135
 imputed to 75, 217
 in-season robe material 145
 indefinite matters (rules) 25, 27

- individual 79, 149, 221; i. robe
 funds 33, 153; i. robes 33, 153;
 i. under twenty years of age 69;
 i.s who are to be avoided 5, 113
 individually, questioned i., 5, 115
 indulging 71, 73, 213, 215
 insanity, verdict of i. 109, 249
 insight 11, 119
 instructed 33, 155
 intending a joke 67, 211
 intentional, *see* emission
 intentionally 9, 69, 77, 117, 175,
 211, 219
 intentions 15, 129; i. in mind 9,
 117
 intervals of less than half a month
 67, 209
 introduction 5, 7, 109, 115, 249
 intrude upon 61, 205
 investigated, to be, 73, 215
 invitation 63, 207; repeated i. 63:
 permanent i. 63, 207
 invite 31, 57, 59, 151, 183, 203
 invited 59, 63, 85, 181, 205:
 previously i. 31, 33, 43, 85, 153,
 161
 itch-covering cloth 81, 223
 ivory 79, 221

 joke 67, 211
 journey 39, 55, 57, 67, 69, 201,
 209, 213,

kāṃsas 149
 "Kāṇā's mother" rule 57, 203
 "Kaṇṭhaka" rule 71, 215
 Kattika full moon 43, 45, 161
 kaṭhina, k. frame 29, 149, 151; k.
 [privileges] 173
 keep, k. company with 175, 189;
 k. the rains 45, 177, 183
 kept, to be, 5, 41, 115, 159

 khattiya king 79
 kindle a fire 65
 king 33, 79, 125, 155; kings 9,
 117; k.'s house 177; k.'s officer
 33, 155
 knees *see* circle, lolling
 knife 103, 243
 know 5, 11, 75, 115, 119, 217
 knowing 11, 119
 knowingly 23, 45, 51, 53, 55, 59,
 69, 71, 73, 79, 125, 161, 181,
 199, 201, 211, 213, 215, 221
 knowledge 11, 119; worldly k.
 179, 181
 knowledgeable, k. man 47; k.
 woman 197

 lac 165
 laid by 31, 33, 153
 lamp 3, 113
 large, l. dwelling place 15, 51,
 201; l. mouthful, 97, 237; l.
 company 147
 larger 83, 223
 last of the bowls 41, 159
 laugh, *see* loud
 law, *see* accordance
 lawful acts 77, 219
 lay, l. follower 33, 155; l. owner
 15; *see also* female
 learned expert in the Vinaya 73,
 215
 learners, *see* approved
 left over, not l.o. 59
 legal, l. process 17, 69, 109, 111,
 129, 137, 211, 249; l. question
 133, 179
 legally, l. valid division 173; l.
 valid removal 173
 legs 81, 221; *see also* detachable
 length 15, 81, 83, 171, 223

- less, l. than five mends 41, 159; l. than half a month 67, 209; l. than twelve years old 185; l. than twelve years [of standing] 187; l. than twenty (bhikkhus, bhikkhunīs) 23, 143
- lesser and minor training rules 73, 217
- let the robe season pass 173
- level with the edge [of the bowl] 95, 235
- lewd words 13, 25
- licking, l. one's hand 101, 241; l. my lips 103, 241; l. the bowl 101, 241
- lie *see* conscious lie
- lie down 51, 169, 175, 199
- life 9, 69, 117; *see also* deprive, holy, miserable, way
- light, no l. 167
- light a fire 209
- light cloth, 149
- lips, *see* chomping, licking
- liquors, *see* fermented
- listen 5, 115
- little, l. noise [= speaking quietly] 91, 231; a l. something 43, 161
- live, l. apart 29, 133, 135; l. apart from three robes 29, 149; l. as though in company 135; l. away from that robe 45; l. comfortably 17, 19, 137, 139; l. in dependence on 21, 41, 141; l. on probation 23; l. separate 175; l. together with 71, 213; l. with 175
- liver of the holy life 13
- living 45, 87, 135; l. being 69, 211; l. in company 133, 135; l. things 53, 69, 201, 211; l. with 185, 187; *see also* deprive
- lofty cell 51, 199
- lolling [= holding on to one's knees ?] 95, 105, 235, 245
- long 43, 161; (lived in a place) l. enough 21, 23, 141
- longer, l. (period) than that 29, 43, 45, 63, 151, 161, 207; no l. allowed 123
- look, l. at 97, 237; l. down upon 169
- looking, l. for purification 11, 119; l. to find fault 59; l. to be warmed 65, 209
- lost 35, 157; l. a robe 31, 151
- lotus pond 177
- loud, l. laugh 91, 231; l. sound 91, 231
- low seat 107, 245
- lower part of her body 183
- lump of food 99, 239
- made, to be m. up quickly (robe material) 29, 151; to have m.; hut 15; large dwelling place 15, 51, 201; rug 37; rains robe 41; needle case, 79, 221; bed or bench 81, 221; sitting cloth 81; itch-covering cloth 81, 223; rains cloth 81; robe 83, 223; smeared [stick m.] with lac 165; bathing robe 171
- "Mahānāma" rule 63, 207
- maiden 187
- majority, *see* decision
- male, m. animal 117; m. novice 67, 211; m. person 119, 121; m. wanderer 61, 173, 179
- man 15, 25, 55, 63, 129, 167, 169, 183, 195, 197, 205; good m. 9, 117; knowledgeable m. 47; m. overflowing with desire 127; m.'s intentions 15, 129; young m. 13

- many, *see* ways
 married girl 185
 massaged 193
 material, m. gain 53, *see* robe, sake
 matter, m. entailing defeat 15, 17,
 119, 129; indefinite m. 25, 27;
 obstructing m. 115; *see also*
 offence
 matters, m.s to be confessed 85,
 225; *see also* indefinite
 mattress 49, 199
 meal 57, 63, 169, 201, 205; m.s in
 succession 57
 measure, [m. of] two finger-joints
 165
 measurements 15, 81, 83, 171, 223
 meat 59, 227
 medicines 41, 159
 meeting, *see* formal
 mends, *see* five
 merely 17, 43, 129, 161
 messenger 33, 35, 155, 157
 methodically 97, 235
 milk 59, 227
 mind, perverted m. 13; m.s 19,
 139; *see also* intentions,
 thoughts
 mindfulness, verdict of m. 109, 249
 misapprehension 169
 miserable life 9, 117
 misrepresent, misrepresentation 71,
 213, 215
 miss, to 173
 misunderstanding 169
 mixed with silk 37
 molasses 41, 59, 159, 225
 monastery 79, 87, 181, 221; m.
 attendant 33, 155
 money 39, 157; m. transactions 39,
 157
 month 29; a m. at most 29, 151; a
 m. of the hot weather 41; first
 m. 67, 209; m. and a half 67,
 209; *see also* first, four, half
 moon, *see* Kattika
 mother 189; *see also* Kāṇā
 mouth 60, 99, 203, 239; m. full 99,
 239
 mouthful 99, 239; too large a m.
 97, 237
 mud[-colour] 67, 211
 music 167
 naked (to bathe) 171
 naked, n. recluses, 61,
 named so-and-so 31, 33, 153, 155
 "Nanda" rule 83, 223
 naturally, n. difficult to speak to
 19, 139
 needle case 67, 79, 211, 221
 need, to; n. a robe 33, 35, 155, 157
 negligence 75, 217
 negligent person 75, 217
 new, n. bed or bench 81, 221; n.
 bowl 41, 159; n. robe 67, 211;
 n. rug 37; n. sitting rug 37
 night 29, 125, 149, 167; *see also*
 six, two,
 nine, n. offences at once 23, 143;
 n. spans of the sugata span 83,
 223
 ninety-two matters entailing
 expiation 47, 83, 111
 noble 11, 119; n. lady (-ies) 115,
 119, 121, 123, 125, 127, 131,
 133, 135, 137, 139, 141, 143,
 145, 155, 163, 165, 175, 179,
 189, 203, 213, 215, 217, 223,
 225, 227, 229, 247, 249; n.
 nature 13
 noise, *see* chomping, little, sucking
 novice 71, 73, 215; *see also*
 female, male

- obstacle, o. [to progress] 5; o. to receiving robes 173
 obstructive 71, 73, 213, 215
 obstructing matter 115
 obstruction 71, 73, 213, 215
 obtaining 35, 157
 occasion 63; o. of a recluses' meal 57, 201; o. of embarking on a boat 57, 201; o. of fever 67, 209; o. of giving robe material 57, 63, 201, 205; o. of going on a journey 57, 67, 201, 209; o. of hot weather 67, 209; o. of making up robes 57, 63, 201, 205; o. of sickness 57, 67, 201, 209; o. of wind and rain 67, 209; o. of work 67, 209; *see also* another, proper, right, robe-time, special
 offence 5, 7, 21; offences 5, 11, 113, 115, 123; an o. after the third [admonition] 131, 133, 135, 137, 139, 141, 143; an o. at once 125, 127, 129; an o. entailing expiation 47, 49, 51, 53, 55, 57, 59, 61, 63, 65, 67, 69, 71, 73, 75, 77, 79, 81, 83, 165, 167, 169, 171, 175, 177, 179, 181, 183, 185, 187, 189, 191, 193, 195, 197, 199, 201, 203, 205, 207, 209, 211, 213, 215, 217, 219, 221; an o. entailing expiation with breaking up 221; an o. entailing expiation with cutting down 221, 223; an o. entailing expiation with forfeiture 31, 33, 35, 37, 39, 41, 43, 45, 145, 147, 149, 151, 153, 157, 159, 161; an o. entailing expiation with tearing off 223; *see also* censurable, gross, nine, same
 oil 41, 59, 159, 225
 old, o. robe 29; o. rug 37, 39; *see also* twelve
 once, at o., *see* offence
 one, o. and a half 81; o. another 21, 133, 135, 139; o. hundred and sixty-six matters entailing expiation 249; o. less than twenty 23, 143; o. man 25, 55, 63; o. man with o. woman 25, 55, 63; o. or other (offence) 11, 23, 143; o. or other (robe) 45; o. or other (disfigurement) 67, 211; o. or two or three 19, 137; o. [robe] 33, 153; o. woman 25, 55, 63; o. woman with o. man 167, 169, 183, 205; o. year 187
 open, to, o. the mouth 99, 239
 open, in the o. 49, 199; o. place 169
 opening of the mouth 61, 203
 ordain 69, 185, 189; neither o. her nor make an effort to get her ordained 189
 ordained, one who is not o. 47, 49, 69, 195, 197; o. woman instructor 185; neither ordain her nor make an effort to get her o. 189
 ordination 11, 123, 183, 185, 187, 189, 191
 others 97, 237
 out-of-season, *see* robe
 outside, o. [her own] region 177
 overestimation, o. [of oneself] 11, 119
 overflowing, o. with desire 119, 121, 127
 overnight 189
 overthrown 133
 owner, 15; owners 169

- paint 191
 palm, p. of one's hand 75, 217;
 slapping with the p.s of the
 hands 165
 paramour 15, 129
 park 177; p. with bhikkhus in it
 181
 partake of 127, 181, 225, 227
 Pātimokkha 3, 5, 17, 19, 73, 75,
 113, 115, 137, 139, 217
 pay attention 75, 217
 peace, at p. 17, 19, 137, 139
 penalty 109, 249
 penance, half a month of p. 143;
 six-night p. 23
 perfume 191
 permanent invitation 63, 207
 permission 5, 169, 181, 193; p. of
 the bhikkhus 37, 45; p. of the
 united bhikkhu saṅgha 5; p. of
 the united bhikkhunī saṅgha
 113; p. from a king, etc. 125; p.
 from the saṅgha 127, 183
 permitted, not p. 189
 persist 17, 19, 21, 23, 71, 73, 121,
 131, 133, 135, 137, 139, 141,
 175, 213, 215
 person, *see* male
 perverted mind 13
 petticoat 191
 pick up 79, 221
 picture gallery 177
 piece, p. [of food] 99, 237; [p.] of
 an old rug 37, 39; p.s of robe
 material 31, 151
 place 35, 51, 157, 201; covered p.
 121; open p. 169; screened p.
 167
 plant, p. beings 49, 197; green p.s
 107, 247
 platform, *see* upper
 pleasant 61, 203
 pleasure, p. grove 177; *see also*
 sensual
 point, some p. of a legal process
 17, 129
 poking 65, 209
 pond, lotus p. 177
 poor evidence 135
 possession, *see* apportioned
 postponed, *see* consent
 pot *see* drinking
 pounded 167
 pour 53, 201
 praise, p. of death 9, 117; p. of
 ministering to 13
 praises 133, 135, 175
 pregnant woman 183
 preliminary, p. duty 3, 5, 113, 115;
 p. duties 3, 113; p. function(s) 3,
 113; p. works and duties 5, 113
 prepared by [the agency of] a
 bhikkhunī 55
 presence, in the p. of 109, 249
 present 11, 63, 79, 205
 press, to; having pressed it down
 97, 237; pressing against 119
 pretext 17, 129
 prevented 171, 179, 189
 previously, *see* invited
 prior arrangement 55
 privately 25, 55, 61, 63, 205
 probation 23
 proceeding 77, 219; p.s in
 accordance with the rule 127;
 see also formal
 proclaimed 115; p. up to the third
 time 5, 115
 prompted 33, 155
 prompting 35, 157
 pronounced 5, 115
 proper, p. course 23, 35, 41, 57, 79,
 143, 157, 159, 203, 215, 221; p.
 occasion 53, 55, 57, 63, 67, 201,
 205, 209; p. time 5, 33, 115, 155

- property, *see* saṅgha
 proportion, curry in p. 95, 97, 235, 237
 provoke worry 77, 219
 public rest house 57, 201
 purchased 31, 33, 153, 155
 pure 5, 7, 11, 23, 27, 45, 83, 87, 107, 109, 115, 123, 143, 163, 223, 227, 247, 249; p. black sheep's wool 37
 purification 7, 11, 115, 119
 purity, *see* declaration
 put, p. away 49; 51, 199; p. on 89, 229; p. the tongue out 101, 241
- quarrelling 77, 219
 quarters 175
 see also bhikkhunī
 [queen-]treasure 79
 question 193; *see also* legal
 questioned 5, 17, 115, 129
 quick tempered 181
 quickly 29, 151
- rain 67, 209
 rains 45, 177; keep the r. 45, 177, 183; spend the r. 181; r. cloth 81; r. robe 41
 rainy season, 43, 161; *see also* first
 raise the palm of one's hand
 against a bhikkhu 75, a
 bhikkhunī 217
 raw grain 167
 reason 45, 63, 207; sufficient r. 63, 65, 207, 209; by r. of ignorance 75; for that r. and no other 51, 61, 77, 199, 203, 219
 reopen (a legal process) 69, 211
 receive, r. gold or silver 39, 157; r. (special robe) 43, 161; r. robes 173
- recitation 3, 5, 9, 13, 19, 25, 29, 47, 75, 85, 89, 109, 111, 113, 115, 117, 125, 139, 145, 165, 217, 225, 229, 249, 251; united r. 17, 19, 137, 139
 recite; r. the Dhamma word by word 47, 195; r. the Pātimokkha 3, 5, 115
 recited 7, 11, 23, 27, 45, 73, 75, 83, 87, 107, 109, 111, 113, 115, 123, 143, 163, 217, 223, 227, 247, 249
 reckoned as a treasure 69, 221
 recluses 131; r.s' meal 57, 201; r.s' robe material 173; *see also* naked
 record 7, 11, 23, 27, 45, 83, 87, 109, 115, 123, 143, 163, 223, 227, 247, 249
 refrain 19, 139
 region 177
 reinstate 23, 143
 related, not r. to 29, 31, 33, 39, 43, 53, 55, 85, 151, 153, 161
 release, no r. 75, 217
 remaining, r. month and a half of the hot season 67, 209; r. [as a bhikkhunī] 119
 remains of food 167
 remembering 5, 115
 reminded 33, 155
 reminding 35, 157
 removed 29, 149, 151
 rendezvous 121
 renewed action 69, 211
 repeated invitation 63, 207
 replying evasively 49, 197
 reprove 119
 repudiate 131
 repute, evil r. 133, 135; of such r. 135
 requisite 147, 149; r.s 63, 207
 residence 181

rest house, *see* public
 restore a bhikkhunī 127
 reveal 5, 115
 revealed, to be r. 7, 115
 revile 181
 rice 85, 97, 101, 237, 239; r. grains
 103, 241
 right time 33, 155
 river, 125
 road, *see* carriage
 roasted 167
 robber 9, 117
 robe 31, 35, 43, 45, 55, 67, 77, 83,
 91, 145, 151, 153, 155, 157, 159,
 171, 173, 189, 211, 221, 223,
 231; bathing r. 171; extra r. 29,
 149; household r. 179; old r.
 29; r. fund 31, 33, 35, 153, 155,
 157; r. material 29, 31, 43, 53,
 55, 57, 63, 149, 151, 159, 161,
 173, 189, 201, 205; in-season r.
 material 145; out-of-season r.
 material 29, 145, 151; r. season
 173; three r. 29, 45; fine r. 31,
 33, 153; rains r. 41; new r. 67,
 211; special r. 43, 161; sugata r.
 83, 223; robe-time occasion 43,
 161
 see also acquiring, bathing robe,
 lost; under r., upper r.
 round [ball] 99, 237
 rubbed 193
 rubbing 119; r. up against 119
 rubbish 167
 rug 37; new r. 37; sitting r. 37;
 old rug 37, 39
 rule 73, 121, 127, 215; training r.
 73, 215; r.s. of training 19, 89,
 107, 111, 139, 229, 247, 249
 sake, for the s. of following 121;
 for the s. of material gain 53

Sakyans 131
 same, s. journey 23, 69, 213; s.
 offence 5, 21, 113, 141; in the s.
 way 17, 19, 21, 23, 71, 73, 121,
 131, 133, 135, 137, 139, 141,
 175, 213, 215
 sandals 105, 191, 243
 saṅgha 5, 19, 77, 115, 125, 127,
 131, 133, 135, 137, 139, 175,
 183, 185, 187, 219; both S.s
 143, 183; belonging to the S. 49,
 51, 79, 147, 161, 199, 221; S.'s
 property 77, 221
 see also apportioned, approved,
 bhikkhu S., bhikkhunī S., formal,
 united
 saṅghādisesa section 13, 125
 sat 3, 75, 217; s. down 169
 satisfied 131
 sauce 85
 say 11, 19, 21, 25, 27, 33, 35, 53,
 61, 71, 73, 75, 119, 135, 137,
 139, 141, 155, 157, 203, 213,
 215, 217; that is to s. 21, 139
 scab 183
 scattering rice about 101, 239
 scented ground sesamum 193
 schism 17, 19, 137, 139
 screened, s. place 167; s. seat 25,
 61, 205
 scrupulous 131
 season, *see* hot, rainy, robe
 seat 25, 55, 61, 63, 77, 105, 169,
 193, 205, 219, 245; high s. 107,
 245; low s. 107, 245; seat[s] 3,
 113; *see also* screened
 second time 7, 11, 23, 27, 45, 83,
 87, 107, 109, 115, 123, 143, 163,
 223, 227, 247, 249
 seek, s. out a [life-]taking weapon
 9, 117; s. material 41
 seen 21, 25, 141, 183
 selling 39, 159

- send, s. (a robe fund) 33, 155; s. a messenger 35, 157; s. away 85
 sensual pleasure 13
 sentences, *see* five
 separation 175
 sesamum 193
 set, s. out on a journey 39, 55, 69, 179, 213; s. out on alms tour 177, 179; after the sun has s. 53
 settle this legal question 179
 settled according to the law 69, 211
 settlement of legal processes 109, 249
 seven, s. days at most 41, 159; s. matters for the settlement of legal processes 109, 111, 249; s. [spans] 15
 seventeen matters entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha 125, 143, 249
 sew 55, 171
 sexual intercourse 9, 25, 117; *see also* alluding
 shaking, s. one's hand about 101, 239; s. my head 93, 233
 shared, to be 57, 203
 sheep's wool 37, 39
 sick 53; not s. 57, 59, 63, 65, 85, 87, 97, 103, 105, 107, 191, 201, 207, 209, 225, 227, 237, 243, 245, 247; s. bhikkhunīs 159; s. bhikkhus 41
 sickness 57, 67, 201, 209
 silence 5, 35, 115, 157
 silent 7, 11, 23, 27, 45, 83, 87, 109, 115, 123, 143, 163, 223, 227, 247, 249
 silk, 37
 silver 39, 157
 singing 167
 sister 13, 85, 119, 175; s.s 133, 135
 sit 89, 91, 93, 95, 105, 229, 231, 233, 235, 245; s. down 51, 169, 193, 199
 sitting 25, 61, 107, 203, 245; s. cloth 67, 81, 211; s. on a high seat 107, 245; s. on a low seat 107, 245; s. on a seat 105, 245; s. on the ground 105, 245; s. rug 37
 six, s. nights at the most 45; s. rules 185, 187; s. spans 81, 83, 223; six-night penance 23; s. times, *see* four; s. years 37; *see also* five
 sixty-six matters entailing expiation, 165, 223, 249.
 slander 47, 195
 slapping 165
 slave 125
 smacking the lips 101, 241
 smeared 183; s. [stick] 165
 so-and-so, *see* named
 sofa 177
 soft food 59, 61, 85, 87, 127, 179, 181, 203
 soiled, *see* hand
 solid food 59, 61, 85, 87, 127, 179, 181, 203
 someone who is not ordained 47, 195
 something, *see* little
 sought, to be 41, 183
 sound, *see* sucking
 space 15
 span 81; *see also* four, nine, sugata, six, twelve, two
 speech, *see* abusive
 speak 13, 19, 21, 33, 71, 73, 75, 99, 119, 127, 131, 133, 135, 139, 141, 145, 155, 213, 215, 217, 239
 speaker, s. of Dhamma 19, 137, 139; s. of Vinaya 19, 137, 139

- speaking, s. in envy 125; s. quietly 91, 231; s. to one another 21, 139
- special, s. occasion 57, 201; s. robe 43, 161
- specifically 31, 33, 35, 43, 153, 155, 157, 161
- spend, s. half a month on penance, 143; s. the rains 181
- spin yarn 179
- spirits, *see* fermented
- spit 107, 247
- spoken to, to be 17, 19, 21, 23, 71, 73, 121, 131, 133, 135, 137, 139, 141, 155, 175, 179, 213, 215
- sponsor, to, 125, 183, 185, 187, 189, 191
- sporting in the water 65, 209
- spread 169; s. out 49, 51, 199
- staff in hand 103, 243
- stand 75, 121, 165, 219; s. in silence 35, 157; s. together with 167, 169
- standing 85, 107, 245; s. in a place without green crops 51, 201; s. up 107, 247
- stay, s. behind a group 125; s. with an army 63, 65, 207
- steward 33, 155
- stilling of legal processes 109, 249
- stolen 31, 151
- stool 49, 199
- stored up 59, 203
- "storehouse" rule 29, 149
- storing up 41, 159
- struck, having s. oneself 171
- stuffed with cotton 81, 223
- stuffing out one's cheeks 99, 239
- stupid 9, 117
- stupidity 21, 133, 141
- succeed 35, 157
- sucking sound, to make 101, 241
- sufficient, not s. 29, 151; s. reason 63, 65, 207, 209
- sufficiently 189
- sugata, s. finger 81, 221; s. span 15, 37, 39, 81, 83, 171; Sugata's s. robe 83, 223; *see also* four, nine
- suggest an alternative 31, 33, 43, 153, 161
- sun, after the s. has set 53
- sunshade 191
- superhuman state 11, 49, 119, 197
- supplied 29, 151
- supported, cause to be 73, 215
- sure, not s. 173
- suspected 183
- suspended 71, 213; s. by a united saṅgha 121, 127
- sutta 75, 111, 217, 251
- swaying my body 93, 231
- sweeping 3, 113
- swinging, *see* arms
- take 79, 165, 221; t. a seat 25, 55, 61, 63, 205; t. away 9, 43, 117, 159; t. back 145; t. someone's part 19, 137
- taking back, *see* formal.
- taking hold of 119
- taking leave 205
- talk 121; t. with 167, 169
- talking 61, 203
- taught 71, 213, 215
- teach, t. the Dhamma 47, 197; not t. Dhamma 103, 105, 107, 243, 245, 247; t. worldly knowledge 181
- teacher 73, 215; t.'s instruction 121, 127
- tear, t. away 145
- tearing off 81, 223

- temporary, t. [wife] 15, 129; *see also* offence
- ten, t. days 43, 161; t. days at most 29, 41, 149
- theft 9, 117
- thief 9, 117
- third, t. (part) of white (sheep's wool) 37; t. time 7, 11, 23, 27, 45, 83, 87, 107, 109, 115, 123, 143, 163, 223, 227, 247, 249; offence after the t. [admonition] 23, 141, 143; proclaimed up to the t. time 5, 115; admonished up to the t. time 17, 19, 21, 23, 71, 121, 131, 133, 135, 137, 139, 141, 143, 177, 213
- thirteen matters entailing a formal meeting of the saṅgha 13, 23, 111
- thirty matters entailing expiation with forfeiture 29, 45, 111, 145, 163, 249
- thoughts in mind 9, 117
- three, t. disfigurements 67, 211; t. matters 25, 183; t. months [of the rainy season] 43, 161; t. robes 29, 45, 149; t. yojanas 39; *see also* two
- threshold, [bedchamber] t. 79
- throw, t. fæces (etc.) 167; t. away bowl-washing [water] with rice grains 103, 241; t. (someone) out 175
- time, announcing the t. 3, 113; t. being 189
see also appropriate t., proper t., third t., second t., right t., wrong t.
- times, *see* five, two
- today 5, 115; from t. 73, 215
- together, 3, 113; t. with a man 167, 169, 183; t. with one [robe] 33, 153; t. with one who is not ordained 47; t. with a woman 47, 195; t. with a bhikkunī 55; t. with one who is suspended 71, 213; t. with a novice 215
- tongue, putting one's t. out 101, 241
- tooth stick 61, 203
- top, *see* from
- tossing up 99, 239
- touching; t. above the circle of the knees 119; t. this or that limb 13
- town 21, 61, 141, 203
- train, to 111, 251
- trained, t. for two years 185, 187; not t. for two years 185
- trainee 185, 189, 193; female t. 67, 211; two [t.s.] 191
- training 9, 131; a t. to be done 89, 91, 93, 95, 97, 99, 101, 103, 105, 107; 229, 231, 233, 235, 237, 239, 241, 243, 245, 247; repudiate the t. 131; desirous of t. 131; in t. 73, 215; t. rule 73, 215; t. rules 73, 217; *see also* desirous, disparaging, lesser, rules
- transgressing 183
- travel 191
- treasure 79, 221; [queen-]t. 79
- trouble, causing t. 49, 197; conducive to t. 73, 217
- true 49, 197
- trusted 25, 27
- twelve, t. spans 15; t. years of age 185; t. years [of standing] 187; less than t. years [of standing] 187
- twenty, group of t. 23, 143; t. years of age 69; under t. years of age 187
- two, t. and a half 81; t. and a half *kamsas* 149; t. and a half months 67, 209; t. bhikkhunīs 175; t.

- finger-joints 165; t. house-holders 33, 153; t. indefinite matters 25, 27, 111; t. or three bowlfuls 57, 203; t. or three coverings [of plaster] 51, 201; t. or three nights 47, 63, 65, 73, 195, 207, 215; more than t. or three nights 195; t. parts of pure black sheep's wool 37; t. spans 81, 171, 223; t. spans of the sugata span 81; t. things to be sought 183; t. [trainees] 191; t. years 185, 187, 189; t. [of you] being [together] 33, 153; recited t. or three times 75, 217; reminded t. or three times 33, 35, 75, 155, 157, 217; *see also* measure, one
- umbrella 103, 243
 unadmonishable 19, 139
 unbecoming 85, 87, 225, 227
 unbound 183
 under, u. robe 31, 89, 151, 229; u. twenty years of age 69, 187
 understand 75, 217; u. the Dhamma 71, 213, 215
 understood, to be 73, 215
 unfounded 17, 129; u. matter 15, 77, 129, 219
 unfriendly 121
 united 17, 19, 111, 137, 139, 251; u. bhikkhu saṅgha 5; u. bhikkhunī saṅgha 113; u. saṅgha 17, 77, 121, 137, 221; *see also* recitation
 unpleasant 77, 219
 unsewn 171
 unsightly 37
 up to the third time 5, 17, 19, 21, 23, 71, 115, 121, 131, 133, 135, 137, 139, 141, 177, 213
- uposatha 3, 5, 113, 183; u. day 3, 113; u. of the fifteenth day 5, 115
 upper, u. platform (of cell) 51, 199; u. robe 31, 89, 151, 173, 229
 upstream 55
 urge someone towards death 9, 117
 urgent 79
 urging one another 21, 139
 urinate 107, 247
 urine 167
 used, to be. 41, 159; u. up 29, 149, 151
 utter praise of death 9, 117; the u. ending of ill 131
 various, v. kinds of buying and selling 39, 159; v. kinds of money transactions 39, 157
 vehicle 105, 191, 243
 verdict, v. "in the presence of" 109, 249; v. of insanity 109, 249; v. of mindfulness 109, 249
 vexing the bhikkhunī saṅgha 133, 135
 view 71, 215
 village 9, 21, 55, 61, 69, 79, 85, 89, 91, 93, 95, 103, 117, 125, 141, 195, 203, 213, 229, 231, 233, 235
 violent 189
 Vinaya 19, 73, 137, 139, 215
 virtuous 13
 visit 63, 205
- waistband 67, 211
 wait, w. upon for two years 189; not w. upon 185
 walk, w. on alms tour 177; w. without a caravan 177

- walking, w. on toes or heels 95,
233
wall 167
wanderer, w. who is a recluse 125;
see also female, male
warmed 65, 209
washed 29, 39, 183
washing 3, 113
water 3, 61, 65, 103, 107, 113, 165,
203, 209, 241, 247; w.
containing living things 53, 69,
201, 211; *see also* ablution,
drinking
way, w. of life of the bhikkhus 9;
see also same
ways, w. of living 135; in many w.
9, 71, 117, 213, 215
weakness 9
weapon, [life-]taking w. 9, 117; w.
in hand 103, 243
wear, w. a petticoat 191; w. a robe
41, 89, 173, 229; w. women's
ornaments 191; w. sandals 105,
243; w. shoes 105, 243
weather, *see* hot
weavers 43, 159, 161
weep 171
well, w. combed 43, 161; w.
covered 89, 229; w. preached
131; w. restrained 89, 229; w.
scraped 43, 161; w. woven 43,
161
whisper 169
whole hand 99, 239
wide 43, 161
width 15, 81, 83, 171, 223
wife 15, 129; householder's w. 31,
43, 151, 153, 161, 193;
householder's w.s 33, 153;
temporary [wife] 15, 129
will *see* against
willingly engage in 117
wind 67, 209
window holes 51, 201
wishes, if one w. 29, 39, 45, 57,
151, 203
withdraw, *see* withdrawn
withdrawn 119; has not w. 79;
neither withdraw nor have w.
187
woman 13, 15, 25, 47, 55, 61, 63,
69, 129, 167, 169, 183, 195, 197,
205; ailing w. 175; w. giving
suck 183; pregnant w. 183, 187;
w. instructor 185; woman's
intentions 15, 129; [woman]
living with her 185, 187;
women's ornaments 191; w.
thief 125; *see also*
knowledgeable
wool 37, 39
word, lewd w.s 13, 25; w. by w.
47, 195; one whose w. can be
trusted 25, 27
work 67, 179, 209; works, *see*
preliminary
workman 125
worldly knowledge 179, 181
worm, to be, 29, 41; may be w.
149; "w. thin [robe]" rule 77,
221
worry 73, 77, 217, 219
woven 43, 159, 161
wrong, w. doing 21; w. time 59,
79, 169, 203; going [w.] 21,
133, 139, 141
yarn 43, 159, 179
year, every y. 191; years, *see* fully,
one, six, twelve, twenty, two
yojanas, *see* five, three
young, y. girl 13; y. man 13
youth, keeps company with y.s 189

